Biblical Exposition & Sermons

John

Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (II)



PAUL C. JONG



John Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (II)

Biblical Exposition & Sermons



Hephzibah

“I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst” (John 6:35)

When the crowd that had eaten their fill came looking for Him again, the Lord told them to labor not for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, and He made it clear that He Himself was the bread of life that had come down from heaven.

To eat the flesh and drink the blood of Jesus, the bread of life, is not an act that meets the needs of the flesh. It is to believe in our hearts that the Lord bore all our sins through the baptism He received from John, that He shed His blood and was judged on the Cross, and that He then rose again. Whoever believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of sins and eternal life.

What is your soul feeding on right now? I hope that you will come to Jesus, who is the bread of life.

This is a book that everyone must seek out

and read now,

before the Antichrist appears,

as this world is heading toward destruction.

<u>You must believe now.</u>

FREE BOOK / DONATION

From THE NEW LIFE MISSION

https://www.bjnewlife.org

E-mail: newlife@bjnewlife.org

The New Life Mission is looking for coworkers to collaborate in postal ministry or book distribution ministry to effectively spread the gospel. Those who are interested in this ministry are asked to first read Paul C. Jong's Christian book series, then visit **www.bjnewlife.org** and apply to become a coworker to become a qualified partner.

Dear Readers of This Book:

First of all, we are delighted that this book has reached you well, and we give great thanks to God.

Our 'The New Life Mission,' established in 1991, is carrying out a literature mission ministry that translates and distributes Pastor Paul C. Jong's spiritual sermon collections into multiple languages worldwide.

Pastor Paul C. Jong has been easily and clearly conveying Jesus' salvation work according to the Word of the Bible to this day, so that many people can receive true remission of sins and return to God through just this one book. And together with his fellow workers, he continues to make tireless efforts even now to spread the gospel of water and the Spirit throughout the world.

[Ministry Introduction]

- **Pastor Paul C. Jong's thematic books:** Over 100 volumes written (continuously being published)
- **Translation languages:** Approximately 110+ languages
- **Single-language books:** Approximately 1,700+
- **Bilingual books:** Approximately 370+
- **Daily website visitors:** Average over 20,000 (supporting 27 languages)
- **Daily e-book downloads:** Over 3,000 copies
- **Daily audiobook downloads:** Over 5,000 copies

[Ministry Channels]

- **Download Services**

Free: E-books and audiobook files provided on 'The New Life Mission' homepage / Official Wix blog

Paid: Amazon, Apple Books, Google Books, Kobo, Spotify, Apple Music, etc. (printed books, e-books, audiobooks)

- **Other Content:** YouTube & Blog (Sermons, Bible studies, testimonies, etc.) / SNS (Facebook, Instagram, etc.)
- **Offline:** Worldwide network of partner churches and co-workers

We ask that you recommend this book and 'The New Life Mission's website to many people around you so that lost souls can return to God. (For those who have purchased printed books from Amazon or purchased ePub e-books, audiobooks, etc. through paid sites, leaving warm reviews on the respective purchase platforms would greatly help our mission.)

- Recommend Pastor Paul C. Jong's books and website (www.bjnewlife.org) to acquaintances around you
- Participate in the ministry by writing book reviews on purchase platforms

Please join us in this beautiful literature ministry so that the gospel of truth may reach lost souls in these last days. We pray that God's blessings will be with you.

John
Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (II)

PAUL C. JONG

Hephzibah Publishing House
A Ministry of THE NEW LIFE MISSION
SEOUL, KOREA

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (II)

Copyright 2026 Hephzibah Publishing House
First Edition: 2026
Published: September 2026

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means — electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise — without the prior written permission of the publisher and copyright owners.

Scripture quotations used in this book are from the '*New King James Version (NKJV)', 'American Standard Version (ASV)'*.

ISBN 978-89-282-6317-2
Illustration: Young-ae Kim
Reviewed: Elizabeth
Translator: Elizabeth
Printed in South Korea
This cover artwork was created utilizing AI image generation tools, based on an original design copyrighted by The New Life Mission.

Hephzibah Publishing House
A Ministry of THE NEW LIFE MISSION
Seoul, Korea

♠ Website: https://www.bjnewlife.org
https://www.nlmission.com
https://www.nlmbookcafe.com
♠ E-mail: newlife@bjnewlife.org

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

We offer a prayer of thanks to the Lord for giving us the Word of salvation and blessing us with the gospel of being born again by water and the Spirit.

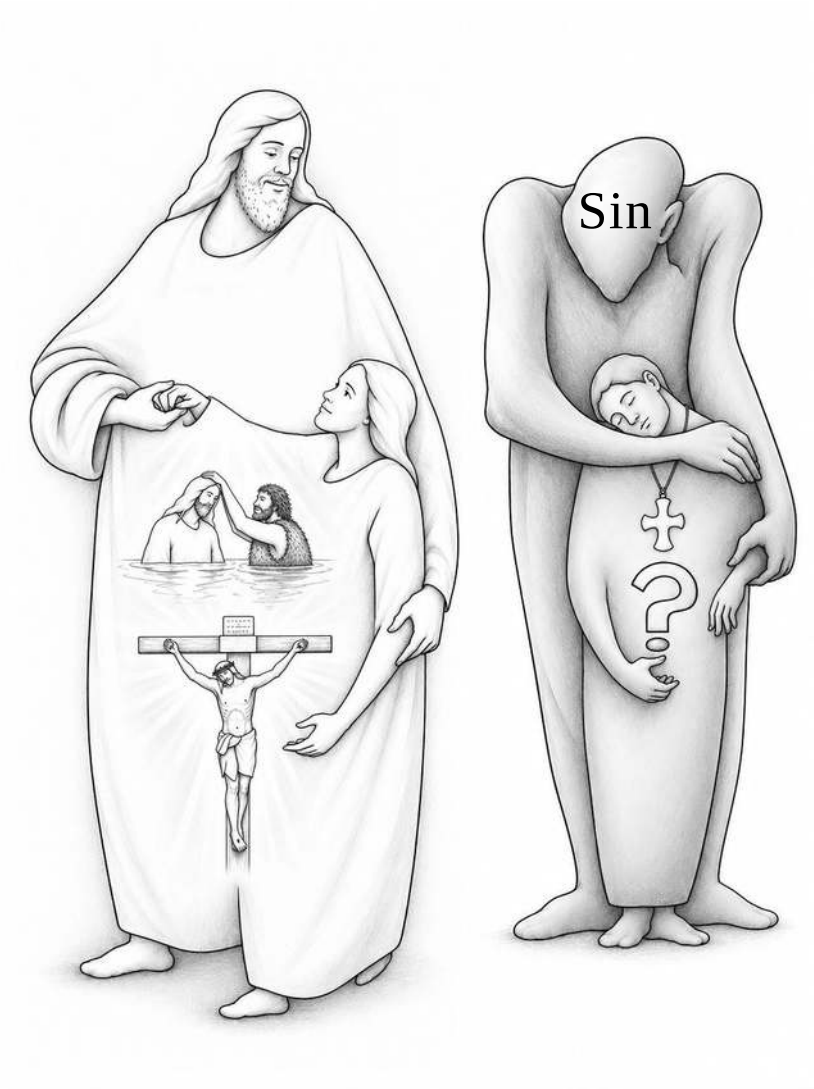
I would also like to thank God's servants and brothers and sisters for their invaluable service in publishing this book. We all worked hard to write this book.

I hope and pray that this book will help many souls be born again, and I would like to express my sincere gratitude once again to everyone who worked hard with me.

I sincerely hope that the Lord will allow the gospel of being born again by water and the Spirit to be spread throughout the world through those who believe in Jesus.

PAUL C. JONG

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.



You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

Preface

"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly" (John 10:10).

People think that they will be satisfied if they fill the hunger of the flesh and obtain what they want. But even after they are full, they hunger again, and even after the problem before their eyes is solved, the sin and fear deep in their hearts do not disappear. This is because there is a hunger and thirst of the soul that cannot be filled with the things of the world. Therefore, we must ask what the true food of life is, and in whom we must believe in order to obtain the remission of sins and eternal life.

John chapters 6 to 10 show a clear answer to this question. Jesus says that He is the bread of life and the light of the world, the door of the sheep and the good shepherd. He also promises living water to the thirsty, and opens the eyes of a man who was blind from birth. These words and signs are not events separate from one another. All of them clearly testify to Jesus Christ, who saves sinners and gives them eternal life, and to the salvation He accomplished.

Jesus Christ, who gives life

Jesus is not One who came to this earth only to fill the fleshly needs of people. He is God the Creator, who made all things, and the Savior who came in the flesh in order to give the remission of sins and eternal life to people who are bound to die because of sin. By receiving baptism from John the Baptist, Jesus bore

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

all the sin of mankind in His own body once and for all; bearing that sin, He was judged on the Cross; and He rose from the dead and became the eternal Savior of those who believe. This is the perfect salvation that Jesus accomplished with the water and the Spirit.

Therefore, in order to obtain the life that Jesus gives, we must not stop at being amazed at the signs or acknowledging Him as an excellent teacher. We must know that Jesus is the Son of God, the Creator who made us, and our Savior, and believe with our hearts that He removed all the sin of mankind with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit receive the remission of sins, receive the Holy Spirit as a gift, and thereby become the children of God and come to enjoy the eternal life that the Lord gives.

The life obtained by believing the word

Volume 2 of this book deals with the words in John, chapters 6 to 10. In these five chapters, signs and disputes, parables and testimonies follow one after another. Some people sought only the benefit of the flesh even after seeing the signs of Jesus, and some judged Him by their own knowledge and religious standards. But those who accepted the words of Jesus knew and believed who He is, and obtained the remission of sins and life. Even when faced with the same words and signs, people took different paths according to what they sought and whose words they believed.

In chapter 6, we meet Jesus feeding a great multitude with five barley loaves and two fish, and coming to His disciples by walking on the sea in a storm. When the multitude sought Jesus

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

because they had eaten the loaves and were filled, the Lord told them not to labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life. He also revealed that He is the bread of life which came down from heaven, and promised eternal life to those who eat His flesh and drink His blood. To eat the flesh and drink the blood of Jesus is not a physical act; it is to believe with the heart that He bore all our sins with the baptism He received from John, and that He received the judgment of those sins on the Cross. Many people did not understand this word and left, but Peter believed that the Lord has the words of eternal life and remained at His side.

In chapter 7, we meet Jesus acting not according to the demands of people but according to God's timing. Even the brothers of Jesus did not believe in Him, and people disputed with one another over His origin and His teaching. But Jesus made clear that His doctrine came from God, and told them not to judge according to appearance but to judge with righteous judgment. On the last day of the Feast of Tabernacles, He cried out to the thirsty to come to Him and drink, and promised that rivers of living water would flow out of the heart of the one who believes. These rivers of living water refer to the Holy Spirit, who comes upon the heart of the one who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In chapter 8, we meet the scribes and the Pharisees who brought before Jesus a woman caught in adultery, in the very act. Before the law, there is no one sinless enough to condemn another. Jesus did not condemn that woman, not because He regarded sin lightly, but because He was the Savior who would bear even the sin of that woman with the baptism He received from John and be judged in her place on the Cross. Then Jesus revealed that He is the light of the world, and said that those who

abide in His word come to know the truth, and that the truth makes them free. True freedom does not lie in turning a blind eye to sin or thinking as though one had no sin. When we believe the word that Jesus actually removed all sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we are set free from sin and condemnation.

In chapter 9, we meet Jesus opening the eyes of a man who was blind from birth. The man whose eyes were opened did not hide what had happened to him, but testified to it even before the repeated questions and threats of the religious leaders. In the end he was cast out by the people, but Jesus Himself came to find him and revealed Himself to him. The man believed that Jesus is the Son of God and his Savior, and worshiped Him. Beyond the sign of opening the eyes of the body, this event shows the fact that the eyes of true faith are opened when one admits that one is spiritually blind and believes in Jesus Christ.

In chapter 10, we meet Jesus, the good shepherd, who calls His own sheep by name and goes before them and leads them. Jesus declared that He is the door of the sheep, and said that whoever enters through Him will be saved. The Lord bore all the sin of the sheep with the baptism He received from John, and bearing that sin He laid down His life on the Cross, and then by rising again He opened the door of salvation. The sheep of Jesus recognize His voice and follow Him, and the Lord promised that He gives them eternal life and that no one can snatch them out of His hand. The words of Jesus, that He and the Father are one, clearly show that He is not merely a human shepherd, but God, who gives eternal life.

The word of John chapters 6 to 10 does not ask us only whether we have seen the signs. It asks who we know Jesus—the One pointed to by those signs—to be, and whether we believe His word in our hearts. Peter confessed, *"Lord, to whom*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

shall we go? You have the words of eternal life." The purpose of Biblical Exposition, too, does not lie in piling up knowledge. It lies in realizing through the word that Jesus Christ removed all our sins with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and in believing the salvation He accomplished as one's own salvation.

The way to read this book

This book is arranged so that the word of John chapters 6 to 10 may be examined through 'Biblical Exposition,' 'Questions and Answers,' and the sermons of Pastor Paul C. Jong. The Biblical Exposition follows the flow of the text of each chapter and unfolds in turn the meaning conveyed by its events and conversations, parables and teachings. In this process it also examines other words of the Scriptures related to the text, and reveals what each text testifies concerning Jesus Christ and what salvation He accomplished with the water and the Spirit. It guides the reader not to stop at understanding the content, but to believe with the heart that all his sins passed on to Jesus when He received baptism from John, and that both the judgment of sin and salvation were completely accomplished through the death of the Cross and the resurrection. It is also arranged so that the reader may also think about how the faith that has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit must be carried on into today's life and into the spreading of the gospel. In 'Questions and Answers,' the reader concisely and concretely confirms the main verses and themes of each chapter, reflects on his own faith before the word, and organizes the content of the Biblical Exposition once more. The sermons of Pastor Paul C. Jong that follow show vividly how the

gospel of the water and the Spirit has been proclaimed, believed, and spread in the actual lives of the Church and the saints.

When you read this book, I hope that you will not stop at the signs themselves, but look to Jesus, to whom those signs point. And I hope that you will honestly lay before the Lord your spiritual hunger and thirst, the darkness of sin and condemnation, and the stubbornness that fails to see the truth. Rather than trying to be made righteous by your own deeds or religious zeal, I hope that you will believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished, receive the remission of sins, receive the Holy Spirit as a gift, and preach to other souls the word of life that you have received.

I hope that this second volume will be a guide that helps you, the readers, clearly know Jesus Christ, who is the bread of life, the light of the world, and the good shepherd, and believe with your hearts in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He accomplished. I hope that everything contained in this book will exalt only the name of Jesus Christ and lead you, the readers, to Him, of whom the Scriptures testify. And so I earnestly hope that you will believe with your hearts in the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished by bearing all our sins with the baptism He received from John, receiving the judgment of those sins on the Cross, and then rising from the dead, and that you will receive the remission of sins and eternal life. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

CONTENTS

Preface ---------- 7

John Chapter 6

• **Biblical Exposition**

John Chapter 6 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit ---------- 19

• **Questions and Answers** ---------- 76

• **Sermons by Paul C. Jong**

Live wholly for the food that does not perish (John 6:27–59) ---------- 86

The one who earnestly desires meets the Lord (John 6:28–40) ---------- 107

Obtain eternal life through the flesh and blood of Jesus (John 6:32–40) ---------- 125

The bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world (John 6:41–51) ---------- 133

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 7

• **Biblical Exposition**

John Chapter 7 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit ---------- 159

• **Questions and Answers** ---------- 190

• **Sermons by Paul C. Jong**

When does the Holy Spirit come upon a person who believes in Jesus? (John 7:25–39) ---------- 199

Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water (John 7:37–39) ---------- 223

The Holy Spirit, who refreshes the heart (John 7:37–39) ---------- 240

Rivers of living water become a reality in the hearts of those who have received the Holy Spirit (John 7:37–39) ---------- 256

John Chapter 8

• **Biblical Exposition**

John Chapter 8 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit ---------- 281

• **Questions and Answers** ---------- 349

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

• **Sermons by Paul C. Jong**

The two laws that God has given us
(John 8:1–11)---------- 362

I do not condemn you (John 8:1–11)---------- 377

Can the doctrine of repentance remove
the sin of the woman caught in adultery,
in the very act? (John 8:3–11) ---------- 395

You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free
(John 8:21–47) ---------- 418

John Chapter 9

• **Biblical Exposition**

John Chapter 9 seen from the perspective of the gospel
of the water and the Spirit ---------- 435

• **Questions and Answers**---------- 471

• **Sermons by Paul C. Jong**

The light of the gospel that opens the eyes of the blind
(John 9:1–34)---------- 488

The mission of the Church is to have people obtain new life
(John 9:1–11)---------- 499

We must work the works of Him who sent Me,
while it is day (John 9:1–7) ---------- 515

Jesus, who became my Savior
(John 9:4–7) ---------- 525

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 10

• **Biblical Exposition**

John Chapter 10 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit ---------- 539

• **Questions and Answers** ---------- 608

• **Sermons by Paul C. Jong**

The Lord, who became the true door of the sheep (John 10:1–9) ---------- 621

In this age we must accomplish the reformation of faith (John 10:1–16) ---------- 641

Jesus, who became the door of the kingdom of heaven (John 10:4–5) ---------- 663

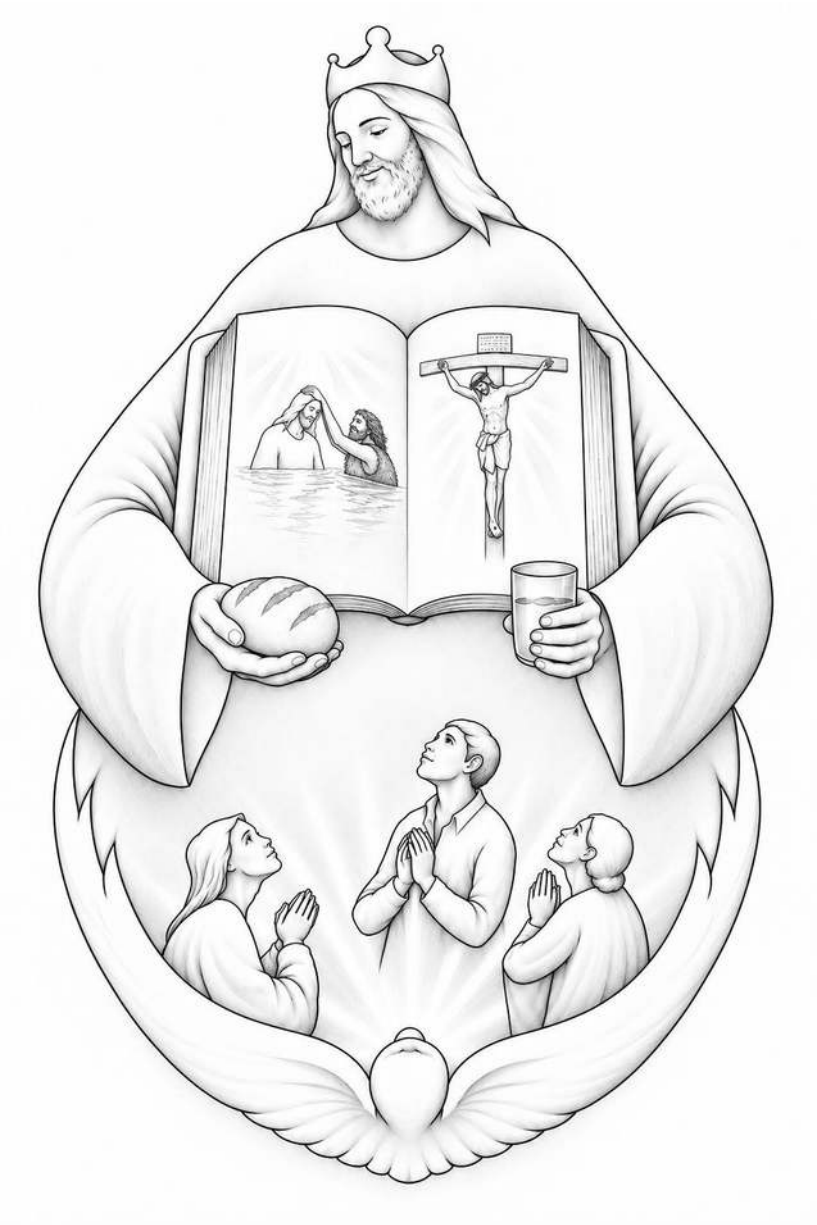
Jesus, who received the testimony of John the Baptist and is equal with God, gives eternal life (John 10:27–42) ---------- 684

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

CHAPTER

6

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.



You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 6 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit

In John 6:1–15, how can the word that Jesus performed the miracle of the five loaves and two fish and fed the people be explained from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

The five loaves and two fish in John 6:1–15 is a sign in which Jesus had compassion on the hungry multitude and actually fed them. At the same time, it shows that Jesus is the bread of life, who gives the remission of sin and eternal life to souls dying because of sin.

1. Jesus knew both the needs of the body and the needs of the soul

Many people followed Jesus because they saw the signs He performed on the sick. Jesus first saw that they had nothing to eat.

"Then Jesus lifted up His eyes, and seeing a great multitude coming toward Him, He said to Philip, 'Where shall we buy bread, that these may eat?' But this He said to test him, for He Himself knew what He would do" (John 6:5–6).

Jesus already knew the circumstances of the multitude, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

He also knew how He would feed them. Therefore this question was not a question Jesus asked because He did not know the solution; it was a question to bring out the faith of the disciples.

Jesus knows not only the hunger of the body but also the hunger of the soul that has lost its life because of sin. A person can satisfy the desires of the flesh to some extent with the material things of the world, honor, and religious deeds, but he cannot solve the problem of the sin and judgment in his heart. Jesus came precisely to solve this problem of the soul.

2. Philip's calculation and Andrew's faith

Philip calculated that even if each person were given only a little, two hundred denarii worth of bread would not be enough. His calculation was realistically accurate, but the power of Jesus was not included in that calculation.

Andrew brought to Jesus the five barley loaves and two fish that a lad had.

"There is a lad here who has five barley loaves and two small fish, but what are they among so many?" (John 6:9).

Andrew also knew the fact that it was far too little to feed so many people. But he brought before Jesus the small thing that was in their hands. By human calculation it was impossible, but when it was entrusted to the hands of Jesus, it became food that fed everyone.

Being saved from sin is also like this. A person cannot remove the sin of his heart by his own deeds and efforts. What a sinner must do is not to pile up his own righteousness, but to accept by faith the salvation that Jesus accomplished. The power of salvation does not lie in man, but in Jesus.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. Jesus fed the multitude to the full with the power of creation

"And Jesus took the loaves, and when He had given thanks He distributed them to the disciples, and the disciples to those sitting down; and likewise of the fish, as much as they wanted. So when they were filled, He said to His disciples, 'Gather up the fragments that remain, so that nothing is lost.' Therefore they gathered them up, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves which were left over by those who had eaten" (John 6:11–13).

Jesus did not let them merely have a small taste; He let the people eat as much as they wanted. Even after everyone had eaten to the full, twelve baskets were left over.

This sign shows that in Jesus there is the power of God, which creates and supplies life. Jesus is God, who created all things by His word, and He is the Savior, who abundantly gives the food of life that makes souls live.

Just as the five loaves and two fish fed the whole multitude to the full and still had some left over, the salvation that Jesus accomplished saves all the sinners of the world from sin and still lacks nothing. Whoever the sinner may be, if he believes with his heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished, he obtains the perfect remission of sin and eternal life.

4. The word that the Passover was near shows the salvation of Jesus

In recording the event of the five loaves and two fish, the Gospel of John states, *"Now the Passover, a feast of the Jews,*

was near."

At the Passover a lamb was killed, and its blood saved the people of Israel from death. Jesus came as the Lamb of God, who would bear all the sins of the world and shed His blood.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all through the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of sin, and He rose from the dead and gave new life to those who believe.

Therefore the five loaves and two fish, given when the Passover was near, shows that Jesus would give His own body as the true food for the life of the world.

5. The five loaves and two fish is a sign that shows Jesus, the bread of life

After the event of the five loaves and two fish, Jesus Himself made clear the spiritual meaning of this sign.

"And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.'" (John 6:35).

"I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world" (John 6:51).

The word that Jesus is the bread of life means that we must believe with our hearts in the salvation that Jesus accomplished. The faith that eats the bread of life is as follows.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The work of Jesus, the bread of life	The salvation received by faith
He came to this earth in the flesh	Believing that God became a man in order to save sinners
The baptism He received from John	Believing that all the sins of the world were transferred to Jesus
The blood He shed on the Cross	Believing that Jesus received the judgment and the price of our sins in our place
He rose from the dead	Believing that He overcame sin and death and gave us new life
He sent the Holy Spirit	The Holy Spirit dwells in the person who has received the remission of sin and seals him as a child of God

The bread of the flesh leaves one hungry again even after eating it, but the food of the gospel that Jesus gives solves forever the problem of the sin and judgment of the soul. The person who believes with his heart in the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection has all his sins washed away and obtains eternal life. The Holy Spirit comes into the heart of the person who has received the remission of sin and testifies to the fact that this salvation is true.

6. The disciples distributed to the multitude the bread they had received from Jesus

When we look at the parallel passages, Matthew chapter 14, Mark chapter 6, and Luke chapter 9, Jesus gave the loaves to the

disciples, and the disciples distributed them to the multitude.

The One who produced the bread was Jesus, and the disciples distributed the bread they had received from Jesus. The spreading of the gospel of the water and the Spirit is also like this. It is not that the Church and the workers of the gospel produce a new salvation. It is that they distribute to people the word of salvation that Jesus has already completed.

Just as a small lunch fed countless people in the hands of Jesus, the gospel of the water and the Spirit is also delivered through the Church of God to hungry souls all over the world. Everyone who hears and believes the word of the gospel obtains the remission of sin and eternal life and enjoys the fullness of the soul.

That twelve baskets were left over also shows the fact that the supply of Jesus is abundant. The salvation of the Lord was not given only to one nation or to a few people; it is the food of life that is delivered to the whole world and makes all who believe live.

7. The people tried to make Jesus a king of this world

"Then those men, when they had seen the sign that Jesus did, said, 'This is truly the Prophet who is to come into the world.' Therefore when Jesus perceived that they were about to come and take Him by force to make Him king, He departed again to the mountain by Himself alone" (John 6:14–15).

The people recognized to some extent the fact that Jesus was *"the Prophet who is to come into the world"* whom Moses had prophesied. But rather than believing in Jesus as the Christ, who saves from sin, they tried to make Him a king of this world who would keep supplying them with food.

Jesus refused to become a king in the way the people

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

expected. This is because the most important purpose for which Jesus came was not to keep supplying people with the bread of this world, but to save sinners from sin and judgment and give them eternal life.

Jesus went on to say this.

"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him" (John 6:27).

The purpose of believing in Jesus does not lie only in obtaining the material things and success of this world. The most important purpose of believing in Jesus is to have all one's sins washed away and obtain eternal life through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He accomplished.

Conclusion

The sign of the five loaves and two fish shows that Jesus is the following.

— The God of love, who first knows the needs of the hungry multitude

— The Creator, who makes small things abundant

— *"The Prophet who is to come into the world"* whom Moses prophesied

— The Savior, who gave His own body as food for the life of the world

— The Lamb of God, who bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John

— The Lord, who received the judgment of sin in our place with the blood of the Cross

— The bread of life, who rose from the dead and gives eternal life to those who believe

Just as five barley loaves and two fish fed countless people to the full in the hands of Jesus, the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed is abundant enough to save all the sinners of the whole world. Believing this gospel with the heart is eating the bread of life, and by that faith one has all his sins washed away, receives the Holy Spirit, and obtains eternal life.

In John 6:16–21, is the divinity of Jesus revealed through His walking on the sea and coming to the disciples?

Yes, it clearly reveals it. John 6:16–21 shows that Jesus is not a created being subject to the laws of nature, but the Creator God, who rules the sea and the wind.

1. The disciples met a storm they could not overcome by their own strength

"Then the sea arose because a great wind was blowing. So when they had rowed about three or four miles, they saw Jesus walking on the sea and drawing near the boat; and they were afraid" (John 6:18–19).

Among the disciples there were fishermen who were familiar with the Sea of Galilee. They rowed with all their experience and strength, but they could not overcome the great wind and the waves.

This scene shows that there is a clear limit to human ability. A person can solve problems to some extent with his own wisdom and effort, but he cannot overcome death and the judgment of sin by himself. Just as the disciples needed Jesus, sinners need Jesus the Savior.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

2. That Jesus walked on the sea is the authority of the Creator

Jesus did not come by boat; He came to the disciples walking on the sea where the storm was raging. The Old Testament testifies that the One who treads on the waves of the sea and rules them is God.

"He alone spreads out the heavens, And treads on the waves of the sea" (Job 9:8).

That Jesus walked on the water was not merely a display of amazing power. It revealed that Jesus is God, who created the sea and rules over that sea.

In the five loaves and two fish, He showed the power of the Creator by multiplying a little bread and feeding the multitude, and in the event on the sea that followed, He revealed the same divinity by ruling the water and the wind.

The signs Jesus performed	The divinity revealed
He fed the multitude with the five loaves and two fish	God, who creates and supplies life
He walked on the sea	The Creator, who rules the laws of nature
He calmed the storm	God, who commands the wind and the sea
He brought the boat to its destination	The Lord, who protects and guides His people

3. The word *"It is I; do not be afraid"* reveals the presence of God

"But He said to them, 'It is I; do not be afraid.' Then they willingly received Him into the boat, and immediately the boat was at the land where they were going" (John 6:20–21).

The fear of the disciples was solved first by the word of Jesus, before the storm disappeared. This is because Jesus revealed Himself, saying, *"It is I; do not be afraid."*

What they needed most was not only a calm sea but the presence of Jesus. When they came to know who Jesus was, their fear turned into joy, and the disciples received Jesus into the boat. Then the boat reached the land where they were going.

In the life of faith, too, what is more important than the difficulties of one's circumstances is knowing who Jesus is. Jesus, who saved us, is not a weak human being, but the almighty God, who rules the wind and the sea and every circumstance.

4. The parallel passages testify even more clearly to the divinity of Jesus

The Gospel of John records that when they received Jesus into the boat, the boat immediately reached its destination. Matthew and Mark record that when Jesus got into the boat, the wind ceased.

"And when they got into the boat, the wind ceased. Then those who were in the boat came and worshiped Him, saying, 'Truly You are the Son of God.'" (Matthew 14:32–33).

When the disciples saw that the storm had been calmed, they worshiped Jesus and confessed, *"Truly You are the Son of God."* The conclusion of this event is the fact that Jesus is the Son of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

God and is equal with God.

The Psalms also say that God calms the storm and guides His people to their destination.

"He calms the storm, So that its waves are still. Then they are glad because they are quiet; So He guides them to their desired haven" (Psalm 107:29–30).

What the LORD does in the Psalms, Jesus did in the Gospel of John. Therefore Jesus, who walked on the sea, calmed the storm, and brought the disciples to their destination, is the true God.

5. The divinity of Jesus is the sure foundation of salvation

The fact that Jesus is God is very important in the gospel of the water and the Spirit as well. If Jesus were merely one righteous man, He could not bear the sin of all mankind and save them. But because Jesus is God, who came as the Word made flesh, He can perfectly save all the sinners of the world.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all through the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of all sins, and He rose from the dead and gave new life to those who believe.

Just as the sea and the storm could not swallow up Jesus, sin and death could not overcome Jesus either. Because Jesus, who is God, completely overcame sin and death, the person who believes with his heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit has all his sins washed away and obtains eternal life.

6. Jesus keeps His Church in the midst of the storm

The disciples were crossing the sea according to the word of Jesus, but they met a storm. Following Jesus does not mean that all difficulties disappear. The important fact is that Jesus did not abandon the disciples who were in the midst of the storm.

Mark 6:48 records that Jesus came to them when *"He saw them straining at rowing, for the wind was against them."* Even though Jesus was far away, He was watching the situation of the disciples.

Jesus protects His people as follows.

1. He was watching the difficulty the disciples were going through.

2. He came to them in person in the midst of the storm.

3. He said, *"It is I; do not be afraid."*

4. The disciples received Jesus with joy.

5. Jesus guided them safely to the place where they were going.

The Church of God, too, may meet the opposition and difficulties of the world while preaching the gospel. But the Master of the Church is the almighty Jesus. Jesus is with the saints who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and He keeps and guides the Church so that it may accomplish to the end the way of spreading the gospel that has been entrusted to it.

Conclusion

John 6:16–21 clearly reveals the divinity of Jesus.

— Jesus is the Creator, who walks on the sea.

— He is the almighty God, who calms the wind and the waves.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

— He is the Lord, who gives peace to the disciples who have fallen into fear.

— He is the Protector of the Church, who guides His people to their destination.

— He is the Savior, who overcame sin and death with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Therefore the word *"It is I; do not be afraid"* is a declaration that the almighty God is with His people. The person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit believes that Jesus, who saved him, is God, who rules the wind and the sea and sin and death, and he can rely on the Lord in the midst of any storm.

In John 6:22–27, why did Jesus tell those who believed in Him and followed Him to labor for the food that does not perish?

The most important reason Jesus said this word was to turn the purpose for which people sought and followed Him from the fullness of the flesh to the remission of sin and eternal life.

They sought Jesus eagerly and came all the way to the other side of the sea, but rather than trying to believe who Jesus was, they tried to get bread to eat again. Jesus wanted them to discover the Savior through the sign, believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and obtain eternal life.

1. The multitude sought the bread Jesus gave rather than Jesus Himself

The day after Jesus fed the multitude with the five loaves and two fish, when Jesus was nowhere to be seen, the people got into boats and came looking for Him all the way to Capernaum. Outwardly, they were people who followed Jesus very eagerly. But Jesus knew the purpose in their hearts.

"Jesus answered them and said, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled.'" (John 6:26).

The five loaves and two fish was not a miracle meant to show the fact that Jesus is simply One who makes food for people. This sign revealed that Jesus is God, who creates and supplies life, and the Christ whom God sent.

The people ate the bread, but they did not see Jesus, to whom the sign pointed. They were interested in the gift Jesus gave, but they had no interest in the Savior, who gave that gift, or in the remission of sin He would accomplish.

Jesus wanted to turn their faith from a faith that only tries to fill the needs of the flesh to a faith that seeks the salvation of the soul.

2. The food which perishes keeps the body alive for a while, but it cannot give eternal life

"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him" (John 6:27).

The food of the flesh is absolutely necessary, but after one

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

eats it, one becomes hungry again. However good the food one eats, the body grows old and eventually dies. Money, honor, health, and the success of this world can also give some benefit for a while on this earth, but they cannot wash away sin or give eternal life.

When Jesus said, *"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life,"* He did not mean that one should abandon one's livelihood and the needs of the body; He meant that one should place the most important purpose of one's life on eternal life.

The food which perishes	The food which endures to everlasting life
It fills the body for a while	It brings the soul to life out of sin
One becomes hungry again after eating it	It gives eternal life to those who believe
It is lost at death	It continues on to the resurrection and the kingdom of God
It is obtained by human labor	Jesus, the Son of Man, gives it

Jesus did not want people to perish in sin and judgment while seeking only the food of the body. He wanted them to receive the remission of sin, become the children of God, and live forever.

3. The food which endures to everlasting life is Jesus Himself

Jesus said of this food that it is the food *"which the Son of Man will give you."* In the words that followed, He made it clear that this food is Jesus Himself.

"And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.'" (John 6:35).

Eating the food of eternal life does not mean actually eating the flesh of Jesus; it means believing with one's heart in the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished with His own body.

Jesus performed the following work in order to become the bread of life.

1. Jesus, who is God, came to this earth in the flesh in order to save sinners.

2. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

3. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross.

4. On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment and the price of all sins.

5. He rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

6. He sent the Holy Spirit into the hearts of those who received the remission of sin and sealed them as the children of God.

Believing this word of salvation with the heart is eating the food of life. Just as the bread of the flesh becomes food only when it is taken into the body, the gospel of the water and the Spirit also becomes the life and food of the soul only when it is received into the heart and believed.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

4. The word "labor" begins with believing in Jesus

When the people heard the word of Jesus, they asked what religious deeds they had to do.

"Then they said to Him, 'What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?' Jesus answered and said to them, 'This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.'" (John 6:28–29).

The people asked what they had to do for God, but Jesus told them first to believe in Him whom God sent. The work of God does not begin from human merit or zeal; it begins from believing in Jesus Christ, whom God sent, and in the salvation He accomplished.

Therefore the word *"for the food which endures to everlasting life"* means the following.

— One realizes before the word of God that he is a sinner.

— One looks to Jesus, the Savior whom God sent.

— One believes that Jesus bore all his sins with the baptism He received from John.

— One believes that He received the judgment for his sins with the blood of the Cross.

— One believes that new life and eternal life have been given to him through the resurrection of Jesus.

This is believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and it is what God wants first of all from a sinner.

5. The meaning of the word *"God the Father has set His seal on Him"*

Jesus said of Himself that *"God the Father has set His seal on Him."* This means that God the Father established Jesus as

the Savior of mankind and sent Him.

When Jesus received baptism from John, heaven was opened, the Holy Spirit descended like a dove, and God the Father testified that Jesus is His beloved Son. God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit personally confirmed the work of salvation of Jesus.

Therefore the food of eternal life is not something that can be obtained from a religion or philosophy made by man. Jesus Christ, whom God the Father sealed and sent, gives it. Jesus is the only Savior, who could bear sin, be judged, and then rise from the dead.

6. The saved person distributes the food of life to others

In laboring for the food which endures to everlasting life, there are two steps in order.

The first is for oneself to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and obtain the remission of sin and eternal life. The second is to deliver the food of life one has received to other souls.

At the time of the five loaves and two fish, the disciples distributed to the multitude the bread they had received from Jesus. In the same way, the Church of God and the saints distribute the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed to hungry souls.

The power of salvation does not come from the evangelist. The evangelist testifies to what Jesus has already accomplished. The person who hears that word and believes it with his heart has all his sins washed away, receives the Holy Spirit, and obtains eternal life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Therefore one's occupation, daily life, and material things, too, do not end merely in making a living; when they are used to serve the gospel of life and deliver it to other souls, they become labor for the food which endures to everlasting life.

Conclusion

The reasons Jesus said, *"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life,"* are as follows.

— Because the people sought only the bread of the flesh rather than Jesus.

— Because He wanted to make them believe through the sign of the five loaves and two fish that Jesus is the Christ.

— Because the food of the body cannot solve the sin and judgment of the soul.

— Because Jesus is the bread of life, who gives the remission of sin and eternal life.

— Because believing in Jesus, whom God sent, and in His work of salvation is the work of God.

— Because He wanted the saved saints to distribute this food of life to other souls.

The food that does not perish is Jesus and the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He accomplished. The person who believes with his heart in the fact that Jesus bore all sins with the baptism He received from John, paid the price of sin with the blood of the Cross, and rose from the dead obtains the remission of sin and eternal life. This is eating the food which endures to everlasting life, and believing and preaching this gospel is laboring for the food that does not perish.

In John 6:28–37, why did Jesus, who said, *"This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent,"* call Himself the bread of life and tell them to believe?

The core of John 6:28–37 is that a person does not achieve salvation by his own deeds, but obtains the remission of sin and eternal life by believing in Jesus Christ, whom God sent. The reason Jesus called Himself the bread of life is also that only Jesus Himself and the work of salvation He accomplished can give true life to sinners.

1. What man must do and what God has accomplished

The multitude asked Jesus this.

"Then they said to Him, 'What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?'" (John 6:28).

The people thought of the work of God as various religious deeds and efforts. They thought that if they kept the law, did good, and lived a pious life, they could be acknowledged by God. But Jesus answered this way.

"Jesus answered and said to them, 'This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.'" (John 6:29).

The work of God that must be accomplished first of all in salvation is not for a sinner to put forward his own deeds, but to believe in Jesus Christ, whom God sent, and in the work of salvation He did.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The work of God as people thought of it	The work of God as Jesus spoke of it
Becoming righteous by keeping the law and the commandments	Believing in Jesus, whom God sent
Washing away one's sins by one's own efforts	Believing in the remission of sin that Jesus accomplished
Piling up many religious deeds	Receiving Jesus, the bread of life
Offering one's own merit to God	Receiving the grace of God by faith

Faith is not a deed by which a person produces salvation. God the Father planned salvation and sent His Son, and Jesus completed that salvation. A sinner believes with his heart and accepts what God has accomplished.

2. The One who gives not manna but the true bread

The Jews spoke of the manna their fathers had eaten in the wilderness and demanded another sign from Jesus. But Jesus said that the One who gave the manna was not Moses but God, and that God now gives the true bread.

"Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven.'" (John 6:32).

The manna in the wilderness was food that kept the bodies of the people of Israel alive. Even after eating it they became hungry again, and in the end their bodies died. But the true bread that God gives saves sinners from sin and death and gives them

eternal life.

"For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world" (John 6:33).

The true bread of God is Jesus Christ, who came down from heaven. Jesus is not merely One who taught about the bread of life; He Himself became the bread of life.

3. *"I am the bread of life"*

When the people said, *"Lord, give us this bread always,"* Jesus spoke clearly.

"And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.'" (John 6:35).

The reason Jesus is the bread of life is that He came to this earth in the flesh and personally accomplished the salvation of sinners.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of sin in our place, and by rising from the dead, He gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

Therefore eating Jesus, the bread of life, does not mean eating something with the body. It means believing with the heart in the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

— That Jesus came in the flesh was in order to become the Savior of sinners.

— The baptism He received from John is the work in which

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

He bore all the sins of the world in His own body.

— The blood of the Cross is the work in which He received in our place the punishment for the sins He had borne.

— The resurrection is the work in which He gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

The person who believes with his heart in this gospel of the water and the Spirit is the person who has eaten the bread of life.

4. Coming to Jesus and believing in Jesus

In verse 35, Jesus connected *"He who comes to Me"* and *"he who believes in Me"* as having the same meaning. Coming to Jesus does not simply mean coming to a chapel or beginning a religious life. It means laying down one's own righteousness and one's own methods and believing with the heart in the salvation that Jesus accomplished.

The soul of the person who has eaten the bread of life no longer wanders about looking for another way of salvation in order to obtain the remission of sin and eternal life. Because he believes the fact that Jesus has already borne all his sins and been judged, his conscience becomes clean from sin, he receives the Holy Spirit as a gift, and he obtains eternal life.

5. The people who saw Jesus and yet did not believe

The multitude saw the sign of the five loaves and two fish with their own eyes, but they did not believe in Jesus as the Savior of life.

"But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe" (John 6:36).

They wanted the bread Jesus gave, but they did not accept Jesus Himself. They wanted a Jesus who would fill the needs of the flesh, but they did not try to admit their sins and believe in the salvation Jesus accomplished.

One is not saved merely by the fact that he saw a miracle. One must know and believe with the heart who Jesus is, why He received baptism from John, why He shed His blood on the Cross, and why He rose from the dead.

6. Jesus never casts out the person who comes to Him

Jesus gave a sure promise to the person who comes to Him by faith.

"All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out" (John 6:37).

God the Father guides sinners to the Son, and Jesus accepts the person who comes to Him. Jesus does not cast anyone out because he is lacking or weak. He accepts the person who believes in the salvation He accomplished with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection; He gives him the remission of sin and eternal life; and He raises him up at the last day.

In the end, the reason Jesus called Himself the bread of life and told them to believe is clear. It is because the food of salvation that makes sinners live is not human deeds or the things of the world, but Jesus Christ Himself. Believing in Jesus, whom God sent, and in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He completed is accepting the will of God, and it is the way to obtain the remission of sin and eternal life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 6:38–40, what is the meaning of the word of Jesus, *"I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me"*?

John 6:38–40 clearly reveals the purpose for which Jesus came to this earth. The will of God the Father is that sinners believe in the Son and obtain the remission of sin and eternal life, and that Jesus lose none of them and raise them up at the last day.

1. The meaning of the word *"have come down from heaven"*

The word that Jesus came down from heaven reveals the divinity of Jesus. Jesus is not simply a man who was born on this earth; He is the Son of God, whom God the Father sent in order to save sinners.

Jesus is not One who began to exist from the time He was born. He was with God from the beginning, and He came to this earth in the flesh in order to save sinners. The purpose for which Jesus came down from heaven was not to become a king of this world and fill only the needs of the flesh, but to save mankind from sin and judgment and give them eternal life.

2. The meaning of the word *"not to do My own will"*

This word does not mean that the will of Jesus and the will of God the Father were different from each other. Jesus is one with the Father, and He was sent in order to accomplish completely the will of salvation that God the Father had established.

Jesus did not seek His own glory or the benefit of the flesh. In obedience to the will of God the Father, He accomplished the work of saving sinners. Therefore this word reveals the self-humbling and obedience of Jesus, and at the same time it shows that Jesus is the true Savior whom God sent.

3. The will for which God the Father sent Jesus

In the passage, the will for which God sent His Son appears concretely.

Word	The will of God the Father
"I have come down from heaven"	That the Son of God comes into the world in the flesh
"of all He has given Me I should lose nothing"	That He perfectly saves those who believe and keeps them to the end
"everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him"	That He makes anyone at all believe in the work of salvation of Jesus
"may have everlasting life"	That He gives the remission of sin and eternal life to those who believe
"I will raise him up at the last day"	That He raises the dead saints and makes them live forever

The will of God does not lie in condemning sinners and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

destroying them, but in saving them from sin through the Son and letting them obtain eternal life. That is why God the Father sent Jesus to this earth as the bread of life.

4. How did Jesus accomplish the will of the Father?

The plan of salvation of God the Father was accomplished through the incarnation of Jesus, the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

First, Jesus came to this earth in sinless flesh.

In order to bear sin and be judged in the place of sinners, a sinless Savior had to come in a human body.

Second, Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. This is the work of the 'water' spoken of in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Third, Jesus shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin in our place.

The punishment Jesus received on the Cross was not because of His own sin, but because of all the sin of mankind that He had borne with the baptism He received from John. By giving up His own life, Jesus paid the price of sin completely.

Fourth, Jesus rose from the dead.

The resurrection is the evidence that Jesus overcame the power of sin and death, and it is the completion of the salvation that gives new life and eternal life to those who believe.

Therefore, when Jesus said He had come to do *"the will of Him who sent Me,"* it meant that He would completely accomplish with His own body the salvation of the remission of sin that the Father had planned.

5. *"Everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life"*

The 'seeing' spoken of in verse 40 does not stop at seeing the physical form of Jesus with one's eyes. The Jews of that time saw Jesus right before their eyes and even saw His signs, but they did not believe.

Seeing the Son and believing means knowing who Jesus is through the word and accepting with the heart the work of salvation He accomplished.

— I believe that Jesus is the Son of God, whom God sent.

— I believe that Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— I believe that Jesus bore my sins and was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross.

— I believe that Jesus rose from the dead and gave me new life and eternal life.

The person who believes with his heart in this gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of sin, obtains the Holy Spirit as a gift, and becomes a child of God. This is the will of God the Father, who wants to give eternal life to those who believe in the Son.

6. *"I should lose nothing"*

Jesus not only saves the person who comes to Him; He also keeps him to the end. The salvation of Jesus does not depend on the imperfect deeds of the sinner; it is founded on the work of salvation that Jesus completed.

Because Jesus bore all sins with the baptism He received from John and paid the full price of those sins on the Cross, the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

person who believes in that salvation receives the perfect remission of sin. Jesus does not abandon the people He has saved; He feeds them with the word, guides them by the Holy Spirit, and makes them live by faith in the Church of God.

7. *"I will raise him up at the last day"*

The salvation of God does not end with the remission of the sin of the heart. The person who has obtained eternal life by believing in Jesus rises again at the last day even if his body dies.

Just as Jesus rose from the dead, the person who has received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit also rises at the last day. Therefore eternal life is not a vague hope that begins only after death. The believer obtains the remission of sin and new life now, and at the last day he rises again in an imperishable body and lives forever in the kingdom of God.

In the end, the will for which Jesus came down from heaven can be summed up as follows.

God the Father sent His Son so that sinners might believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished and obtain the remission of sin and eternal life. Jesus completed that will with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and He loses none of those who believe and raises them up at the last day.

In John 6:41–51, what is the word in which Jesus told them to believe in Himself, who had become the bread of life, whereas the people of Israel in the Old Testament died even though they ate manna?

In John 6:41–51, Jesus contrasts the manna of the wilderness with Himself. Manna was food that kept the bodies of the people of Israel alive for a certain period, but Jesus, the bread of life, is the Savior, who saves sinners from sin and death and makes them live forever.

1. The Jews saw only the flesh of Jesus and complained

When Jesus said that He was the bread which came down from heaven, the Jews complained.

"The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, 'I am the bread which came down from heaven.' And they said, 'Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that He says, 'I have come down from heaven'?'" (John 6:41–42).

They saw only the fleshly background of Jesus. Because they thought of Jesus only as a man who had grown up in the home of Joseph and Mary, they could not accept the fact that Jesus is God from the beginning and the Lord of life, who came from heaven.

Although Jesus put on a human body, He is not a mere human being. He is the Son of God, whom God the Father sent in order to save sinners, and He is the God of life, who created all things. Therefore only Jesus can make dead souls live and give them eternal life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

2. God the Father draws people to the Son through the word

"No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, 'And they shall all be taught by God.' Therefore everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to Me" (John 6:44–45).

God the Father makes people realize their sin and destruction through the word and guides them to Jesus. The person who has heard and learned from the Father does not cling to his own righteousness and religious deeds, but comes to seek Jesus, who came to save sinners.

The purpose for which the Father draws people is also clear. It is for sinners to come to Jesus, believe in the salvation He accomplished, obtain the remission of sin and eternal life, and rise again at the last day.

3. The manna of the wilderness was food for the body

God sent down manna to the people of Israel who had come out of Egypt.

"And the children of Israel ate manna forty years, until they came to an inhabited land; they ate manna until they came to the border of the land of Canaan" (Exodus 16:35).

Manna was miraculous food that God gave. It kept alive the bodies of the people of Israel, who had nothing to eat in the wilderness, and preserved their lives. But manna was not food that washed away people's sins or gave eternal life.

Jesus said as follows.

"Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead"

(John 6:49).

Manna had to be eaten every day, and the people who ate manna also eventually died physically. Manna was food that showed the true bread of life that would come down from heaven in the future.

The manna of the wilderness	Jesus, the bread of life
It was given to the people of Israel	He came for all the sinners of the world
It solved the hunger of the body	He solved the problem of the sin and death of the soul
It had to be eaten fresh every day	He completed eternal salvation once and for all
Those who ate it eventually died	He gives eternal life to those who believe
It was needed until the life in the wilderness ended	He is the food of life that never changes for all eternity

4. Eating the bread of life is believing in Jesus

Jesus first said, *"He who believes in Me has everlasting life,"* and then He revealed Himself as the bread of life.

"Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me has everlasting life. I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world" (John 6:47–51).

When we look at the order of this word, we can know what it is to eat the bread of life.

— He who believes has eternal life.

— Jesus is the bread of life.

— The person who eats this bread lives forever.

— The bread that Jesus gives is His own flesh for the life of the world.

Therefore eating the flesh of Jesus is not eating the body of Jesus physically, but believing with the heart in the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished with His own body.

5. Jesus became the bread of life with His own body

When Jesus said, *"The bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world,"* it meant that He would give His own body for the salvation of sinners.

Jesus came to this earth in the flesh in order to save sinners. And He bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross.

On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of sin in our place, and by rising from the dead, He gave new life to those who believe.

Therefore believing in Jesus, the bread of life, is accepting with the heart the following work of salvation.

1. The Son of God came in the flesh in order to save sinners.

2. Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John.

3. Jesus bore that sin and paid the price of sin by shedding

His blood on the Cross.

4. Jesus rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life.

Believing with the heart in this gospel of the water and the Spirit is eating the bread of life.

6. The believer has eternal life now

Jesus said, *"He who believes in Me has everlasting life."* Eternal life is not an uncertain promise that one may receive someday in the distant future; it is the life that the person who believes in Jesus, the bread of life, obtains now.

When one believes with the heart in the salvation Jesus accomplished, he has all his sins washed away and receives the Holy Spirit as a gift. The soul that had been separated from God comes to life again and becomes a child of God. Even if the body dies, that life continues forever, because Jesus raises him up at the last day.

The manna of the wilderness kept the body alive, but it could not remove the power of sin and death. But Jesus, the bread of life, completely solved sin and judgment with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Therefore the reason Jesus told them to believe in Him is clear. It is because only Jesus is the Son of God, who came from heaven, and the bread of life, who bore the sin of mankind with His own body, was judged, and gave the remission of sin and eternal life to those who believe.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 6:52–59, why did Jesus say in this word, "*Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you*"?

In John 6:52–59, Jesus spoke of how a sinner obtains the remission of sin and eternal life as "eating His flesh and drinking His blood." The flesh and blood of Jesus refer to the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished with His own body, and eating and drinking means believing in and accepting that salvation with the heart.

1. The Jews understood the word of Jesus physically

When Jesus said, *"The bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world,"* the Jews quarreled among themselves.

"The Jews therefore quarreled among themselves, saying, 'How can this Man give us His flesh to eat?'" (John 6:52).

The Jews took the word of Jesus only physically. So they quarreled over how a person could eat the flesh of another person. But Jesus was not telling them actually to tear off and eat His flesh; He was telling them to believe in the salvation He would accomplish with His own body.

In the earlier part of John chapter 6, Jesus had already said, "*He who believes in Me has everlasting life.*" Therefore eating the flesh of Jesus and drinking His blood is accepting by faith Jesus and His work of salvation.

2. Why must we eat His flesh and drink His blood?

"Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you.'" (John 6:53).

From the time a person is born as a descendant of Adam, he is under sin, and he cannot escape death and judgment, the wages of sin. Religious deeds, good works, and prayers of repentance cannot pay the price of the sins a person has committed. For a sinner to obtain life, sin must actually be gone and the punishment of sin must be settled.

Jesus accomplished these two things with His flesh and blood.

The flesh of Jesus	The blood of Jesus
It refers to Jesus coming to this earth in the flesh	It refers to Jesus giving up His life on the Cross
He bore all the sins of the world in His own body with the baptism He received from John	Because of the sins He had borne, He shed His blood and was judged on the Cross
All the sins that sinners committed were transferred to Jesus	The price of sin was paid completely
It gives the washing of sins to those who believe	It saves those who believe from the judgment of sin

The flesh and blood of Jesus are not two separate salvations. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. And on the Cross He shed His blood, paid the price of sin, and rose from the dead.

This is the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished with His flesh and blood.

3. What is it to eat the flesh of Jesus?

Eating the flesh of Jesus is believing with the heart in the fact that Jesus bore all our sins in His own body with the baptism He received from John.

Jesus is the sinless Son of God, but by receiving baptism from John, He accepted all the sins of the world into His own body. Therefore the faith that eats the flesh of Jesus confesses as follows.

"All my sins of the past, the present, and the future were transferred to His body when Jesus received baptism from John. Because Jesus bore all my sins once and for all, those sins no longer remain in me."

Believing this fact is eating the flesh of Jesus by faith.

4. What is it to drink the blood of Jesus?

Drinking the blood of Jesus is believing in the fact that the blood Jesus shed on the Cross while bearing our sins was the judgment for all our sins.

Because the wages of sin is death, Jesus, who bore sin, had to receive the punishment for that sin without fail. That Jesus shed His blood and died on the Cross was His paying in our place the price of all the sins of the world that He had borne with the

baptism He received from John.

Therefore the faith that drinks the blood of Jesus confesses as follows.

"The judgment Jesus received on the Cross was the judgment I had to receive. Because Jesus gave up His own life and paid the full price of my sins, I no longer receive the judgment of sin."

Believing this fact is drinking the blood of Jesus by faith.

5. Those who believe in His flesh and blood obtain eternal life

"Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed" (John 6:54–55).

Jesus did not say only, "will obtain eternal life"; He said, *"has eternal life."* The person who believes in the flesh and blood of Jesus has all the sins of his heart washed away now and obtains new life.

And at the last day, Jesus raises up that person's body as well. The salvation given to the person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is as follows.

1. He has all the sins of his heart washed away.
2. He is saved from the judgment of sin.
3. He receives the Holy Spirit as a gift.
4. He becomes a child of God.
5. He obtains eternal life now.
6. He rises again at the last day and lives forever.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

6. He abides in Jesus, and Jesus abides in him

"He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him" (John 6:56).

The person who believes in the flesh and blood of Jesus abides in Jesus. This means that he abides in the perfect remission of sin that Jesus accomplished. Jesus also abides in that person's heart through the Holy Spirit.

The Holy Spirit comes into the heart of the person whose sins have been washed clean. When one believes the fact that Jesus removed all sins with the baptism He received from John and the blood of the Cross, the sin in his heart is gone, and the Holy Spirit seals that faith and makes him live as a child of God.

7. The person who lives because of Jesus

"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me" (John 6:57).

The person who feeds on Jesus no longer lives by his own righteousness and his own merit. He lives by faith in the salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Even when his weakness and faults appear, he does not try again to wash away his sins by his own deeds; he believes the word of the gospel that Jesus bore even those sins with the baptism He received from John and was judged on the Cross. In this way the righteous continue to live by faith in the salvation that Jesus completed.

8. The difference between manna and the flesh and blood of Jesus

"This is the bread which came down from heaven—not as your fathers ate the manna, and are dead. He who eats this bread will live forever" (John 6:58).

Because the manna of the wilderness was food that kept the body alive, the people who ate it also eventually died. But the flesh and blood of Jesus are the true food and drink that settle the sin and judgment of sinners and give eternal life.

The reason Jesus said, *"Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you,"* is that without believing in the salvation Jesus accomplished, no one can wash away his sins or obtain eternal life.

In conclusion, eating the flesh of Jesus is believing that Jesus bore all our sins with the baptism He received from John, and drinking the blood of Jesus is believing that He bore those sins and received the judgment of sin in our place by shedding His blood on the Cross. The person who believes with his heart even in the resurrection of Jesus obtains the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life, and comes to live forever in Jesus.

In John 6:54–56, in the word *"My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed,"* how does the flesh of Jesus become true food and how does the blood of Jesus become true drink to those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, if explained on the level of the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

In John 6:54–56, the flesh and blood of Jesus refer to the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

work of the remission of sin that Jesus accomplished with His own body. Eating the flesh of Jesus and drinking His blood is believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

1. Just as the body needs food, the soul needs the gospel

The human body cannot live without eating food, and when it is thirsty, it cannot sustain life without drinking water. In the same way, for the soul that is dead in sin to come to life and sustain its life, it needs the food and drink of the soul.

That food and drink are precisely the word of salvation that Jesus accomplished with His own flesh and blood.

Word	The work of salvation of Jesus	What is given to those who believe
The flesh of Jesus	He bore all the sins of the world in His own body with the baptism He received from John	The washing away of all sins and the true food of the heart
The blood of Jesus	Bearing the sins He had taken upon Himself, He was judged on the Cross	The peace of escaping the judgment of sin and the true drink
The resurrection of Jesus	He overcame the power of death and rose again	New life, eternal life, and the resurrection at the last day
Eating His flesh and drinking His blood	Believing with the heart in all this work of salvation	The remission of sin, the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, and a life of abiding in Christ

2. How does the flesh of Jesus become true food?

The flesh of Jesus is the body of sacrifice that God prepared in order to save sinners. The Son of God came to this earth in the flesh, and by receiving baptism from John, He bore all the sins of the world in His own body.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross.

Therefore eating the flesh of Jesus is believing with the heart in the following fact.

"When Jesus received baptism from John, all my sins were transferred to His body. Jesus bore once and for all the sins I committed in the past, the sins I commit now, and even the sins I will commit in the future."

This faith becomes the true food of the soul. When one's heart is condemned because of the sins he has committed, if he believes the word that Jesus bore even those sins with the baptism He received from John, his conscience obtains peace again within the gospel.

The baptism of Jesus is not a work that has to be repeated. By receiving baptism from John only once, Jesus bore all the sins of the world. The saved person eats the food of the soul by continually believing in that completed work with his heart and reflecting on it.

3. Why did He call His flesh true food?

The food of this world fills the body for a while, but it cannot remove sin or give eternal life. Even if one keeps the law, does good works, and repeats prayers of repentance, human deeds

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

cannot move the sins one has already committed over to Jesus.

But the baptism Jesus received from John actually moved all the sins of the world onto His body. Through it, sin is washed away from the heart of the believer and his soul comes to life.

Therefore the word that the flesh of Jesus is true food means that the remission of sin that Jesus accomplished with His own body is the perfect salvation that actually makes the soul of the sinner live.

4. How does the blood of Jesus become true drink?

The blood of Jesus shows that He received on the Cross, in our place, the punishment for the sins He had borne with the baptism He received from John.

The wages of sin is death. Therefore, after sin was transferred to Jesus, the judgment for that sin had to be carried out. By bearing the sin of the world, being hung on the Cross, and shedding His blood, Jesus received in our place the judgment we had to receive.

Drinking the blood of Jesus is believing as follows.

"The blood Jesus shed on the Cross is the blood that paid the price of my sins. Because Jesus received in my place the judgment I was to receive, no punishment of sin remains for me to receive any longer."

Just as a thirsty person obtains refreshment and satisfaction when he drinks water, when one believes in the blood of Jesus, who received in our place the judgment of all sins on the Cross, his conscience escapes from condemnation and the fear of judgment and obtains true peace. That is why the blood of Jesus becomes the true drink of the soul.

5. His flesh and blood must be believed together

The flesh and blood of Jesus make up one perfect work of salvation.

— He bore sin with the baptism He received from John.

— Bearing the sins He had taken upon Himself, He went to the Cross.

— On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of sin in our place.

— He rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life.

The baptism of Jesus accomplished the transfer and washing away of sin, and the blood of the Cross ended the judgment for that sin. The resurrection is the completion of the salvation in which He overcame sin and death and gave new life to those who believe.

Therefore believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is not believing only in the baptism of Jesus or believing only in the Cross separately, but believing completely in the whole work of salvation of Jesus, which runs from the incarnation to the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

6. Even after one is saved, they remain true food and drink

The flesh and blood of Jesus are not a gospel needed only when one first receives the remission of sin. Even for the person who has already received the remission of sin, they become the food of the soul that makes him live by faith every day.

Even after being saved, a person is weak and can do wrong and commit sin. At such times, if he looks at his own deeds, he

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

falls into condemnation and fear, but if he looks at the salvation Jesus has already accomplished, his faith stands firm again.

— "Jesus bore this sin, too, with the baptism He received from John."

— "Jesus received the judgment for this sin, too, on the Cross in my place."

— "Jesus rose from the dead and gave me new life."

— "I have obtained the remission of sin and eternal life by believing this gospel."

When one reflects by faith on the completed salvation in this way, his soul gains strength again, he serves God with thanksgiving, and he can also preach the gospel of life to others.

7. *"Abides in Me, and I in him"*

The person who eats the flesh of Jesus and drinks His blood abides in Jesus, and Jesus also abides in that person. This means that the person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and Jesus have been united by faith.

Because Jesus washed away all the sins of the heart with the baptism He received from John and the blood of the Cross, the Holy Spirit dwells in that person. The Holy Spirit makes him believe in the salvation Jesus accomplished, confirms that salvation in his heart, and guides him to live as a child of God.

Therefore the word that the flesh of Jesus is true food and His blood is true drink can be summed up as follows.

The flesh of Jesus is true food because it is the body of salvation that bore all our sins with the baptism He received from John. The blood of Jesus is true drink because it is the blood of life of Jesus, who bore those sins and received the judgment on the Cross in our place. The person who believes with his heart

in this salvation and the resurrection has all his sins washed away, obtains the Holy Spirit and eternal life, abides in Jesus, and Jesus also abides in that person.

In John 6:60–65, if we believe with our hearts in the baptism of Jesus Christ and the blood of the Cross, do we have the sins of our souls washed away and are we also saved from the judgment of sin? How can this be explained on the level of the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

John 6:60–65 makes clear how we are to eat and drink the flesh and blood of Jesus that He spoke of earlier. The word of Jesus does not mean to eat His flesh and drink His blood with the body; it is the word telling us to believe with the heart in the salvation Jesus accomplished with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

1. The reason the disciples said, *"This is a hard saying"*

Jesus had said earlier that unless they ate His flesh and drank His blood, they had no life. Many people took this word physically. Because they wondered how a person could possibly eat the flesh of Jesus and drink His blood, the word of Jesus became a stumbling block to them.

But the problem did not lie in the word being too hard. It lay in their understanding the word of Jesus only with the thoughts of the flesh and not believing it with the heart.

The 'eating and drinking' that Jesus spoke of means faith.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Knowing who Jesus is through the word of God and accepting with the heart the work of salvation He accomplished with His own body is eating the flesh of Jesus and drinking His blood.

2. *"The Son of Man ascending to where He was before"*

Jesus said that He would ascend to where He was before. This means that Jesus is not a mere man, but the Son of God, who came down from heaven.

Jesus was sent from God the Father and came to this earth. He was the One who, after receiving baptism from John and dying on the Cross, would rise again, ascend into heaven, and return to the Father.

Therefore the word about the flesh and blood of Jesus is not something an ordinary man said, telling people to eat his body. It is the word of salvation that God came in the flesh, bore the sin of mankind with His own body, was judged, and gives eternal life.

3. *"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing"*

"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life" (John 6:63).

The word "*the flesh profits nothing*" does not mean that the flesh of Jesus is of no profit. Jesus bore our sins with His own body and shed His blood on the Cross. What He meant here by saying that it profits nothing is that fleshly thoughts and human deeds cannot make the soul live.

Human religious efforts, good works, and prayers of repentance cannot transfer sin to Jesus or pay the price of sin. Even if one understands the flesh and blood of Jesus only as physical food with human wisdom, he cannot obtain life.

What makes the soul live is the word that testifies to the salvation Jesus accomplished. When one believes that word with the heart, sin is washed away and the soul comes to life.

The word of Jesus	The meaning accomplished in the gospel of the water and the Spirit
Eating the flesh of the Son of Man	Believing that Jesus bore all sins with the baptism He received from John
Drinking the blood of the Son of Man	Believing that Jesus received the judgment of sin on the Cross in our place
The word is spirit and life	The soul comes to life when one believes the word of salvation with the heart
The ascension of the Son of Man	Jesus, who died on the Cross and rose again, returned to the Father
The Father draws	God guides sinners to Jesus through the word and the Holy Spirit

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

4. He washed away the sins of the soul with the baptism He received from John

The flesh Jesus spoke of is His own body, which He gave for sinners. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

When Jesus received baptism from John, all the sin of mankind was transferred to His body. Our sins of the past, the present, and the future, all the sins we committed with our hearts, thoughts, and actions, passed on to Jesus.

Therefore the person who believes in the baptism of Jesus can confess as follows.

"All my sins were transferred to His body when Jesus received baptism from John. Because Jesus bore my sins once and for all, the sins of my heart have been washed clean."

This is eating the flesh of Jesus by faith, and it is having one's sins washed away by the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

5. He saved us from the judgment of sin with the blood of the Cross

Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. By shedding His blood and dying on the Cross, He received in our place the judgment of sin that we had to receive.

Believing in the blood of Jesus is not simply being moved by the fact that Jesus suffered on the Cross. It is believing with the heart that His death was the judgment for all my sins.

"Because Jesus bore my sins, He was judged on the Cross in my place. Because Jesus shed His blood and paid the full price

of my sins, I have been saved from the judgment of sin."

This is drinking the blood of Jesus by faith.

6. The baptism and the blood of the Cross are one work of salvation

The baptism of Jesus and the Cross are not separate from each other.

1. Jesus came to this earth in the flesh.

2. He bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John.

3. Bearing the sin of the world, He went to the Cross.

4. On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of sin in our place.

5. He rose from the dead and gave new life to those who believe.

6. He ascended into heaven and sat down at the right hand of God the Father.

The baptism He received from John accomplished the transfer and washing away of sin, and the blood of the Cross ended the judgment for that sin. The resurrection is the evidence that the salvation from sin and death has been completed.

Therefore the person who believes with his heart in the baptism of Jesus, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection has all his sins washed away and is also saved from the judgment of sin.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

7. The word makes the soul live

Jesus said, *"The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life."* Eating the flesh of Jesus and drinking His blood takes place in believing the word of God with the heart.

When a person hears the word of the gospel and accepts the following facts with his heart, his soul comes to life.

— Jesus is the Son of God and my Savior.

— Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— Jesus bore my sins and was judged on the Cross.

— Jesus rose from the dead and gave me new life.

— In my heart, which believes in this salvation, there is no sin, and I have obtained eternal life.

This faith does not come from human feelings or experiences; it arises from hearing and accepting the word of God.

8. The Father draws people to Jesus

In verse 65, Jesus said that no one can come to Him unless it has been granted to him by God the Father. Through the word and the Holy Spirit, God makes a person realize his sin, makes him know that he cannot be saved by his own deeds, and guides him to hear of the salvation Jesus accomplished.

Nevertheless, not everyone believed merely because they had been at the side of Jesus. Many disciples heard the word of Jesus, but they did not accept it with their hearts. Judas Iscariot also followed Jesus around, but he did not believe with his heart in the salvation of Jesus.

True faith does not stop at seeing the miracles of Jesus and seeking fleshly help. It accepts with the heart the word that Jesus

completely washed away my sins and saved me from judgment with the baptism He received from John and the blood of the Cross.

In conclusion, John 6:60–65 says the following.

The word about the flesh and blood of Jesus is spirit and life. If we believe that Jesus bore all our sins with the baptism He received from John, we have the sins of our souls washed away, and if we believe that Jesus bore those sins and was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross, we are saved from the judgment of sin. And by believing in the resurrection of Jesus, we obtain new life and eternal life. This is the salvation of being born again by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In John 6:66–71, how can this word be explained by the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

John 6:66–71 shows the difference between following Jesus for fleshly purposes and believing with the heart in the salvation Jesus accomplished. Many people could not accept the word about the flesh and blood of Jesus and left, but Peter believed that Jesus had the words of eternal life and remained at His side. Judas Iscariot was among the twelve disciples, but he did not believe with his heart.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

1. The reason many disciples left Jesus

The *"disciples"* in verse 66 does not refer only to the twelve disciples; it refers to the many people who heard the word of Jesus and followed Him around. These people had eaten bread through the miracle of the five loaves and two fish, and they expected Jesus to keep filling the needs of the flesh.

But Jesus told them to seek not the food which perishes but the food which endures to everlasting life. Then He taught that they must eat His flesh and drink His blood in order to obtain life.

Because they took the word of Jesus physically, they said, *"This is a hard saying,"* and left. What they wanted was the bread of the flesh, but what Jesus was trying to give was the remission of sin and eternal life.

The people who left Jesus	Peter and the disciples who remained
They wanted the bread of the flesh and practical benefits	They wanted the word that makes the soul live
They rejected the word about the flesh and blood of Jesus	They believed the word of Jesus as the words of eternal life
They tried to make Jesus a fleshly king	They believed in Jesus as the Holy One of God
They went back when the word became hard	They remained, knowing that there is no eternal life anywhere else
They saw the signs of Jesus but did not believe in salvation	They believed the word of Jesus and knew who He is

2. *"Do you also want to go away?"*

After Jesus saw many people leaving, He asked the twelve disciples, *"Do you also want to go away?"* This question was a word that brought out the faith in the hearts of the disciples.

Jesus did not weaken the truth in order to hold on to the number of people. This is because, in order to obtain eternal life, one must believe without fail in the salvation that Jesus accomplished with His own flesh and blood.

Even now, if the purpose of believing in Jesus lies only in the blessings of the flesh and practical help, one may leave when the word of the gospel differs from his expectations. But the person who has realized the problem of his sin and judgment and believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished knows the fact that there is no other Savior besides Jesus.

3. *"To whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life"*

Peter did not remain because he understood all the words of Jesus perfectly. He remained because he believed the fact that only Jesus is the Son of God and the Savior, and that Jesus has the words of eternal life.

The words of eternal life are the word that testifies to the salvation Jesus accomplished with His own flesh and blood.

— The Son of God came in the flesh in order to save sinners.

— Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John.

— Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross.

— On the Cross He shed His blood and received the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

judgment of sin in our place.

— He rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

Believing this word of salvation is eating the flesh of Jesus and drinking His blood. When one believes this word with the heart, he has all his sins washed away, is saved from the judgment of sin, and receives the Holy Spirit as a gift.

Therefore the confession of Peter has the following meaning.

"The Lord saves us with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. This word of the remission of sin and eternal life is with the Lord alone, so where shall we go, leaving the Lord?"

4. *"We have believed and know"*

Peter confessed, *"We have believed and know that thou art the Holy One of God" (John 6:69)–ASV*. He did not see Jesus simply as a prophet who performs miracles or as a king who gives the bread of the flesh. He believed in Him as the holy Son whom God sent and as the Savior, who gives eternal life.

This word shows the fact that knowing Jesus and believing in Him must go together.

One cannot be saved by knowing only as knowledge the fact that Jesus received baptism from John. One must believe with the heart that He bore all my sins with that baptism. It is not enough to know only the fact that Jesus shed His blood on the Cross; one must believe that with that death He received in my place the judgment for all my sins.

When one knows the gospel of the water and the Spirit and believes it with the heart, that word becomes the word of eternal life that washes away his sins and makes his soul live.

5. Judas Iscariot, who was among the twelve disciples but did not believe

Jesus chose the twelve disciples, but of one of them, Judas Iscariot, He said that he was *"a devil."* Judas Iscariot went around with Jesus, heard the word, and even took part in the ministry together with the other disciples. But in his heart there was no true faith that believed in Jesus as the Savior.

This shows the fact that following Jesus around outwardly and believing the gospel with the heart are different from each other.

— One is not born again merely by the fact that he is in the church.

— Bearing the name of a disciple does not mean that one has received the remission of sin.

— Having experienced the miracles of Jesus does not mean that one obtains eternal life.

— Knowing and speaking of the gospel does not necessarily mean that one has believed it with the heart.

One must believe with the heart in the salvation Jesus accomplished. Judas Iscariot had the outward position of being one of the twelve disciples, but he did not accept with his heart the words of eternal life that Jesus gives. In the end he betrayed Jesus.

6. By what is a true disciple revealed?

A true disciple is a person who believes with his heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished. He is not a person who follows Jesus only when circumstances are good, but a person who knows that there is no one besides Jesus

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

who can wash away his sins and give him eternal life.

The person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is also weak in the flesh and can make mistakes at times. But he cannot abandon the truth that Jesus bore all his sins with the baptism He received from John and received all the judgment on the Cross in his place. He does not return to his own righteousness, but takes hold again of the word of the completed salvation.

Also, in the Church of God, he hears the words of eternal life, grows in faith, and lives preaching to other souls the gospel of life that he has received.

In conclusion, John 6:66–71 shows three kinds of people.

1. The people who followed in order to get fleshly things and left in the face of the word of the gospel

2. The disciples who believed that Jesus has the words of eternal life and remained

3. Judas Iscariot, who was outwardly among the twelve disciples but did not believe with his heart

The person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit confesses like Peter.

“Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John, and bearing those sins, He was judged on the Cross, and He rose from the dead and gave me eternal life. These words of eternal life are with the Lord alone, so where shall I go, leaving the Lord?” ✉

Questions and Answers on John Chapter 6

[Question] 1. Briefly summarize the content around which John chapter 6 is developed.

John chapter 6 is the chapter that begins with the sign of the five loaves and two fish and makes clear that Jesus Christ is the bread of life. By feeding a great multitude to the full with five barley loaves and two fish, Jesus revealed that He is God, who does what is impossible by human calculation. Then, by walking on the sea and coming to His disciples, He also showed His authority to rule over nature.

But rather than believing in Jesus, to whom the sign pointed, the multitude sought Him in order to get the bread of the flesh again. At this, Jesus told them not to labor for the food which perishes but for the food which endures to everlasting life, and He taught that believing in Him whom God sent is the work of God. The manna in the wilderness was food that still left people to die even after they ate it, but Jesus Christ, who came down from heaven, is the true bread, who gives eternal life to those who believe.

In the latter part of the chapter, that bread of life is explained as the flesh and blood of Jesus. Believing with the heart in the work of salvation, in which Jesus bore the sin of mankind with His baptism, received the judgment for that sin on the Cross, and rose from the dead, is eating His flesh and drinking His blood. Many disciples who took this word in a fleshly way left, but Peter confessed that the Lord has the words of eternal life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Therefore the center of this chapter lies in the call to turn from the faith that pursues the benefit of the flesh and to believe in Jesus Christ, who gave eternal life with His own body and blood.

[Question] 2. In John chapter 6 verse 1, what kind of place is the Sea of Galilee, and what is it called in the passage?

The passage calls the Sea of Galilee *"the Sea of Tiberias."* Therefore the two names do not refer to different seas, but are names that refer to the same place. In John chapter 6, this place does not remain a mere geographical background. When Jesus went over to the other side of the sea, a great multitude that had seen the signs He performed on the sick followed Him, and there the sign of the five loaves and two fish took place. Also, when the disciples were crossing this sea toward Capernaum and met a great wind and waves, Jesus came walking on the sea.

Therefore the Sea of Galilee is the place where the power of Jesus was revealed in two ways. In the field He fed a great multitude with a little food, and on the sea He came to the disciples who were in the midst of the storm and made their fear cease. These events reveal that Jesus is not merely One who hands out bread, but God, who rules created things and nature and gives the food of eternal life.

[Question] 3. In John chapter 6 verse 7, how much is "*two hundred denarii*" worth?

If one denarius is taken as the wages of one able-bodied man for a day, two hundred denarii is equivalent to the wages for

about two hundred days of work. Excluding the days of rest from the count, it corresponds to roughly seven months' worth of labor. Therefore, even when converting it into today's value, rather than fixing a specific amount in today's currency, it is clearest to understand it as a large sum of money that a laborer would have to earn over several months. Because daily wages differ according to the times and the kind of work, an exact amount in won cannot be fixed as one figure.

Nor did Philip's words mean that it would be enough if only they had that money. Because he said, *"Two hundred denarii worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may have a little,"* his calculation was that even if such a large sum of money were prepared, it would not be enough to feed the multitude even a little each. The point of this amount lies not in the monetary unit itself, but in showing a situation that could not be solved by human ability. Philip calculated the necessary cost, but Andrew brought to the Lord five barley loaves and two fish, small though they were. Jesus went beyond the calculation of the disciples and fed everyone with some left over.

[Question] 4. In John chapter 6 verse 12, what lesson can be learned from the command of Christ to gather up the fragments that remain and not to throw them away?

Jesus did not finish His work with feeding the multitude to the full; He commanded them to gather up the fragments that remained so that nothing would be lost. This gives the lesson that what the Lord has given abundantly must not be regarded lightly or wasted. It was not that, because He was One who could perform miracles, He let them throw away what was left over

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

lightly. What God has given must be received with thanksgiving and handled with care.

Also, the fragments that filled twelve baskets clearly show how abundant the sign of the five loaves and two fish was. The small food of one lad seemed like nothing before a great multitude, but after receiving the blessing of the Lord, everyone ate as much as they wanted and there was still some left over. Therefore this word teaches the faith that does not despise small things but entrusts them to the Lord, the attitude that treasures the grace the Lord has bestowed, and the posture of responsibly preserving and sharing what one has received.

[Question] 5. John chapter 6 verse 17 gives the destination as Capernaum, and Mark chapter 6 verse 45 gives it as Bethsaida. Explain the relationship between the two records.

John 6:17 records that the disciples *"went over the sea toward Capernaum,"* and Mark 6:45 records that Jesus made His disciples go *"to the other side, to Bethsaida."* The fact that the two passages speak of Capernaum and Bethsaida respectively is clear.

But from these two verses alone, it cannot be determined whether Bethsaida was an intermediate stop, whether it indicates the direction of the shore the boat was heading for, or whether the destination changed during the voyage. When no evidence directly explaining this difference has been confirmed, asserting any one of these as fact becomes speculation outside the text. Therefore, for the present, it is right to preserve the records of the two Gospels as they are.

[Question] 6. In John chapter 6 verse 27, what meaning is contained in the expression about the Son of Man, that *"God the Father has set His seal on Him"*?

The word that the Son of Man is He on whom *"God the Father has set His seal"* means that God the Father appointed Jesus Christ as the only Savior who would give the food of eternal life to mankind, and sent Him. The expression of stamping a seal contains the meaning that God acknowledged and confirmed His identity and His work. Jesus is not One who stepped forward on His own and claimed to be the Savior of mankind; He is the One who was sent by the Father and came to give life to the world.

This word must be seen together with its context. Jesus told them not to labor for the food which perishes but for the food which endures to everlasting life, and He said that the Son of Man would give that food. The Son of Man, on whom the Father has set His seal, is the One who came in a human body, bore the sin of mankind with His baptism, received the judgment for that sin on the Cross, and rose from the dead to give the remission of sin and eternal life to those who believe. Therefore the expression that God the Father has *"set His seal on Him"* makes clear the fact that Jesus is the true supplier of life and the Savior whom God established.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

[Question] 7. In John chapter 6 verses 28 and 29, how did Christ answer the question, *"What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?"*

Jesus Christ answered, *"This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent."* The multitude asked what deeds they had to do for God, but Jesus told them first to believe in Him whom God sent. The work of God does not begin from man piling up his own merit or zeal and adding something to God. It begins from accepting with the heart the salvation that God accomplished by sending His Son.

Believing here does not mean merely acknowledging the name of Jesus or trying to obtain the benefit of the flesh from Him. It means believing the fact that Jesus is the Savior whom God sent, and that He came in a human body, bore all sins with His baptism, received the judgment on the Cross, and then rose again. Believing in the salvation of Christ in this way and obtaining the remission of sin and eternal life comes first, and obedience and service come out of that faith. Therefore it is not that deeds take the place of faith, but that true deeds originate from faith.

[Question] 8. In John chapter 6 verses 30–36, in what ways is the conversation between the multitude and Christ the same as, and different from, the conversation with the woman of Sychar (John chapter 4 verses 9–26)?

The two conversations resemble each other in that in both, people started from the fleshly need before their eyes, but Jesus led them to the problem of the remission of sin and eternal life.

The woman of Sychar thought of the well water she had to draw every day, and the multitude thought of the manna their fathers had eaten in the wilderness and of bread that would fill them. So the woman said, *"Give me this water, that I may not thirst, nor come here to draw,"* and the multitude said, *"Lord, give us this bread always."* Both sides at first took the word of Jesus as the water and bread of the flesh.

But the living water and the bread of life that Jesus spoke of were not material things that satisfy the flesh for a moment. Even after drinking the well water one becomes thirsty again, and the fathers who ate the manna eventually died, but what Jesus gives is the eternal life that makes a person's soul live. Therefore Jesus did not say to the multitude simply that He would give them bread, but said, *"I am the bread of life,"* and to the woman, too, He did not stop at explaining what the living water is, but said, *"I who speak to you am He."* The living water and the bread of life are not words that refer only to a gift; they refer to Jesus Christ the Savior, who gives that gift, and to the salvation He would accomplish.

That Jesus became the bread of life means that He made us live with His own body. He came to this earth in the flesh, and when He received baptism from John the Baptist, He had all the sin of mankind passed on to His own body. Because the sins that were in us passed on to Jesus, our sins were washed away, and Jesus, bearing those sins, was hung on the Cross and shed His blood, undergoing in our place the judgment of sin and paying the price of death. And He rose from the dead and gave us new life. Knowing and believing this with the heart is eating the bread of life and drinking the living water. The Holy Spirit comes upon the person who has received the remission of sin by that faith, and peace and eternal life spring up in the heart that had been tormented and afraid because of sin.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The clearest difference between the two conversations lies in the responses of the people who heard the word. The woman of Sychar at first saw Jesus as merely a Jewish man. But when her hidden sin was exposed, she recognized Him as a prophet, and after asking about worship, she spoke of the Messiah who was to come. Finally, when Jesus revealed that He is the Christ, she accepted it. In the words that follow, the woman leaves her waterpot, goes into the town, and testifies to the people about the Christ she has met. A person who sought the water of the flesh obtained the eternal living water and was changed into a person who delivers that news even to others.

On the other hand, the multitude in John chapter 6, though they had already seen the sign of the five loaves and two fish and eaten the bread, demanded a sign again. They said that Moses had given their fathers the manna, and they expected Jesus, too, to keep giving them visible bread. Although Jesus made it clear that He is the true bread which came down from heaven and the bread of life, they demanded the gift while not believing in the One who gives that gift. So Jesus said, *"You have seen Me and yet do not believe."*

Therefore both conversations turn the thirst and hunger of the flesh into the thirst of the soul and the problem of life, and make clear that Jesus Christ is the source of salvation and eternal life. But the woman, following the word, admitted her sin and recognized the Christ, while the multitude, even while seeing the sign, set their hearts on the bread of the flesh and did not believe in Him. The living water and the bread of life are not obtained by demanding them with the mouth; they are the gift of God received when one believes with the heart in Jesus Christ, who removed sin with His baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection.

[Question] 9. Summarize the verses in the Gospel of John in which Jesus Christ revealed Himself in the form "I am …."

The representative words in the Gospel of John in which Jesus Christ revealed Himself are as follows.

• *"I am the bread of life," "I am the bread of life" (John 6:35, 48).*

• *"I am the light of the world" (John 8:12).*

• *"I am the door of the sheep," "I am the door" (John 10:7, 9).*

• *"I am the good shepherd" (John 10:11, 14).*

• *"I am the resurrection and the life" (John 11:25).*

• *"I am the way, the truth, and the life" (John 14:6).*

• *"I am the true vine," "I am the vine, you are the branches" (John 15:1, 5).*

These words are not parables that stand apart from one another; they reveal from many sides that Jesus is God, who saves sinners and gives life. He is the bread of life that feeds the soul, the light that lights up the darkness, the door that leads into salvation, and the shepherd who lays down His life for the sheep. He is also the resurrection and the life that raises the dead, the only way that leads to the Father, and the true vine to which those who believe are joined so that they bear the fruit of life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

[Question] 10. In John chapter 6 verses 53–58, what kind of faith does the expression of eating the flesh and drinking the blood of Jesus Christ mean?

Eating the flesh and drinking the blood of Jesus Christ does not mean physically eating His body or actually drinking His blood. Nor does it mean that the rite itself of eating the bread and drinking the cup of the Lord's Supper gives a person eternal life. It refers to believing with the heart in the salvation that Jesus accomplished with His own body and blood.

The flesh of Jesus refers to the work in which He, who came in a human body, bore all the sin of mankind in His own body by receiving baptism in the Jordan River. Eating that flesh is believing that our sins passed on to Him through the baptism of Jesus. The blood of Jesus refers to the work in which He, who bore the sin of the world, received in our place the price and the judgment of our sins on the Cross and gave up His life. Drinking that blood is believing that the judgment has ended and new life has been given through the death on the Cross and the resurrection.

Therefore the faith that eats His flesh and drinks His blood contains together the incarnation of Jesus, His baptism, His death on the Cross, and His resurrection. The person who believes in this work of salvation receives the remission of sin and obtains eternal life; he abides in the Lord, and the Lord also abides in that person. He also receives the promise of the resurrection, that He will raise him up at the last day. Reflecting by faith every day on that completed salvation is the life of eating and drinking the true food and drink of the soul. ✉

Sermon 1 by Paul C. Jong

Live wholly for the food that does not perish

< John 6:27-59 >

"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him. Then they said to Him, 'What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?' Jesus answered and said to them, 'This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.' Therefore they said to Him, 'What sign will You perform then, that we may see it and believe You? What work will You do? Our fathers ate the manna in the desert; as it is written, "He gave them bread from heaven to eat."' Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.' Then they said to Him, 'Lord, give us this bread always.' And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst. But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. And this is the will of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.' The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, 'I am the bread which came down from heaven.' And they said, 'Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that He says, "I have come down from heaven"?' Jesus therefore answered and said to them, 'Do not murmur among yourselves. No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, "And they shall all be taught by God." Therefore everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to Me. Not that anyone has seen the Father, except He who is from God; He has seen the Father. Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me has everlasting life. I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world.' The Jews therefore quarreled among themselves, saying, 'How can this Man give us His flesh to eat?' Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you. Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me. This is the bread which came down from

heaven—not as your fathers ate the manna, and are dead. He who eats this bread will live forever.' These things He said in the synagogue as He taught in Capernaum."

Today we are going to look at the passage in which Jesus spoke about how it is right for a person who believes in Jesus to live, and about eternal life. In John chapter 6, when Jesus performed signs on the sick, many people followed Jesus, and Jesus went up on the mountain and sat there with His disciples. Jesus asked Philip where they should buy bread so that these people might eat, testing him as well, and finally He took one lunch, gave thanks, and showed the miracle in which about five thousand people ate bread and fish to the full and still twelve baskets were left over. When the people saw this, they followed Jesus and tried to make Him king. They were saying that it would be really good for them if they had such a king. But Jesus shook off their hands and went over to the other side of the sea.

Then the disciples of Jesus followed Him, and a great crowd followed as well. Jesus spoke a word of rebuke to them: *"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life" (John 6:27)*. These people had followed Jesus for the food which perishes, because of the fact that they had just eaten and been filled; they had followed without knowing that Jesus really had the food that does not perish. Jesus rebuked that. I know that this word also contains a lesson about how it is right for us to live after we have been born again.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life"

Our Lord said that to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. It is the word that the thoughts of the flesh are death, but the thoughts of the spirit give life and eternal life. Then, when we work, what will we work for? Will we work for what perishes, or will we work for the food which endures to everlasting life? If we have been saved, what work will we do after that? Will we do the work that makes people obtain eternal life, or will we do the works that perish? Jesus pointed precisely to this part. He told them to labor for the food that does not perish, that is, to do the work by which people obtain eternal life.

Our preaching the gospel, preaching the flesh and blood of Jesus, that is, the gospel of the water and the Spirit, is the work of preaching Jesus, who said that He is the bread of life, and so we are those who do the work of eternal life that does not perish. We are spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit all over the world, and when we deliver this gospel and people believe the truth, they naturally receive the remission of sin and obtain eternal life. The point is what work you and I do after receiving the remission of sin. Will we work for the food which perishes, or will we work for the food that does not perish? The food which perishes means work that has no effect at all, and the work of eternal life means the work of saving souls.

What work will we actually do? A person can think of the things of the flesh, and he can also think of the things of the spirit. It is right truly to think of souls and to work for them, but because we have the freedom to choose, we must think in our hearts about what we will actually live for, decide on one side and follow it, and engrave that way on our hearts, hold on to it,

and follow it.

Many people followed Jesus, but the purpose for which they followed Him was to eat and be filled. They followed in order to get the food of the flesh, which disappears once it is eaten; did they follow because they believed that the Lord really had the food that does not perish? As today's passage shows, they did not. They followed Jesus because of the food which perishes. So Jesus told the disciples and the many people to work for the food which endures to everlasting life. Therefore, as we work, it is extremely important to decide in our hearts what we will work for.

We are people who can do both, but we must once again sort out and think through this part, which we do not know even while claiming to know it—what the work of the spirit really is, what the work that makes people obtain eternal life is, where that work comes from, by what means it comes, and how it can be done—and become people who live for the food that does not perish.

For what do you believe in Jesus?

When we look at the types of people who believe in Jesus, there are those who follow Him for the sake of the flesh, and there are those who follow Him in order to obtain eternal life. In other words, there are people who follow Jesus in order to do the work of the flesh, and there are people who do the work of Jesus in order to do the work that makes people obtain eternal life. But 99.9 percent of the people who believe in Jesus today believe for the food of the flesh. The Apostle John said, *"Beloved, I pray that you may prosper in all things and be in health, just as your soul prospers" (3 John 1:2)*, but we can see that there are many

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

people who believe in Jesus for the riches or honor of the flesh rather than for the problem of the soul. There are many people who believe in Jesus in order to become rich by believing in Jesus, to have their business go well, to be healthy, and to live in luxury in every way. In fact, in the two thousand years of the history of Christianity, almost all of those who believed have believed in Jesus for the sake of the flesh.

There is a statistic that was compiled in America about people who believe in Jesus; when they looked at what areas pastors had preached in for several decades, they say there were three types. The first was the preaching that if you believe in Jesus you become rich, the second that if you believe in Jesus you gain honor, and the third that if you believe in Jesus you become happy. I have told you this before. The pastors, in effect, had been handing out the food of the flesh for that purpose. What was the result of that preaching? The story was that when people believed in Jesus and made a lot of money in the world, became happy, and rose to high positions, they ended their believing in Jesus right there. Rather, the story was that they became those who opposed Jesus. I have heard such a story. When we look at our country, too, people believe in Jesus in order to be healed of sickness, believe in Jesus in order to become rich, believe in Jesus so that their families may become harmonious, believe in Jesus so that a gangster may become a good person—all of them believe in Jesus so that the flesh may prosper. Jesus told them not to labor for the food which perishes but to labor for the food which endures to everlasting life, but the point is that 99.9 percent believed so that the flesh might prosper.

Jesus, the bread of life

Jesus rebuked them. He told them not to believe in Him or follow Him for such things, but to labor for the food that does not perish, the food which endures to everlasting life. And He said this: In the Old Testament age manna came down from heaven, and that manna was what God sent down through Moses, and the people all died in the wilderness even though they ate that manna; but the Son of Man is the bread of life, and I give you the bread of life, so if you believe in Me, follow Me, and preach Me, people will obtain eternal life and will never thirst. He said, *"This is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day" (John 6:40).* And He said, *"I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world" (John 6:51).* It is the word that Jesus Himself is the bread of life, so eat Me, believe in Me, and preach Me. He said that if they would work, they should do the work of the Father; how then does one do the work of God? He said that believing in Him whom God sent is the work of God.

Eat the flesh and blood of Jesus by faith

Let us look at this word that Jesus spoke: *"Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

of Me. This is the bread which came down from heaven—not as your fathers ate the manna, and are dead. He who eats this bread will live forever" (John 6:54–58). About whom is this word spoken? It is a word spoken about Jesus Himself. But He told us to eat the flesh of Jesus, so how can we eat it? It is the word telling us to eat by faith the fact that Jesus bore all the sin of mankind in His body by receiving baptism from John. It is the word telling us to believe that Jesus bore all our sins by receiving baptism from John in order to save me and this world from sin. That is, it is telling us to eat that fact by faith.

"For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed" (John 6:55). If you believe that I received baptism from John, bore your sins, and by being nailed to the Cross and dying, received in your place the judgment for those sins, your hearts will be refreshed. He said that everyone who eats My flesh and My blood has become one who has obtained eternal life. This is a word that all of us, except for a few, know well, and all of us believe this word. By believing in the water and the blood, we have obtained eternal life. But the word the Lord spoke to us who have obtained eternal life is precisely the word, *"Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life,"* and so I believe this exhortation is a word for us. We have received the remission of sin by eating the flesh and blood of Jesus by faith. Now we must clearly know and decide in our hearts whether we will work for the food that will perish or for the food that will not perish. I know that we must know what it was in my life that I did working for the food which perishes, and we must know what kind of thing the food that does not perish is.

Working for the food which perishes is thinking only of the flesh and seeking the peace and comfort of the flesh. That thought is the food which perishes. But what kind of thing is the

food that does not perish? It is thinking of the work of the spirit. If we serve this gospel, serve as its flower-calyx, and deliver it, do people really obtain eternal life? They do. Therefore, between working for the food which perishes and working for the food that does not perish, we must clearly know and decide in our hearts. You and I are working in order to preach the gospel all over the world, and even while serving the Lord, doubts sometimes arise; there are times when we work for the food which perishes and times when we work for the food that does not perish. Because we are weak, there are times when things go wrong and times when things go well. Nevertheless, we must know the fundamental direction exactly and decide it.

The decision of the heart that it is one hundred percent right

We labor in order to spread the gospel all over the world, serve as its flower-calyx, pray, translate and distribute literature, think of this work whether sitting or standing, and live for this work—but do we have the faith that this work is really work done for the food that does not perish? Do we really believe so as we do it? We must clearly decide in our hearts that we are working for the food that does not perish, and become people who think of the work that does not perish. We are people who can think of both, but when we think of the work that does not perish, give our hearts to it, and believe in it wholly, we become workers of righteousness. We become workers who make people obtain eternal life.

I say this to you, and also to myself. We are all people who serve the Lord and live for the Lord, but we must not merely acknowledge in thought that something is right. I want you to

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

become people who realize in their hearts that one thing is wholly wrong and the other is wholly right, and who give their hearts and thoughts to the wholly right work and labor for it. We are people who can work for the work that perishes as well, but the word is that we must become people of faith who, with a firm and absolutely unshakable faith that the work of serving and standing for the gospel of the water and the Spirit is right, give themselves to that work and spur themselves on.

Until now I have spread the gospel all over the world and served the gospel, but it is not that because I have done it until now it is enough; what I am saying is that because this work is right, we must have the faith that it is right to decide in our hearts and live for the right work until the day we stand before the Lord, until the day the Lord takes us. However we have lived until now, though we know what is really right, it is more important whether we know and believe that it is right to give our lives for the food that does not perish, and decide in our hearts and live wholly for that work. It is right not to end with only knowing, but actually to live for the right work.

Because we have the flesh, we sometimes follow the flesh and sometimes follow the spirit. Therefore, toward the right work, there must be the heart and the faith that it is one hundred percent right. We must not stop at the level of saying that there are two things and one is right and the other is not right. What is not right is wholly not right, and what is right is wholly right. The heart must stand firmly in that place. Only then can we put one hundred percent of our hearts into the right work and do it, give our hearts to it, and obtain the fruit of eternal life as the fruit of that work.

What about you and me? As we live on this earth, the heart changes morning and evening, and human thoughts are like a reed. A woman’s heart is a reed, a man’s heart is even more of a

reed, and human thoughts are like a mist, amounting to nothing; nevertheless, we must believe and decide that the right work is one hundred percent right. Only then can we at least do the work of eternal life and bear the fruit of eternal life. Since the human heart goes back and forth, are we perhaps failing to say that the right work is one hundred percent right? If we are not one hundred percent sure even that the food which perishes is not right, and say that this is a little right and that is a little right, mixing this and that together, in the end we come to have nothing at all. Only when we say that what is really right is one hundred percent right and what is not right is one hundred percent not right does at least some fruit come to be borne. Only then can we live for that work, give our hearts for that work, and be sober-minded for that work.

What did Jesus say today? He told us to labor for the food that does not perish. Yet do not many Christians all over the world follow the Lord for the food which perishes, hoping that if they believe in Jesus they will become rich, gain honor, and become happy? Jesus said that we must do the work of God. The work of God is working for the food that does not perish, and it is the work that makes people obtain eternal life.

The word is that today it is right for you and me to believe that this work of preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit is one hundred percent right, to throw ourselves into this work, and to live for this work. We must make our hearts clear. It must become clear that the right work is one hundred percent right and the work that is not right is one hundred percent not right. Of course, even when the heart is clear, since it is a world where people live, are there not times when we yield a great deal in certain areas? There are many. Nevertheless, the fundamental root of the heart must not be yielded.

I believe that it is right to think of the work of the spirit rather

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

than the work of the flesh. And I believe that it is one hundred percent right. When you believe one hundred percent, things change. You cannot help but do that work. It is like the virtuous wife in Proverbs; it says that she rises before the night is over, provides food for her household, makes linen garments and sells them, and labors in everything so that her husband is respected in the gates. We who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are people who have eaten the food of eternal life, and people who have the Holy Spirit in their hearts do the right work. That is, they work for the food that does not perish. It means that they deliver the gospel to people and serve them so that, when the Bridegroom comes, they hear the words "well done," and they decide in their hearts that it is right to live for that work, agonize over it, and work for it wholly, hoping that the will of the Lord may be accomplished, and live accordingly.

It is not that we look at the world once and then look at the world of the Lord once, going back and forth this way and that; we live with our hearts set on the part that is one hundred percent right. Of course, since it will not do to have no human touch at all, there are times when we yield a little to our families, but because we do not yield on what is fundamental, we come back again and do the work. That is why we do the work of God; and by doing the work of God, we refresh the heart of God, and the people who hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit obtain eternal life.

Everyone who has eaten the flesh and blood of Jesus by faith obtains the remission of sin and eternal life. And among the people who hear the word and are served by those who believe that the work of serving this food of life that does not perish is one hundred percent right and preach it, and who then believe, there is no one who has not obtained eternal life. That is why you and I must think of the work of the spirit. And we must at

any time give a score to how right this work is. Is it one hundred percent right, or is it seventy percent right and thirty percent not right? We must clearly decide in our hearts. When there is that decision, we can follow the Lord and become workers who work for the food that does not perish, and the people who hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit from us receive the remission of sin. Also, we become the Lord's precious workers and receive blessings, grace, and love, both spiritual and physical, through the Lord. We become such people.

I think that how you and I will live the rest of our lives is a greater task than how we have lived until now. How we have lived until now has also been important, but how we will live from now on is extremely important. Jesus said it clearly: Do not live for the food which perishes, but labor for the food that does not perish. And He asks how right we think it is to labor for the food that does not perish, and how much we acknowledge and believe it. If He asks that, we must know how to answer by faith, "It is one hundred percent right." Dear fellow believers, is that not so? It is so.

The devil targets a dawdling faith

As we preach the gospel, in fact there are times when we are sick of it. The Lord said with a single word, let there be light, and there was light; He said, let there be trees, let there be plants, and it became so; and He said, let birds fly in the air, and let living creatures abound in the waters, and the fish swam in schools and abounded. We believe the word the Lord spoke, yet how slow and hard is the work of preaching that word? If we work a little, we get a sore on the tongue; if we work a little, we get hungry; if we eat a little too much, we say we are dying of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

fullness; we say we are dying of hunger, dying of exhaustion. There are hardly any people whose automatic regulator is set to normal, and if they are in the middle, they say they are dying because it is too normal. So regulating people is a really hard job. But our Lord has power and uses us who are weak as His workers. He is an amazing One. If it were a machine, you would put in oil, press the switch, tell it to walk, and it would walk right along, but people are not like that. Even though a high degree of skill and ability is needed, the Lord moves us. It must be because He is the One who made us.

To serve the gospel, one must have the faith that this way is one hundred percent right. It does not work just because one has decided in words; deciding in the heart is what matters. If you say you will go home and think about it, once you get home it will not come to mind. You must decide on this spot. A dull-headed person cannot settle one matter even if he thinks about it for a hundred years, but a smart person finishes it if he thinks about it for only five minutes. Dear fellow believers, a person must be passionate. I heard the story of a certain man who went over from our country to America and became a top figure in the steel industry. When that man was courting his present wife, they parked the car by a riverside and were talking, and even as the water rose and the car was being carried away, they were so taken with each other that they were absorbed in their conversation. Then a policeman came and said, “Your car is being carried away right now, so get out quickly,” and when they got out, the car was half submerged, they say. A person must be that passionate.

When you work, too, you must do it wholeheartedly, and there must be something definite. Will it do to be like water added to water or wine added to wine? What happens if you add water to jeongjong? It may be warm, but it has no taste. What

would happen if you added detergent to soju? One must have individuality. When a born-again person works, he must be completely absorbed in that work as he does it. After believing in the Lord and being born again, when we serve the gospel and the Lord, we must be completely absorbed in that work and have the passion that this work of mine, serving the Lord, is one hundred percent right.

Even if I have not been entrusted with a great task, we must live with a passion for righteous work, in the faith that if we work like this, the flower of the gospel will bloom all over the world and the gospel will be spread. We need such faith. God has made you and me into such people. Today is an age in which the present and the future are uncertain, but we must have the firm faith that what we do and believe is right.

Whether it has been a short time or a long time since one received the remission of sin, what happens if a small child dawdles even after relieving himself? His whole body gets dirty and smelly, and he cannot live like that. We must clearly decide in our hearts. When we hear the word of God, if it is right, we must clearly decide that it is right and accept it, and if we reject it, we must clearly state the reason for rejecting it. If we dawdle, the devil, who targets such people, comes and devours them. There is a devil that devours people who dawdle, unable to be sure whether this gospel is right even after ten years in the church, saying this is right and that is right too.

The culture of this world is a serpent culture. If you go to Jeju Island, they revere serpents. This happened twenty years ago when I was near Yongduam Rock on Jeju Island. I was riding in a taxi, and the driver would not drive the car. When I asked why he was not going, he said he was not going because a snake was crossing right then. The story was that on Jeju Island, if you drive past while a snake is crossing, something terrible

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

will happen. I got out, caught the snake, and got rid of it. I cannot tell you how many snakes there are. When we look at ancient cultures, people served serpents. They believed that the serpent made people bear children well and made them rich.

In our country, too, when there were many thatched houses, there was what was called the house serpent. People used to say that if you caught that serpent, boiled it, and drank a bowl of it, your face would become so glossy with oil that it was better than putting on a million won's worth of high-class cosmetics. The culture of this world is a serpent culture, and what do they say a serpent becomes when it grows old? Do they not say it becomes a dragon? The serpent is the devil, and that is the dragon. That is why people who have not been born again all go weak in the knees over a dragon dream. They have been deceived by the devil. They carve dragons on tombs and rocks, too, but if you go to hell, there is a dragon. The thing most accursed before God is the dragon, and it is the devil.

The reason Jesus said, "*My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed*"

But we have been saved. We have been saved by eating the flesh and blood that the Lord gave. Have we eaten the flesh and blood that the Lord gave? We have. When did we eat them? Believing that all sins passed on to Jesus when He received baptism from John is eating the flesh of Jesus. We ate it by faith. When did we drink the blood of Jesus? When we believe that Jesus bore my sins and died for me on the Cross, we have drunk the blood of Jesus. Is your heart refreshed? It is. That is why Jesus said that His flesh is food indeed and His blood is drink indeed. When we eat the flesh of Jesus by faith, our stomachs

become full and our eyes open wide, and when we drink the blood of Jesus, our hearts become refreshed. As we live, there are times when we do wrong, times when we fall short, and times when we commit errors that can never be undone. But when we think of the fact that Jesus bore our sins through the baptism He received from John and was judged in our place on the Cross, our hearts are refreshed inside.

Lord, You truly died well for us. Thank You. Dear fellow believers, was Jesus in pain on the Cross, or was His heart refreshed? When the nails were driven in, He must have been in pain. While He hung there for three hours, He must have been in terrible pain. But at the last moment, He was refreshed. He came to this earth to remove all the sins of these unworthy children, and at the age of thirty He received all the sins of the whole world passed on to Him with the baptism He received from John, so how many those sins must have been! Bearing sins more numerous than the black clouds of the sky, He was nailed to the Cross and was in pain enough to die, but when He died, His heart must have been saying, "I have finished the work of saving these unworthy children from sin. Do not weep for Me, but weep for yourselves and weep for your children. Farewell; I will come again." When the Lord finally said that He had finished it all, His heart must have felt truly good, and it must have been overflowing with joy. Someday I, too, must preach a sermon overflowing with joy just once. *"It is finished!"* What is it like for us, too, when we finish some work? It is all done, even the corrections are all done; has the book been printed? It has been printed; it is finished; it is over. Nothing could be so refreshing.

Jesus, too, at that last moment when He had received the sins of you and me passed on to Him with the baptism He received from John and died on the Cross, was refreshed like that. He said

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

that it was finished, and that is why He said He would come again. If it had been nothing but agony and He had not finished it all, so that He would have to come again and do that work all over, He would have said that He had come this time, but next time you must take care of it yourselves. But the Lord forgot all His suffering and said that He would come again to take us, in the very form in which He ascended, and that we would live together in the Millennial Kingdom and live together in the eternal kingdom of heaven.

Live the rest of your life for the food that does not perish

We must have this faith that it is one hundred percent right. There must be in our hearts the faith that because it is one hundred percent, wholly right, we will continue to do it in the future as well. Only when we have the faith that puts one hundred percent of our hearts into that work can we live the life that stretches out before us like ninety thousand ri, and work overflowing with assurance and joy until the day the Lord comes. Otherwise it is hard. Even just thinking of the work we have done until now, it was hard enough to make us shudder, but what we believed and did was right, and when we make an interim reckoning of whether it will really be right in the future as well, it is one hundred percent right, and so there is no problem at all for the future either. Dear fellow believers, this is not some theory; it is our heart and our faith. We must gather up our hearts once again and put our hearts into it once again. In the part that the Lord says is right, in the part of doing the work that does not perish, there must be one hundred percent faith that it is right. When we put one hundred percent of our hearts into it, we gain

new strength like the eagle mounting up with its wings, and receiving the blessing of God through the Lord in everything we do, I know that we can fully complete all that remains in Him who gives us strength. We can complete it. But if we do not give one hundred percent of our hearts to the part that is right, it is too hard and cannot be done.

In fact, though I am lacking, I have worked until now. So it has been hard, too. Even so, I believe that it is right to do it this way. Lacking though I am, I have done it until now because I believed that this work done for people is right, because the Lord acknowledged it, because it was the food that does not perish, because I am convinced that if people believe this gospel of the water and the Spirit they obtain eternal life, and also because it has actually turned out that way. I believe that this work I have done until now is one hundred percent right for the future as well.

Once the exposition of Romans comes out, we will have done just about everything for you. I think the rest—the things of daily life, living by faith, the part of giving one's heart—can be done for you step by step. The point is to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, live separated from those who have not been born again, and live with a wholehearted faith that it is right to work for the food that does not perish. All that remains is to make up our minds firmly and live just so in our daily lives, giving glory to God and obtaining the fruit of eternal life. There is not much more we can do for you; all that remains is to believe the part that is right and live it in our lives. As for work, we can just do it, but giving our hearts day by day and living for the Lord is a continuation of life that goes on day after day.

If one were making some work of art, when the work is finished, that would be the end of it, but this is the life of faith, and it is life. We must live like this every day. It may seem hard, but if we believe in the right work and do it, giving one hundred

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

percent of our hearts, the Lord gives us strength, and so that life is not hard but rather easy. He said, *"Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest" (Matthew 11:28)*, and *"My yoke is easy and My burden is light" (Matthew 11:30)*. It is because the Lord gives us strength. When we believe that the word the Lord spoke is right and go forward with our hearts set on that word, the Lord gives us new strength, and when we go forward by faith, we come to experience that the Lord is rather serving us, and we become thankful. Giving thanks before God, I hope that the translated editions will come out quickly. The reason I have worked countless times is not to show off my own glory or the greatness of the church, but to spread the food that does not perish all over the world. All of us are doing that work.

This year we will do our best to preach the gospel. As I make the books, I know. I know that when this book goes out, a certain degree of response will arise and people of certain groups will be changed. If there is a part that bothers my heart while I am making it, without fail that part becomes a problem. Therefore we must pray, and I know that giving our hearts wholly to the conviction that it is right to work for the food that does not perish, and working with our hearts in it, is what bears fruit. That is why faith is needed, and I believe that it is right to work in our daily lives, giving our hearts and our faith. I know that you believe so as well.

Dear fellow believers, we must believe in the flesh and blood of Jesus, and we must eat them by faith. If a person has not eaten the flesh and blood of Jesus by faith, that person believes in Jesus falsely. Such a person believes in Jesus for the food which perishes, in order to become happy, rich, and honored in the world, and after getting a meal or two and finding nothing special, he ends up parting from Jesus. There are enormous

numbers of people who believe in Jesus for a while and then leave. But you and I cannot leave even if we want to. Why are we so deeply moved like this that tears come? The person who puts one hundred percent of his heart into the part that is right, says that it is right, and gives his heart and believes and lives that way is a happy person. I hope that you will not know it only with your heads, but put one hundred percent of your hearts into the part that is right and believe. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 2 by Paul C. Jong

The one who earnestly desires meets the Lord

< John 6:28-40 >

"Then they said to Him, 'What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?' Jesus answered and said to them, 'This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.' Therefore they said to Him, 'What sign will You perform then, that we may see it and believe You? What work will You do? Our fathers ate the manna in the desert; as it is written, "He gave them bread from heaven to eat."' Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.' Then they said to Him, 'Lord, give us this bread always.' And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst. But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. And this is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.'"

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"For the food which endures to everlasting life"

Yesterday we shared the word that we should not labor for the food which perishes but labor for the food which endures to everlasting life. We must work for the food which endures to everlasting life, but what kind of work is that?

We must believe in God, who made the universe, just as the word says, *"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Genesis 1:1)*. And when what that God commanded the people of Israel, and all mankind, is summed up, it is the Ten Commandments. The first through the fourth commandments are commandments concerning God: do not set up idols or images before God and do not bow down to them, do not take the name of God in vain, and remember and believe that work in which God removed all our sins through His Son, and obtain rest in your hearts. And from the fifth commandment on are the commandments to be kept between one person and another: the commands to treat your parents well, not to murder, not to commit adultery, not to steal, and not to covet. It is the word to do such things well. Because these ten are the commands of God, whoever fails to keep these commands comes to have sin.

Therefore we must believe in God and think about the commands of God. If there is anything in which we have violated those commands in thought, in heart, or in action, we must know that we have committed sin. Because the one who has committed sin is one who will be punished before God and go to hell, he needs the Savior and His help. That is why we must seek Jesus Christ—that is as far as I spoke yesterday.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

We absolutely need the help of God

If we say that we are not sinners, if we say that we can keep the commands of God well, there is no need to believe in Jesus. We need no Savior, and we need no one to help us. Just as the young man named Siddhartha, the founder of Buddhism, said, "In heaven above and on earth below, I alone am honored," one can only say the proud words that no one needs to help me, that I have no need to receive help, and that I alone am honored. But that person is someone who does not know—who knows far too little. He is not a person who has attained the Way, but a person who has fallen into the extreme of pride. Who among human beings has no need of help? All need help. Whose help does the one who has sin need? He absolutely needs the help of God. Above all, I know that he absolutely needs the help of God, who is the Savior. Is that not so? It is so.

The daily bread that must be eaten every day

Whether we have believed or not, when we think about it before God, because you and I cannot keep all the commands of God, we must at any time think once again of the food that makes us obtain eternal life, do that work, and eat that food. That work, too, must be repeated continually. Just as we eat the food of the flesh every day, we must hear and believe the gospel as we live the life of faith; and whether we have already believed or have not yet believed, if we want to live forever without sin, we must continue to work in order to obtain the food of eternal life.

The person of whom it is said, "He does not work, he does not think of God, he does not remember"—that is, the person who does not think of God, of the commands of God, and of the

things God has done to save us—is a person who is very much in the wrong. That is why in the Lord's Prayer, too, we pray, *"Give us this day our daily bread" (Matthew 6:11)*. We must work by faith and eat every day the food that is needed today, the food of eternal life. With what kind of faith do we eat it? We must think of God and the commands of God, and think of that righteous work in which Jesus Christ came to this earth and bore the sins of you and me when we had become sinners. That is, we trace in our thoughts the work in which the Lord received baptism from John, bore our sins, died on the Cross, and rose again to become our Savior, and we confirm it once again by faith. Then our relationship with God is restored, and today, too, we can eat by faith the word that God has removed our sins, and live spiritually.

That is why the Lord spoke much about this part. Let us look at the word we read today: *"Then they said to Him, 'What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?' Jesus answered and said to them, 'This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.'" (John 6:28–29)*. He said that believing in Him whom God sent is the work of God, so in order to reach this point, we must believe in God, who made the universe and made you and me, as my God, and we must think of what that God commanded and examine whether I am really living rightly before God. When we clearly examine ourselves, there are many things we have done wrong.

God gave commands, and there are so many things in which we have not kept those commands. Because we have failed to keep the commands, sin is established and we become sinners. When this was so, who is the One who came to save us? Who is the One whom God the Father sent in order to save us from sin? It is Jesus Christ. What does the word Jesus Christ mean? It means God, who is the Savior. He came to this earth in a human

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

body and carried out three offices. As King, He came in a human body in order to save His people from their sins. As High Priest, He bore the sin of us human beings in His own body. That is, He received baptism from John, was hung on the Cross, and then rose from the dead and saved us; and as Prophet, He taught us this fact. In this way He came to us as Jesus Christ. He came to sinners in order to give them the food of eternal life.

To receive Jesus Christ as one's Savior, the heart must be prepared

Now, God established such a grand and majestic plan to give us eternal life and carried out that work, but on the human side, whether one believes or not, whether one accepts or not, depends on the hearts of you and me. One may not accept it, and one's heart may not be prepared. What kind of person would the person whose heart is not prepared be? He is a person who does believe in God, but has not yet become a sinner himself. He is the person who says, "I know no sin. Which command of God have I broken? Where is there a person who lives as well as I do?"

In our country there is a saying, "A person who could live even without laws," but in fact a person who hears such a thing said of him is a very wrong person and a tremendous hypocrite. If the people of the neighborhood say that so-and-so is a person who could live even without laws, that he never sins at all, it means that he has deceived every one of them. Is there perhaps anyone among you who has heard such a thing said of you? If so, you must examine yourself carefully. Even such a person, if he does not acknowledge God and the commands of God, is not yet ready to receive Jesus Christ.

To receive Jesus Christ as one's Savior, the heart must be prepared, and in order to make that preparation, one must be drawn by God the Father. He said that no one can come to Him unless the Father draws him.

Let us read verses 36 and 37 here: *"But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out."* It is the word that all whom the Father gives to Jesus Christ come to Him, but that unless the Father draws one, one cannot believe in the Son of God the Father as the Savior. Then who is the one whom God the Father draws? "I do not know the Bible well, but I believe in God, who made this universe. I want to live without sin before God, but I do not know how to be saved. What is clear is that I have sin. I want to receive the remission of sin. I want to be made sinless." God draws the person who has such a heart and asks God for help. To whom does He draw him? He draws him to Jesus Christ. Those who are not like this are not yet ready. Even if God the Father tries to draw them, if they are saying, "No, leave me alone, I will live as I please," they are not ready to obtain eternal life or receive the remission of sin.

The process in which the Father draws

What about you and me? Even while not knowing God well, have you ever suffered because of your sins? "I really wish I could receive the remission of sin. I do not even know what the remission of sin means; I just wish my sins would disappear. Leaving everything else aside, it would be really good if just this sin I have committed would disappear." Have you perhaps had such suffering? But there is something to be careful about here.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

If perhaps someone comes and says, “You must confess even your most secret sins to me before your sins can be remitted,” that person is a thief and a servant of the devil. You must never tell him. The moment you tell that person your secret sin, you become that person’s slave. The sacrament of confession is exactly like that. If you confess before a priest that you have committed such-and-such a sin, he tells you to do good works as the price for it, and since the priest knows all about what sin that person has committed, it amounts to his looking that person in the face in the Catholic church and having him hooked fast on a hook. If the person does not listen to him and resists, because of the hook on which he has been caught, he later suffers something bad. There are many such people on this earth. Anyway, let us stop talking about others and talk about ourselves. However hard and troublesome the world may be, only when the business we are doing goes well can we eat and live and preach the gospel; it is not for us to talk about others and slander them.

“Whatever else may be, I wish that just this sin would disappear. If only I did not have this sin, I would live with my eyes wide open, without shame toward heaven or toward people, but because I have this sin, it weighs on my heart. What if I should go to hell?” Is there perhaps such a person here? I want you to know the fact that that very heart is the process in which God the Father draws you to Jesus Christ, to the Savior. That is the way God the Father draws you. If one does not suffer because of sin, one has no need of Jesus Christ. However much the Lord came to save us and saved us from sin, it is of no use. However good a medicine there may be, what good is it? If there is no patient, that medicine is not needed. That is why Jesus called Himself a physician. It is the word that only the sick need a physician, and for those who are not sick a physician is useless; that I am the physician who came to heal your sickness of sin

and your sickness of the curse; that all who need Me should come to Me, and I will give you rest; and that those who do not need Me have no need to come.

So to believe in Jesus, one must first believe in God and carefully reflect on the commands He gave. One must examine which commands he has broken, and even if he did not think of it as sin before, if he did what God told him not to do, he must know that that thing is sin. He said not to murder, but are you not already beating someone to death in your heart because you want to beat that person to death?

I once watched on television, together with the ministers, a certain pastor telling this story. He said that the juniper tree is said to leave its fragrance even on the blade of the axe that strikes it, but that when someone slandered him, he felt in his heart that he wanted to tear that person's mouth apart, and he came out and confessed that he really could not do it. But in a way, even that confession has hypocrisy mixed in it. The parable of the juniper tree is a frighteningly high standard. Honestly speaking, when someone slanders you, do you have the heart to bless him like the juniper tree and leave your fragrance on that person? Whether it is me or you, is not the inside of every person like that? When the time of martyrdom draws near, since one is going to die anyway, one might perhaps be able to say, like Deacon Stephen, "Lord, forgive them their sins," but when there are still so many days ahead to live and someone keeps chattering uselessly, the inside of a person is to say, "Oh, how tiresome; I wish that mouth would shut."

So we must search out our own sins. Even after believing in the Lord, I quietly think about myself. Whether one has believed or not, it is all the same. For the one who has believed, too, the way to eat the daily bread, the food of eternal life, is to stand before God, believe in God, think about the commands of God,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

acknowledge what he has done wrong, and believe in his heart that Jesus Christ has removed even this sin. Then peace comes into the heart, and we can walk with the Lord and do the right work. It will not do to say that once we have believed, that is the end, and there is no need to remember it again. Not remembering is a matter on God's side; on our side we must remember and confirm it every day. Otherwise, before we know it, we end up becoming like the person who could live even without laws.

The standard of sin is the command of God

God created the heavens and the earth in the beginning. The heavens and the earth means that He made the sky and the land, the world of the Milky Way, and everything, and He made human beings, too. Do you believe it? Yes. But we believe this fact through the word. Because there is the word that in the beginning He created the heavens and the earth, we know that it is so; if that word were not there, how would we know? We know it because the Bible says so, and we know it because someone reveals it and teaches it to us.

The Holy Spirit serves as a prophet to us. He teaches us who God is and who made the universe. In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth—who is the One who taught us this? The prophets recorded it, but it was Jesus Christ who taught it. That is why Jesus holds the three offices of King, High Priest, and Prophet. Jesus serves as a prophet to us through this Bible. We know because He teaches us; if He did not teach us, how would we know what sin is? We know because He taught us that failing to keep the commands of God is sin. If He had not taught us this, each person's concept of sin would differ from another's. One person would say that this is sin, and another would say that

it is not sin.

In a certain tribe living in the island country of Papua New Guinea, they say that the more dutiful a son is, the more he thinks that when his parents die, they must not be allowed to be eaten by animals or insects, so the whole family gathers and shares and eats the flesh of the parents. It is because they think that that is filial piety. What would happen if someone did that in our country? It would be a disaster. Because human thoughts differ from person to person like this, the standard of sin is the command that God has spoken. He said, you shall have no other gods before Me; you shall not make idols or bow down to them; you shall not take the name of God in vain. And coming to the New Testament, He said to believe in our hearts that God has removed all our sins with the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit, and to keep that faith well. God Himself commanded what sin is, and taught us that it becomes sin when we fail to keep this command. If He had not given us this standard, we might have mistaken something entirely different for sin. Since the standard of sin is the command of God, if we fail to keep it, it becomes sin, and if we keep it, it does not become sin. Then have we kept all the commands of God, or have we failed to keep them? We have failed to keep them. Can we keep them perfectly even for a single day? How could we keep them?

Human beings are such that even if they have the thought, they cannot keep them. Look at when people are playing in the evening and bring something to eat from the snack shop. When food comes out, does not everyone rush at it as if crazed and eat? At that time, one pulls over even what is far away and eats it himself; does he care whether someone is a pastor or an evangelist? When there is a lot of food, people say, “Please have some,” but when only a little has been brought, where is there any such thing? Even if there is only one box of cookies, they

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

ask, “Pastor, will you have some?” and if I say, “You eat it,” they say, “Yes, all right,” and eat it all up. Of course, I am not saying that it is one hundred percent like this, but I am saying that the human heart is like that. We are not perfect. I am like that, and you are like that, too. So what we must do is to believe in God, and through the word and commands of God, to know and believe only this much: “Ah, God has said that this is sin. What He has said is sin is sin, and what He has not said is sin is not sin.” Then we are qualified to go to Jesus Christ. There is no need even to weigh who does better or worse in deeds. Even if one pretends to be learned and refined for no reason, people are all about the same. If that person does that thing, we do that thing, too; it is all just like that. So there is only one thing to ask in this hour. Do you and I need Jesus, or do we not? That is all.

If we look only at interpreting the Bible, I need only a few people. If I bring in scholars of the Hebrew, Greek, and Aramaic languages, a scholar of Korean literature, and someone to type, and read a verse and interpret it, with someone beside me looking up in the dictionary what it means in the original language, and interpret it straight through, I can interpret the whole of the Old and New Testaments. Do you think that those who publish commentaries all write them alone? Making a dictionary, too, is something many people make together. Did I make our books alone, either? There were people who typed, people who proofread, and people who checked the manuscript, and so the books were made; all I did was preach. The point is not knowledge, but whether one is qualified or not.

Are you qualified to go to Jesus Christ?

Are you qualified to go to Jesus Christ, or not? Those who answered, "Yes, I am," have confessed that they fail to keep the commands of God well. This is called an indirect confession. Since you have said that you are qualified to go to Jesus Christ, then for you to receive the remission of sin is easier than eating rice cake lying down. It depends on whether one has met the qualification or not. That God saves you and me is God's work to do, and you and I need only meet the qualification and go. That qualification is met simply by acknowledging it in the heart, as if taking a test.

We need only mark a circle up to the point of acknowledging God and the commands of God, acknowledging that what we have done wrong is wrong, and saying that we want to be saved. Since God says that He sends people who have sin to hell, we need only coax God a little to have pity on us, saying, "I do not want to go there. Please save me." We need only ask Him to have pity on us. What more would we do beyond that? What use is it to do many good deeds while believing in Jesus? Is God a beggar? He is One who gains nothing at all by receiving what is ours. Because He is exceedingly rich, He only looks at the center of the heart and is pleased.

I am a person who, when I sit ministers down and talk, talks for ten hours at a time; once I start, I can go on all day long, and I can even publish it all as books. You may say that I am boasting, but what I mean to tell you is that I, too, went to Jesus because I was qualified, and I found that Jesus had removed all my sins. There is exactly one thing I did well before God. When I believed in God and examined the commands of God, there were many things in which I had not lived according to the commands, and I had also committed many sins not written in the letter, so

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

my conscience was pricked. "Ah, I am qualified." And I suffered. When there is sin in the heart, even if one wants to live without a speck of shame, one keeps becoming ashamed. Have you no shame? When you look at people, can you look at them without a speck of shame? Can you look up toward heaven without shame? Unless one is a person seared in his conscience, how could he look without shame? I am ashamed, and ashamed again. Oh Lord, I am so ashamed that my face turns red, and some things are so shameful, embarrassing, and absurd even to think of that, had it not been for Jesus, I could not live for shame. Every human being has a conscience. There is a scale in the heart, a standard that says this is all right and that is not all right, and that is the conscience. If someone says he does not have that, he really deserves to go to the hottest spot in hell. But even if one lives according to his conscience, is he blameless? He is not blameless. Even after being saved, are there not many things about which we are not blameless in our conscience? So we need only meet that qualification.

Jesus said that He came to call sinners, that He came to heal the sick, that He came to save; He did not say that He came to save sound people, decent people. In the days of Jesus, too, only those who were sick and ashamed—like the woman who suffered from a flow of blood, the woman caught in the very act of adultery, and the paralytic—came before Jesus and received grace. Those who considered themselves sound, who had picked up stones to strike, did not receive the remission of sin either; they came before Jesus, went back just as they were, clutching their own sins, and were destroyed. Is that not so? So if you know that you are lacking and know that you have sin, you are qualified to believe in Jesus. You need only acknowledge that you are one who fails to keep the commands of God well.

"I will by no means cast out"

And He said that because of that sin one goes to hell. God does not simply forgive the person who has sin and let it pass; He sends him to hell without fail. But God does not lose His temper hastily. I, too, am a hot-tempered person, but at times I do not get angry hastily. Why is that? Because however wrong the other person may have been, if I lose my temper hastily, that person's wrong is settled and canceled out by my having gotten angry. Responding calmly without getting angry is the secret of judging. That is why our Lord does not lose His temper hastily with you and me. Even if we have done something deserving to be beaten to death, He does not beat us to death on the spot; He patiently holds back until the time to send us to the hottest spot in hell, and then He shows His wrath just once. "You, come here and speak with your own mouth. Are you one who is to go to hell, or not?" "I am one who is to go to hell." "Go. The door has already been opened." He is the God who gets angry and shows His wrath just once, at that time. He never gets angry in the middle.

If God occasionally got angry in the middle and the sins we committed were settled and canceled out each time, that too would be something to be thankful for, but God does not do that. The time is almost up, so must you not show me your response so that I can bring this to an end? I ask again. Do you need Jesus? You need Him.

The people asked Jesus, if believing in Him whom God sent is the work of God, then what is the sign that would make them believe in Him. Since Jesus kept saying that He had come down from heaven, they were telling Him to show the evidence that He had come down from heaven. Then Jesus said that in the age of the wilderness in the Old Testament, God had sent manna

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

down from heaven, and that manna was not what Moses gave but what came down from heaven, and that likewise there is the true bread which My Father gives from heaven, and that bread is precisely Me. *"My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world" (John 6:32–33)*. And He said, *"I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst" (John 6:35)*. Why are we thirsty? When we break the commands of God, our conscience is tormented and our spirit dries up. The heart is tormented, joy disappears, and it withers. That is why Jesus is spoken of as life and as the bread and water of life. When we believe in Jesus, peace comes into our hearts, living water comes, and our hearts become refreshed.

"But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out" (John 6:36–37). If we are qualified, the Father draws us. "I believe in God, but I am a person who does not live well according to the commands of God. I really have sin. I suffer because of that sin, and if I stay like this, I will go to hell according to the word, and I do not want that to happen. I want to be saved." If one has such a heart, God speaks. "Then believe in My Son. My Son came to this earth for you, received baptism from John and bore your sins once and for all, shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment for sin in your place, and saved you."

So if we go to the Lord with our sins and believe in Him as our Savior, if we believe the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Lord never casts us out, saying, "You are not needed because you sin so much." Because we came to Him lacking, He accepts us. Our Lord is rather One who accepts the lacking, not One who accepts the outstanding. Since He said that

He will by no means cast out, I want you to believe in the Lord without hesitating to believe. All you have to do is believe. If you go to the Lord with your sins, saying, "I am one who is to go to hell, but please save me," and accept in your heart and believe the salvation that the Lord accomplished for you, the Lord says, "Thank you; you have returned to Me. I have removed all your sins. Live well."

He does also say the word not to sin, but just because He tells us not to sin, will we not sin? Would God not know that situation? He knows it all. God is the One who examines the center of our hearts—our every movement, the moving of our hands and feet, even what we think. He knows all about what you are thinking right now, what you will eat when this is over, and how you will make trouble for whom. When I look at young people, as if making trouble for one another were their hobby, they say things that scratch at each other's insides: if one says, "Your face is like a bindaetteok," the other says, "Your face is like an earthworm," and when the other person suffers, they are pleased.

God knows all about what you and I will do and what we will think. The point is whether we are really pure before God. "Before God I cannot even be a small child. I am nothing. I am really like a heedless little child. But will You accept me?" God says, "You who labor and are heavy laden, are you not suffering because of sin? Come to Me, all of you, and I will give you rest; I will make it so that you never again become slaves of sin, but become slaves of righteousness."

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Whom will you receive into your hearts?

I think I will deliver only this word and close. If you and I need Jesus, believe in Him, and receive the remission of sin, then, lacking though we may be, if we are in the church, we finally become servants of the right work. We come to rejoice in the right work in our hearts and do it. Even if there are things that do not go well at first, it comes to be so. But what happens if one does not need Jesus and does not believe in Jesus? However much one wants to do the right work, one ends one's life doing only bad things. However hard one tries not to do bad things, it does not work, and however hard one tries to do good things, it does not work.

This difference is decided according to who is the master of the hearts of you and me. If one receives and believes in Jesus Christ as the Savior, God pours into that heart the Holy Spirit, that is, the Spirit who is holy, and makes him love what is holy, follow it, and obey it. But if one does not believe, an evil spirit takes possession of that heart and makes him do bad things, torments him, and hinders him. It is a matter of who one's master is. Whom do you want to have as your master? God, or the devil? It becomes as you choose.

The human heart is a vessel. Do you want to hold God in this vessel, or do you want to hold the devil in it? It becomes as you wish. For the person who wants to hold the devil, the devil goes inside him and reigns, making him do bad things, and when the devil goes into hell, he takes him along with him. But if one says, "I am lacking in deeds, but I want to receive God into my heart," God dwells in that heart and guides us. That is why Jesus is called the Shepherd. Those who need Jesus, I want you to believe in Jesus Christ as your Savior in this hour.

Dear fellow believers, Jesus came to this earth as a human

being for you; He received baptism from John the Baptist in order to bear your sins; and He was nailed to the Cross and died in order to receive the judgment for your sins in your place. By dying in your place, He brought everything to an end. He has dealt with your old self. Now He has risen again, become your Savior, and dwells in your hearts.

"In the old days, doing bad things was so pleasant to you, but now I will make it so that doing bad things is not so pleasant. I am the King of righteousness. I will use you in doing the right work, and I will bless you as My children, as My people. Even while you live on this earth, I will make you do the right work, and I will make you glad every time you do the right work." The One who does so is precisely Jesus. Now it depends on you. Do you want to receive Jesus, God, into your hearts? Do you need Jesus? Can you acknowledge that Jesus is your Savior? Do you believe with your hearts? If so, you are blessed people. I will close the message here. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 3 by Paul C. Jong

Obtain eternal life through the flesh and blood of Jesus

< John 6:32-40 >

"Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.' Then they said to Him, 'Lord, give us this bread always.' And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst. But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. And this is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.'"

People who wander in search of eternal life

Today we have read the word of John chapter 6. It is a word

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

you know well. But first I will talk a little about the world. Modern scientists know that the solar system will break down, and they are investigating whether there is a universe like this outside this solar system. The solar system means the sun and all the planets around it, and all those planets are affected by the sun. I have no hobby of wanting to know such fields deeply, so I will tell you only what I have heard, but they say that the sun has aged a great deal. When it ages, it keeps getting hotter and gives off more heat, and if the sun, which until now has sent light and heat in just the right measure, sends heat that is too hot, they say all the surrounding planets will burn up and be destroyed. So the scientists, saying that the earth will be destroyed and the solar system will be destroyed, are exploring whether there is any way to survive.

Recently, they say, a wealthy man paid an enormous sum in America and, though he was not a professional astronaut, rode a spacecraft and returned safely from space. Meanwhile, as the news has spread that scholars have discovered an exoplanet with an environment similar to that of the earth, people's interest is being drawn to it. What is the reason these people take such interest? They want to live a long, long time. It is the heart that wants to live long without dying, and that wants their descendants to live long without being destroyed when the world is destroyed. That is, they want to obtain eternal life. A person without money thinks about how to get a job, but people with a lot of money devote themselves to the work of making sure that, even if they themselves die, at least their descendants and families will never die. Mankind, expecting the existence of extraterrestrial life, keeps sending radio signals out toward space. In the case of Canada, they have even established an official body at the national level for the search for extraterrestrial signals and for communication. The news is that this body not

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

only sends radio signals into space and analyzes incoming signals, but also formally investigates UFO sighting reports and is attempting communication with aliens.

What is the reason for all these efforts? In the end, it is because they want to live long. Since it is the human condition to become sick and die however much money one has, they want to prolong life by any means. Not long ago a certain lady appeared on a broadcast and said, “These days, if somatic cells are extracted and cultured and then injected into the blood vessels, the cells travel through the body, treating diseases and preventing aging.” Because it is a procedure that has not yet been verified, it costs an enormous amount, but they say that those with money lie in the special rooms of famous hospitals and receive that injection, with the heart that says, “If only I could live even one month longer and become even a little younger.”

When asked whether it really works, they say they do not know whether it works, but one thing is certain: the soles of the feet start to tingle. The nerves of the whole body gather in the soles of the feet, so that even if the stomach, the liver, or the eyes are bad, there is a reaction there, and the story was that after receiving that injection, they felt a stimulus in the soles of their feet. In this way people earnestly desire a long life free of sickness. It means that if it would delay their growing old by even five months, they would gladly invest 100 million won.

What is it that human life is ultimately pursuing now? It is eternal life. It is living long without dying. They say that the very rich in America apply to the aerospace agency. They say that they put up money, asking to be given the qualification to go and live there when, in the future, a good planet that one could travel to by spacecraft and live on is discovered and a climate in which people can live is created. The space industry is at the point of carrying out projects not only with national funds but also with the money

the rich have put up. That is how much they want to live long. Do you not want to live like that, too? I know you all do.

"I am the bread of life"

But our Lord spoke. *"Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.'" (John 6:32–33)*. When the Lord blessed the food on the mountain and fed about five thousand people, the people saw that and followed Him. The Lord told them to seek the food of eternal life, and He said that the bread from heaven was not what Moses gave, but what God the Father gives from heaven to give life to the world. When the people said, *"Give us this bread always" (John 6:34)*, the Lord said, *"I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst" (John 6:35)*.

The Lord, pointing to Himself, said that He is the bread of life. In fact, He was saying that if we believe in the Lord, the Lord gives us His own flesh and blood. When we believe in the flesh and blood of the Lord, we obtain eternal life. Where is the secret of living forever? It lies in eating the flesh and blood of the Lord by faith. Then we never die, but obtain new life and live forever. Yet it says that even though the Lord spoke like this, the people saw the Lord and did not believe. People are truly strange beings.

Today all the people of this world hope to obtain eternal life, hope not to die, and hope to prolong life even if they must die; but where is the secret that really solves that problem? That secret lies in eating the flesh and blood of Jesus—the work in which Jesus came to this earth, received baptism from John and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

bore our sins in His own body, was hung on the Cross, and then rose from the dead and saved us. If we only believe that He bore our sins with the baptism He received from John and received the judgment in our place, and that He gave us the life of Jesus, the problem of human life is solved. The ultimate problem of all human life lies in obtaining eternal life and living forever. All religions are pursuing that, and science is pursuing that. But the way to unravel that thread lies in eating the flesh and blood of Jesus. If one knows this way, it is solved, but people do not believe this. And yet it is solved if one eats.

Let us think. If it were said that one could live forever by eating bread just once, how expensive would that bread be? If it were said that one would not die if only one bought and ate that bread, how much would that bread cost? If it were too expensive, people would be daunted and unable to speak, so would it be about five hundred million won? No. Even if one asked five trillion won, it would be cheap. When I looked at the list of the ten richest people in our country, the well-known chaebol chairmen had about two trillion won, there were quite a few with more than two trillion, and even the chairman said to have the most money was at the level of a few trillion. If the price is set at too high a unit, no one would come to buy. So this word the Lord spoke is right: “He who believes in Me will obtain eternal life and will never thirst; if one eats the bread which came down from heaven, he will obtain eternal life.”

If one could obtain eternal life on this earth by buying and eating one real piece of bread, people with some amount of money would gather that money by any means. But if life could be bought with money, it would be something that human beings can solve, too, so it would amount to not needing God. That is why our Lord speaks. He said that the will of the Father is this, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life.

Jesus is the bread of life

God the Father has given us human beings the bread by which we obtain eternal life. *"The bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world" (John 6:33)*. What is that bread? It is Jesus. Jesus is the bread of life. Then does one obtain eternal life by catching Jesus and eating Him? It will not do to catch and eat Him, nor will it do to boil and eat Him whole. We must believe that Jesus came to this earth and bore our sins by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, and we must also believe that, bearing the sin of the world, He went and was nailed to the Cross, rose again from the dead, became our eternal Savior, and gave us new life. When we believe in the flesh and blood of Jesus with our hearts, when we believe that He removed our sins and gave us new life, we obtain eternal life.

Mankind can obtain eternal life by believing in Jesus Christ. The task that mankind wants and wants, the wish to live forever, can be solved. When one knows and accepts that Jesus came to this earth, received baptism from John the Baptist and bore our sins, was hung on the Cross, and rose from the dead and saved us, it is eternal life that anyone—the person without money and the person with money, the person of little knowledge and the person of much knowledge—can obtain by faith. God has solved the problem of eternal life for us human beings like this. We human beings must believe in Jesus Christ. Rich people and scientists, too, must believe, rather than laboring in vain for nothing. By faith we must obtain eternal life, obtain the remission of sin, become the children of God, and receive every blessing.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Only the Creator gives eternal life and satisfaction

Do you not know it well even if I do not preach? I believe in the water and the blood, I have obtained eternal life—do you not all know it? Even so, you must hear it. In what is there power? There is power in the flesh and blood of Jesus. The power is in Jesus, and Jesus is God, and the Father of Jesus is also God. It is that God who gives us eternal life and gives us new life; there is no way for us human beings to live forever by ourselves. However hard one tries, it does not work by receiving a somatic cell injection costing ten million won a time and lying still. Its effect has not been proven, but when the rumor spreads that someone received it and his body became lighter, others also go and receive it and lie there. When asked in an interview whether it works, again they say the soles of their feet tingle. They think it is good if, after receiving that injection, only the soles of their feet tingle a little. It does not work by doing that. The core is the fact that Jesus is the bread of life.

If we eat His flesh and blood by believing in Jesus, we obtain eternal life. We receive the remission of sin, obtain eternal life, become the children of God, and drink the water that never lets us thirst again. This blessing is precisely eternal life. If we eat the flesh and blood of Jesus by faith, the problem of human life is solved. The problem of sin is solved, the problem of life is solved, the problem of eternal life is solved, and the problem of true happiness is solved. Mankind must believe in Jesus, who came by water and blood. Because people believe in Jesus without knowing this, Christianity has degenerated into a mere religion, and even scientists who say they believe in Jesus try to go to the moon and to the world of the Milky Way to find a planet with an environment like the earth’s. But however much they search, there is no place to live. Even if they search forever,

there is no place to live. The only place for people to live is this earth, and there are no aliens either. There have been no aliens since the creation of the world, and there will be none even if this earth continues forever from now on. What is the evidence of this? Jesus Christ was born on this earth in a human body, borrowing the body of Mary; He received baptism from John the Baptist on this earth; He died on the Cross on this earth; He rose from a tomb on this earth and ascended from this earth to the kingdom of heaven; and He said that He will come again to this earth. This is precisely the evidence. The work of God's salvation was accomplished on this earth. The One who fills the human heart, the One who fills our hearts with abundant satisfaction, is Jesus, and He is God, who made us.

We must meet the Creator. Because He made us, He can give satisfaction to our hearts. He gives us satisfaction, and He gives us eternal life. Apart from the One who made us, there is no one who can give us eternal life and no one who can give us satisfaction. We must know, believe in, and meet that Jesus. We must eat the bread of life by faith and obtain eternal life. Do you understand? Do you believe? I will close the message here. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 4 by Paul C. Jong

The bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world

< John 6:41-51 >

"The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, 'I am the bread which came down from heaven.' And they said, 'Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that He says, "I have come down from heaven"?' Jesus therefore answered and said to them, 'Do not murmur among yourselves. No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, "And they shall all be taught by God." Therefore everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to Me. Not that anyone has seen the Father, except He who is from God; He has seen the Father. Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me has everlasting life. I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world.'"

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The births of John the Baptist and Jesus

For today's message we have read the word of John chapter 6, as we did last time. Verse 41 says, *"The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, 'I am the bread which came down from heaven.'"* When Jesus said that He is the bread which came down from heaven, the Jews, who were acting as the masters of the nation of Israel, began to complain about Jesus. Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph? We know His parents, so how does He say that He is the bread which came down from heaven? The people of that time were dumbfounded. It was because the earthly father of Jesus was Joseph. Of course, Joseph was betrothed to Mary, and as we know, an angel came to Mary and told her that she would bear a son.

When Mary said, how can I bear a child when I do not know a man, the angel said that her relative Elizabeth had also conceived a child in her old age, and that she would conceive through the Holy Spirit. At first Mary was so dumbfounded that she did not know what to do, but when the angel spoke like that, she thought, "Ah, this is the work of God; God is about to do some work," and said, "I am the lowly maidservant; let it be to me according to the word of the Lord." It was that if the Lord had said so, she hoped it would be accomplished according to the word. And the angel said, "A son will be born from your body, and you shall call His name Jesus, for He is the One who will save His people from their sins," and then the angel disappeared.

Zacharias, the husband of Mary's relative Elizabeth, was a priest at that time. While he was in the temple carrying out the duty of burning incense, an angel appeared and said that a child would be born to his wife, and that he should call his name John. Zacharias was already an old man, so his mouth fell open and he

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

could not close it. The angel Gabriel appeared to Zacharias and also appeared to Mary, telling them the same plan of God. On the one hand God had said that John the Baptist would be born through Elizabeth, and when the angel told Mary about Elizabeth, it was about the sixth month since Elizabeth had conceived John the Baptist. The people of the village saw that the old woman was pregnant and whispered among themselves. Mary went straight to Elizabeth. When Elizabeth heard the voice of Mary's greeting, John the Baptist in Elizabeth's womb leaped for joy, and Elizabeth said, "Why is this, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?" When the two met, Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit and blessed Mary with a loud voice, and it also appears in the Bible that Elizabeth's husband Zacharias, while carrying out his duty in the temple, met an angel and heard the word that he would have a son and should name him John.

But the people knew Joseph. According to what has been handed down, Joseph's occupation was that of a carpenter. He was good at planing, good at hammering, and good at sawing, but then as now, a carpenter is not a person of high rank, but a person who makes a living by manual labor. So the people complained to Jesus, saying, "We know your father well, so how do you say that you came down from heaven? How do you say that you are the living bread which came down from heaven?"

"The bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world"

So the Lord spoke. *"Do not murmur among yourselves. No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up at the last day" (John 6:43–44)*. Because

Jesus knew all the hearts of the people, He was saying this word: do not murmur among yourselves; the Father draws people to Me, and all whom the Father draws believe in Me. And since He said that He will raise up at the last day the one who comes, it is the word that He will resurrect him and raise him up at the last day, and on the day this earth ends, He will take him away in the rapture, and after He has made a new heaven and a new earth in His kingdom, He will take him there.

In verse 45 He said, *"It is written in the prophets, 'And they shall all be taught by God.' Therefore everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to Me."* Here, for the writing of the prophets, He quoted the word of Isaiah 54:13 in the Old Testament. It is the word that all who heard and believed the promise of God in the Old Testament, that He would send the Messiah, come to Me. And He said that he who believes has everlasting life; that I am the bread of life; that your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness and are dead, but I am the living bread which came down from heaven, and if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and that the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world.

In a way, it is a one-sided word. The other side is not believing right now, but doubting, complaining, and opposing, and yet it is a word He declared one-sidedly. But Jesus is the One sent from God the Father, and through the work He did when He came to this earth, He gives people new life, and He gave His own body and became the bread of life that makes them obtain life. The person who cannot understand the word that He gives His flesh to make people obtain life simply cannot accept it. But we know.

We all believe that Jesus, upholding the will of the Father, came to this earth and was born by borrowing the body of Mary; that at the age of thirty He bore all the sins of this world in His

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

own body by receiving baptism from John the Baptist; and that He rose from the dead on the third day; and that through all this He received all the judgment for our sins, gave up His own life, and gave us life—and that He became the Savior to those who believe this. All of this had been prophesied in the Old Testament.

The salvation accomplished by the water and the blood

God said that He would send us the Messiah. He said, behold, a virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call His name Immanuel; and it was said that He would come to this earth as a man in whom there was indeed nothing at all to be desired. Physically He was like a stem that had come out of dry ground. When a sprout comes up in ground that has not been fertilized, the plant comes up thin and yellowish, but in ground with much fertilizer, it comes up thick and bears fruit well.

When Jesus was on this earth, He came in such a form in people's eyes. Why did He come like that? Would it not have been all right for Him to come as a gentlemanly, handsome man? If He had come like that, Jesus could not have done His ministry. The word is that because Jesus knew human beings well, He knew that the women would not leave Him alone, and so He came in such a form in order not to be hindered by that. When Jesus spoke words like these, the people did not understand, but He said that everyone whom the Father draws comes to Me, that I am the living bread which came down from heaven and I am the food of life for you, and that if you eat My flesh and blood, you obtain eternal life, obtain new life, and receive the remission of sin.

Jesus came to this earth and saved us from sin by the water and the blood. That He saved us by the water and the blood means that the things He did for us while He was on this earth were being born by borrowing the body of a woman, receiving baptism from John, and dying hung on the Cross. That Jesus received baptism from John is an extremely great matter. For He bore the sin of mankind. And He was nailed, poured out all the blood in His heart, and died. And just as He had promised that He would die and rise again on the third day, He rose on the third day. The guards had sealed the stone and were guarding the tomb securely. They guarded it airtight, for fear that if someone stole the body of Jesus and then said that He had risen, the nation would be in an uproar. But an angel from heaven came down and rolled away the stone that had blocked the tomb, and when Jesus rose, the light was so bright that the soldiers standing guard were terrified out of their wits and ran away, throwing down their spears and everything else. The work of God is something that human beings cannot withstand. In this way the Lord has saved us. He saved me, and He saved you. We believe.

When Jesus was hung on the Cross, the world became dark for three hours, and when He said that it was finished and died, the earth split and an earthquake occurred. Have you ever seen the movie called Ben-Hur? That movie portrays that scene well. The work He came to this earth to do was completed like that. The Lord entered the tomb, rose on the third day, testified for forty days that He was alive, and then ascended before the eyes of the disciples—and this is real. The word that it was finished means that He ended the work of saving mankind from sin, for which He came to this earth, by receiving baptism from John and bearing sin in His own body and by giving up His own body on the Cross and being sacrificed. God has finished all the work of saving us, and has arranged it so that we obtain salvation if we

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

only believe. That is why we have obtained salvation by faith. Do you believe? This is the gospel. Our believing in the work the Lord did when He came to this earth—this is the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Lord accomplished the gospel of the water and the Spirit and gave us new life, gave us the remission of sin, and gave us eternal life.

The gospel of the water and the Spirit, which Satan the devil tried to corrupt

But Satan the devil was shocked almost to the point of fainting. From the time Jesus received baptism from John, Satan the devil entered people's hearts and incited them, thinking that if only he could somehow seize and kill Jesus, he would win. But Jesus did not say a single word of resistance even as He was nailed to the Cross. Jesus was truly silent like a sheep before its shearers, and though He may have cried out in pain when the nails were driven in, He quietly accomplished all His will, said that He had finished all the work of saving us, and died. And when He rose on the third day and ascended, it was an uproar for Satan the devil. I thought I had won, but I have failed.

Satan the devil challenged God twice. Once was when he enticed man in the Garden of Eden and made him break the command of God, and another time was when Jesus came to this earth—he thought that if he killed Him, it would be over. But he did not know that Jesus had borne the sin of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist and had died hung on the Cross. When the Lord said that it was finished and died, even though Jesus was no longer on this earth, people came to receive the remission of sin if only they believed this fact. He said, I have been deceived; I have been had.

From that time, Satan the devil began to seize and kill the people who believed in Jesus, just as he had persecuted Jesus. In the days of the early Church, he seized and killed them, persecuted them, trampled them down, and took away everything—their jobs, their homes, and their property. Even so, the gospel continued to be spread. Rome completely took control of Israel, stationed troops there, collected taxes, and oppressed the people. From the time Jesus received baptism from John and had the sin of the world transferred to Him, shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment for sin, said that it was finished, and died, the people who believed in Jesus began to preach this gospel: "Jesus is not dead but has risen; Jesus is the Savior of us mankind; He received baptism from John and bore the sin of mankind, died hung on the Cross, rose from the dead, and is now seated at the right hand of God; He is alive; if you believe in the work He did, you receive the remission of sin, obtain eternal life, become a child of God, and will enter the kingdom of God in the future." Because the saints had the Holy Spirit in their hearts, they could not keep their mouths shut, and they spread this gospel of the water and the Spirit.

When the gospel of the water and the Spirit was spread, Satan the devil made people seize and kill the believers, and Rome sold the people of Israel as slaves to other countries. They put a price on each head—so much for a healthy person, so much for the old and weak—and sold them off. When Rome completely tore down the temple of Jerusalem and reduced it to ashes, the people who fled to various countries so as not to be caught and came to live scattered are called the Diaspora. The Book of Hebrews was written for those scattered Hebrews. Some say that the one who wrote Hebrews was Paul, others that it was Barnabas, but what is clear is that a servant of God wrote it.

"However much persecution there may be, do not lose your

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

faith, but endure by faith; if you endure, the kingdom of glory is waiting." So in Hebrews it comes out that Jesus is the High Priest, that He is the Son of God, and that He is the Savior, and it encourages the readers with the word about the people of faith, such as that Moses refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter and chose rather to suffer affliction with the people of God than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin. In this way the gospel continued to spread even in the midst of persecution, and it was spread not only in Jerusalem but in all the surrounding countries as well. To put it simply, missions had taken place.

The Nicene Creed, which corrupted the gospel of the water and the Spirit

Meanwhile, the time for Rome to fall drew near, disputes arose in the nation, and it split into the Eastern and Western Roman Empires and they fought each other. At that time a general named Constantine had a dream at night before a battle, and the dream in which a cross appeared shining a bright light and told him to go out and fight holding up the cross was very vivid. So he drew a cross on a great banner, put crosses on all the shields as well, went out and fought, and won. Having won, he had to unite the Eastern and Western Roman Empires and lead the people, but the Romans of that time lived without lifting a finger. Whenever they made war, they captured slaves and worked them, and lived in extravagance on the plunder, so they lived in a pit of sin with no ethics or morality at all.

He had become the ruler, but he could not lead these people. But this ruler thought of one clever idea. He took note of the fact that the Christians had a clear sense of ethics and lived rightly without doing harm to others. So he thought that if he adopted

as the state religion the religion believed by the people they had been persecuting and killing, and taught only as they believed, he could set right the disorderly and dissolute lives of the citizens. So he issued orders to take Christians as daughters-in-law, to take them as sons-in-law, to treat them favorably and not persecute them, and he officially recognized Christianity. This is the Edict of Milan. This became the stepping stone for making Christianity the state religion of the Roman nation. With this, the persecution of Christianity was officially ended. But this Edict of Milan was an attempt to make use of Christianity.

And because the Romans did not know Christianity, in the year 325 they convened a council at Nicaea and had people who had not been born again draw up something like a declaration of faith. That is the Nicene Creed. The Apostles' Creed we have today was not drawn up at this council, but it is a creed that was polished and handed down in the same way in the Roman church of that age. At first the gospel of the water and the Spirit would have gone in. To preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, one has to record everything from the prophecies of the Old Testament to their fulfillment, so it cannot be simple. At first it would certainly have been adopted. But they trimmed it and trimmed it. The Romans were people who believed in gods like the god Zeus and the god Hercules and had opposed Jesus, so would they believe something complicated? They made simple articles of faith and passed anyone unconditionally as long as he memorized them, and they gave Christian believers special favorable treatment, such as employment as government officials.

When we look at the Apostles' Creed, after "conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Virgin Mary," what should go in is that Jesus received baptism from John, bore our sins, and was hung on the Cross and received the judgment for all sins, but

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

they took all of that out, and only "suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, died"—only that He was crucified and died—became the core doctrine. The Son of God came to this earth, was crucified and died, and saved mankind; if you believe only this, you are unconditionally a Christian believer—they made a syncretic religion like this and had people believe it, and that religion in the end became the state religion of the Roman Empire. What medieval Rome established in that way, making Christianity the state religion and building on the contents adopted at several councils, is Catholicism, Roman Catholicism. The word Catholic means the universal church, the church acknowledged in the world. What was established by saying that there is no need for Jesus to have received baptism from John, no need for the prophecies of the Old Testament, and that one need believe only the one thing, that He saved us by shedding His blood on the Cross, is Roman Catholicism.

The Reformation and the gospel that believes only in the Cross

Catholicism, with the doctrine that one is saved if one believes only in the Cross, governed nations and spread its religion and took hold of all of Europe. But since they believed only in the blood of the Cross, does sin not remain unremoved? Because sin was not removed, unspeakable corruption arose, starting with the Roman Catholic clergy. Because they emphasized and believed only the blood of the Cross, the sin in their hearts was not removed, and they came to commit sins more wicked than those committed by the people of the world. Seeing that corruption, people of conviction within Catholicism rose up, saying that there must be a reformation of religion.

People like Martin Luther, John Calvin, John Knox, and Zwingli pointed out the errors of Catholicism, put them in writing, distributed leaflets, and opposed it, and after being persecuted, came out of Catholicism and banded together; that is today's Christianity, Reformed Christianity. It is called Protestantism, and '-ism' means a system of thought. It goes forward as reformism. But even as they came out, they did not know what it was that had caused the corruption. If one believes only in the Cross, he can become a Christian and can receive the church's baptism, but the sin in his heart is not removed and the Holy Spirit is not in his heart. Without the Holy Spirit, no one can be changed. If they had pointed out that the gospel that believes only in the Cross was wrong, and had put back into the contents of the faith, as in the days of the early Church, that Jesus removed all our sins with His flesh and blood, and preached it, then Rome would have changed, Catholicism would have changed, the whole world would have changed, and all would have been saved.

But because Satan the devil very cunningly took out all the core and highlighted only the Cross, Catholicism went that way, and today's Protestantism, too, believes only in the Cross, and so it has become completely muddied. That is why there are so very many anti-Christians. It is because Christian believers are not changed. If one is not changed himself, how can he change the world? If they preach the gospel a great deal, many church members may come to be, but they cannot live holy lives. That is why Christianity today has lost its strength like this, why the people of the world dislike Christianity, and why missions do not succeed however hard they try. By believing only in the blood of the Cross, one can never be changed. The Lord saved us with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

There is something that pastors lament. It is the lament that

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

asks why people do not change when so much of the word has been preached; that when someone becomes a deacon he should change more than when he was a layman, and when a deacon becomes an elder he should live a changed life, so why does he not change? Then if one asks, "Pastor, have you changed?"—the pastor does not change either. It is because Christianity has been turned into a religion, so that they say that one is sanctified in the end if only one prays prayers of repentance. Among the Reformers, the one who explained the Bible best theologically and academically is John Calvin. People respect Calvin, saying that there is no one on this earth who has done better than Calvin's commentaries on the Bible. Calvin said things that are right and also things that are wrong, and one of the wrong things is the doctrine of gradual sanctification, which claims that a person who has believed in Jesus is changed gradually after that. Calvin's doctrine of sanctification is that one changes as one gets older, and at death one is completely changed and becomes a sinless person and goes to the kingdom of God.

But why does one not change even after believing for ten years, and why does one not change even after believing for twenty years? The reason there is no change is that it is not the gospel of the truth. Calvin, too, believed only in the Cross. When you look at Calvin's books, the gospel of the water and the Spirit does not appear in even a single line. I say this forcefully. Gradual sanctification is an absurd story. And among the things Calvin said is the doctrine of election, that some were chosen and some were not. I, too, acknowledge that He chose us in Christ before the foundation of the world. But I say openly, in my books, that the claim that before we were born, before we did anything, some are those one-sidedly loved by God and some are those one-sidedly hated, is wrong. Saying such things is not an easy matter. If one says it without grounds, it is a disaster.

We are all people like Jacob

God spoke of Esau and Jacob. Jacob was a cunning man, and Esau was an honest, brave, strong, and fine man. But when it comes to which of these two God loved, it is the word that He loves people like Jacob. Why is that? It is because all human beings are people like Jacob. Even if a person looks fine and strong, when you get to know him, his weak points are not just one or two. There are many people who are strong but whose hearts are like a child's, whose outside looks fine but whose inside is a wreck, so that they do not know how to look after even their own wives and families. When you get to know them, all are lacking people like Jacob. Human beings, if they have some strength, put themselves forward, saying, "I am this kind of person," but when you examine everything that is hidden, all human beings are the same. There is none righteous.

If someone tells me, "Pastor, you are fine," I say, what is fine about me? I am a rag. I do construction, and my construction method is the rag method. Others cut things off neatly as if cutting with a knife, but I like the rag method. It is because a rag is art. However worn-out the pieces may be, when you join them together, they are extremely beautiful and fine. I do construction like that, too. I am a person who belongs to the Jacob type. When you get to know yourselves, you are all of the Jacob type, too. Are you really flawless? Can you expose yourself toward heaven without a speck of shame? How many things we have that we hide, that we conceal, that we are ashamed of! Knowing all of that, Jesus received all sins passed on to Him when He received baptism from John. Is there no shame inside that pretending to be great? Originally, inside the pretending to be great, there is bound to be much shame as well.

That the Lord said, "Jacob I have loved, but Esau I have

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

hated," is the word that we must not pretend to be great before God and charge at Him with our own rightness, saying, "I am this kind of person." Charging at God while pretending to be great is something only the fallen angels do. It is the word that we should always know that we are lacking, humbly bow our heads before God, know how to bow our heads to people as well, know how to receive help, help one another, and live sharing our hearts and sharing our thoughts. One person's thoughts are not perfect. We must also ask the other person's opinion, saying, "I think this way; what do you think?" and know how to say, "You seem much better than I."

When I was in seminary, I said that concerning Calvin I was the best in this field, but when you come down to it, how many things must there be that I do not know? We were born on this earth, and when you come down to it, we are all Jacob; there is no Esau at all. Because a person mistakes himself for Esau and makes his claims before God, that claim comes to be hated. Doing one's work well is not a fault. Making good use of the gifts one has received is doing very well. But seen from another side, one must acknowledge that I am a person who has many lacks. All of us have strengths, but we have even more weaknesses. If the strengths are ten, the weaknesses are more than a thousand. It is only because they are hidden, only because they are not exposed—there are tremendously many.

So in the end we belong to the Jacob type. We need only acknowledge that we are Jacob, confess it before God just as it is, and, when it is said that the Lord bore our sins when He received baptism from John, say, "Thank You." "*Thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15)*. That *"all"* contains the meaning of everything, the whole. He took away all of your sins and received them all passed on to Him. Even the pretending to be great, even the deceiving—all of it. So

we must not insist on our own style. We should make good use of the gifts God has given, but since the people around us help us, we should say, "We all did it together. Thank you." Only this much we can say: that God gave me these gifts, and I have been faithful in the work He entrusted to me.

In our country there is a person named Park Tae-jun, who made steel, who built POSCO. That man received the order of President Park Chung-hee, and when told to build a steel mill in a country that had no knowledge and nothing at all, he said, "Yes, I will build it," went to Japan to ask, searched every possible place, and built it. That our country has automobiles and that its industry has developed like this is because POSCO exists. People make automobiles and say they made them, but can they make them if steel plates are not supplied? If they bought them and made them, the unit cost would not work out. It is possible because POSCO exists. I think that man is truly admirable. Having done everything himself, after President Park Chung-hee passed away, he went to the President's grave and, retiring, said, "I have carried out all of Your Excellency's orders. No problems. The end." He ended it there and retired. Saying that he had accumulated no money, he stepped down cleanly, and his descendants also live modestly. Because that man did not take money while running POSCO, and because he did not let his subordinates take money either, POSCO became a company recognized in the world. If he had pocketed money midway because things were going well, it would not have become a world-class company. Such a thing one can boast of. But if we examined every side of that man, too, he would be full of lacks. There is no perfect person. Is there, or is there not? There is not.

We must all acknowledge our own lacks before God. And we need only believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The doctrine of election, that some were chosen and some were

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

not chosen, is wrong. The one who pretends to be great before God is not chosen, and the person who knows his own lacks and believes that God has removed all my sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit is chosen. God loved all people. But what God hates most is pretending to be great, showing bravado, and charging at Him.

There is a stone tower called an obelisk, built when Egypt was doing well. How did they make something so pointed and so big? It is a tower made from a single block of stone by cutting away a cliff, not stacked up from split pieces like our country's three-story stone pagodas. God hates that pride that thrusts up at heaven, saying that they are the best. Egypt opposed the LORD God and Moses, and all its soldiers sank in the water and died, and after that it was downhill. Later, other countries invaded, pulled out those stone towers, and set them up in France and here and there in their own countries. Thrusting up at God—that is called a challenge. Did it not explode after human beings gave it the name Challenger, in the sense that they would make a rocket and take up the challenge of conquering the moon or Mars? One must be careful even in giving names. "In heaven above and on earth below, I alone am honored"—Siddhartha of Buddhism said that in heaven and on earth there is no one but himself, and that is precisely the word of the devil, who follows the fallen angel, and it is hell. God hates such a person and loves all people like Jacob—this is the truth. Calvin spoke that way, but did Calvin know the gospel of the water and the Spirit? He did not.

The faith that eats the flesh and blood of the Son of Man

In today's passage He said that it is *"My flesh."* Did Jesus

save us only by dying on the Cross? No. He made preparation so that He could die on the Cross. Because He bore the sin of mankind by receiving baptism from John, He died hung on the Cross. That is why He saved us by the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is God, and just as God directed, Jesus Christ came to this earth, bore our sins, and saved us by His death on the Cross and His resurrection. So these three, the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit, are one; they are the work God did, and they are the salvation God has given us. It is said that Jesus saved us by the water and the blood, by His own flesh and blood, so why do people insist only on the blood of the Cross? Is that all right? They do so because they do not know. In the philosophies and learning of the world, the words of scholars all change. Are the words of theologians the word of God? Are the words of the pope the word of God? The Bible is the word of God. If the Bible says so, then it is so. Evangelists and preachers must preach on the basis of the written word. The gospel has not changed, and it remains the gospel of the water and the Spirit just as it is, so there is no need to change it.

With what Satan the devil had corrupted of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished and gave to the disciples, the thousand years of the Middle Ages were the Dark Ages. They seized people and, if they did not listen to them, tortured them by pulling out their tongues, gouging out their eyes, and driving bamboo under their fingernails, and if they said they would do everything as told, they tied them to a stake and burned them to death. The people who died like that in the Middle Ages must be far more than those who died in wars. Christianity today must abandon insisting only on the Cross and return again to the Bible. What is reform? It is the character, 'to correct.' We must go back and believe as the Bible says.

Let us read verses 52 and 53: *"The Jews therefore quarreled*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

among themselves, saying, 'How can this Man give us His flesh to eat?' Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you.'" What does eating the flesh of the Son of Man mean? It means that we must eat by faith the fact that Jesus came to this earth in the flesh and bore our sins by receiving baptism from John the Baptist. Since He said that unless one eats the flesh of the Son of Man and drinks His blood, one has no life, it means that we must eat both by faith.

Do you believe that Jesus bore all sins once and for all by receiving baptism from John? We must believe it with our hearts and eat it. As for the blood, do you believe that He received the judgment for our sins, the judgment of our lives? We must eat this by faith. In verse 54 He said, *"Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day."* Jesus speaks of His flesh and blood separately. That Jesus put on a human body was in order to bear, by receiving baptism from John, all the sins we commit from the time we are born; that He shed His blood was, since the life of the flesh is in the blood, in order to give His own life and give us new life; and that He suffered hung on the Cross was His receiving the judgment for our sins.

"He was bruised for our iniquities" (Isaiah 53:5). Isaiah chapter 53 records it that way. We must believe, following just as it is the word of God, which does not change by so much as one jot or one tittle. If I did not know, is it not enough to say, "Ah, I did not know, but you have realized it; then I believe it, too"? If one says, "That is something you know, so I am offended and will not believe it; I am a better person than you, so why do you realize it and tell me?" he becomes Esau. We must help one another, saying, "Physically you may seem inferior to me, but spiritually you are far better than I; I respect

you; give me what you have realized."

Let us read verse 55: *"For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed."* As we live the life of faith, every time our lacks are exposed, when a sin we want to hide is exposed, does not our heart become dark, and do not others point it out? At that time, if we acknowledge that lack and confirm, "Did Jesus not take away this sin, too, when He received baptism?" then it becomes food. Just as eating something becomes food, it becomes food when we say, "I am so lacking, and even after believing I am so lacking, but the Lord has taken away this sin, too. Thank You." *"My blood is drink indeed."* Since the Lord shed His blood on the Cross for us, that the Lord received the judgment in our place, just as it says, *"He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities" (Isaiah 53:5)*, brings true refreshment to our hearts. "Thank You, Jesus, who received the judgment in my place; I praise our Lord, who saved me so that I would not receive the judgment." In this way it becomes food for both our spirit and our flesh. The flesh and blood of Jesus are the true food of you and me. They become the food of salvation, the food of life, and the food of daily living. Even as we go on living, they are always the food of life to us. Is that not so? It is so. Without the faith that believes in the flesh and blood of Jesus, we cannot go on living. Because even after believing we are those who commit sin again, Jesus gave His own flesh and blood and saved us.

Let us read verse 56: *"He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him."* If we believe, we abide. If we believe, we become the children of God; if we believe, the Holy Spirit dwells in our hearts; and if we believe, we abide in the Lord and the Lord abides in us. We communicate by faith. Is it necessary to bring and offer a lot of offerings, or to have titles like deacon, elder, or senior deaconess? None of it is necessary.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The Lord's abiding in us comes about by faith. Believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the same as the word, *"The just shall live by faith."*

Has not the religion of those who did much evil during the thousand years of the Middle Ages, living without believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, already proved it? I am not saying this in order to disparage them. Believing only in the Cross, however hard one struggles to live, praying, praying on mountains, crawling up stairs on one's knees, and practicing ascetic disciplines of every kind, the heart does not become clean and the Holy Spirit does not come. Only when one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit does the Holy Spirit come into the heart, and one receives the remission of sin and obtains eternal life. To abide in the Lord, one need only believe. Believing is believing what the Lord has accomplished.

Eating the flesh and blood of Jesus is believing in the work in which Jesus came in the flesh, bore sin in the flesh, gave up the flesh and received the judgment, and then rose from the dead and saved us. That work is recorded in the Bible. In verse 57 He said, *"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me."* Just as Jesus lives because of the Father, if we, too, eat by faith the work Jesus did, we live because of Jesus. It is not catching and eating Jesus; we must eat by faith, with the heart, the work He did when He came to this earth in the flesh. So we eat with the spirit, with the heart.

Christianity today must be reformed

Dear fellow believers, Christianity today must change. It must be changed and must be reformed. Because people could

not escape from this error, the Middle Ages were the Dark Ages. The killing, in a horrible manner, of those who did not listen or who looked like heretics continued not for ten years, not for a hundred years, but for a thousand years. It came to be so because they believed only in the gospel of the Cross. If one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, it does not come to be so. Is the word not so? If this is wrong, must a reformation not arise again? Of course it must arise. They must tear off all the signboards of pastor, elder, moderator of the general assembly, and the like, return to being laymen, and believe again. Seen before God, are they not deceivers rather than great people? Nevertheless, the word is that they, too, did so because they did not know. It says that just as through one man's sin all became sinners, so through one Man's obedience all will become righteous. Through the one man Adam's sin, all became sinners, but the one Jesus Christ obeyed the will of the Father, bore our sins with the baptism He received from John, was hung on the Cross, rose from the dead, and saved us, and so through His obedience we have become righteous by faith.

But one man, Constantine the Great, completely corrupted the faith of the early Church, the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By giving water, giving bread in famine, and giving houses, he corrupted it completely. The people of that time went to the kingdom of heaven by faith, but in later ages, through the doctrine of that creed, the Christian faith turned into a religion. Religion and faith are different. Faith is looking up to the Lord, holding on to the work the Lord did, and receiving the remission of sin by faith, while religion is what I make in my imagination.

Christianity must change. However much you may hand down your faith for the sake of the next generation, if you hand down a faith that believes only in the gospel of the Cross, your descendants will be corrupted and completely ruined. Just as it

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

does not work for you, it will not work for them either. Why pass on the burden of sin to your descendants? I hope you will bring it to an end in your generation. Now the time has come to end it. The time for the Lord to come is at hand, and the time for the Antichrist to come is at hand. I put this into writing, present the grounds, and preach it quietly. I will continue to preach it quietly. The person who accepts this gospel will be saved, and the person who does not accept it will be judged before God. The Lord has saved you and me by the water and the Spirit.

We have become those who believe in the gospel that Jesus made for us, which the apostles and the saints believed in the days of the early Church. Do you believe? Thank you. How fortunate it is! Paul, who became the apostle to the Gentiles in the New Testament age, was one who was very well versed in the Old Testament Scriptures. Likewise, I, too, am very well versed in the theology that believes only in the gospel of the Cross. It is a little awkward to say such things about myself, but when I hear someone saying something, I know what system of thought that person is speaking of. Though I am a lacking person with a bad temper, because I am a person who says that what is right is right, I know that God has used me and brought me this far. I will go on from here as well.

I do not want to do harm to people. What I am saying is, receive a change in your hearts. What I am saying is that you cannot be changed with only the gospel of the Cross, which you have believed until now, and that since the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the true gospel, you should believe in that gospel. The Lord speaks to us. If you eat My flesh and My blood, you abide in Me, and I abide in you. This is the word of the Lord. I will close the message here. ✉

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

CHAPTER

7

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 7 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit

In John 7:1–9, Jesus was in the state of having received baptism from John the Baptist and of having borne all the sins of the world in His own body by having the sin of the world transferred to Him. If the heart of Jesus at that time were to be expressed, what would it be?

In John 7:1–9, Jesus was already in the state of having borne all the sins of the world in His own body with the baptism He received from John. Now, bearing that sin, He had to be judged on the Cross. Even while knowing that He would be put to death, Jesus was waiting for the time appointed by the Father and preaching the word of salvation.

If the heart of Jesus were to be expressed in a word, it could be said that it was a resolute heart, full of love and obedience to save sinners to the end even in the face of death.

1. Jesus knew about the moves to kill Him

"After these things Jesus walked in Galilee; for He did not want to walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill Him" (John 7:1).

Jesus knew the fact that the Jews were seeking to kill Him. Furthermore, He knew what kind of death He would suffer, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

even that this death would be the judgment of the Cross in place of the sin of mankind.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. He had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He was going on to the Cross. Therefore, to Jesus, death was not a failure that struck unexpectedly, but a mission that He had to accomplish without fail in order to save sinners.

However, because the time for Him to be crucified had not yet come, He did not go up to Judea but stayed in Galilee. It was not that He avoided His mission out of fear of death; He waited in order to accomplish salvation precisely at the time appointed by the Father.

2. Even His brothers in the flesh did not believe in Jesus

The brothers of Jesus told Him to go up to Jerusalem for the Feast of Tabernacles and show Himself to the world. They thought that if Jesus made the works He was doing public to the world, He could gain fame and recognition.

"For even His brothers did not believe in Him" (John 7:5).

Jesus was misunderstood and disbelieved by the people He had come to save. Even His closest brothers in the flesh did not know who Jesus was or what He was trying to accomplish.

At this time there must have been deep loneliness and sorrow in the heart of Jesus. He was going to die bearing all the sin of mankind, but even the people close to Him did not know that love and the will of salvation.

However, Jesus did not stop the work of salvation just because He was not understood by people. Even though His brothers did not believe, He bore their sins as well, and even

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

though the world rejected Him, He went on to the Cross in order to save the world.

3. He waited not for the time of men but for the time of the Father

"Then Jesus said to them, 'My time has not yet come, but your time is always ready.'" (John 7:6).

The brothers of Jesus thought it was a good opportunity for Him to show Himself to the world, but Jesus did not move according to people's expectations and plans. All the work of Jesus was accomplished according to the plan of salvation of God the Father and the time He had appointed.

The situation in the text	The heart and will of Jesus
The Jews sought to kill Him	The resoluteness to complete His mission even while knowing the death of the Cross
His brothers told Him to show Himself to the world	He sought not human fame but the will of the Father
Even His brothers did not believe	The love to save them even amid misunderstanding and unbelief
He said, *"My time has not yet come"*	The obedience of waiting for the time appointed by the Father
The world hated Jesus	The righteousness of clearly exposing sin and preaching the truth to the end
He stayed in Galilee	Not avoiding His mission, but preparing for the time of salvation

Jesus did not make it His purpose to make Himself famous in the world. Nor did He come to be welcomed by people and become a king. He came to bear the sins of sinners and to save them by dying on the Cross.

4. He was hated because He testified of the evil of the world

"The world cannot hate you, but it hates Me because I testify of it that its works are evil" (John 7:7).

Jesus did not leave the iniquity of the world as it was. He exposed people's hypocrisy, self-righteousness, and unbelief, and He spoke of the fact that before God everyone is a sinner and must be saved.

The world hated the light that exposed its sins. Nevertheless, Jesus would not hide the truth in order to avoid people's hatred. He called sin sin, and He testified that He is the bread of life and that one must believe in His flesh and blood in order to obtain eternal life.

In the heart of Jesus there were together a righteous sorrow over sin and a deep love for sinners. He hated the evil of the world, but He wanted to save sinners. So He went toward the Cross bearing even the sins of the people who hated Him.

5. Jesus came to give His body to us

From the moment Jesus received baptism from John, the death of the Cross became the inevitable path of the work of salvation.

1. Jesus came to this earth in the flesh.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

2. With the baptism He received from John, He bore all the sins of the world in His own body.

3. Bearing the sin He had taken upon Himself, He taught the word of salvation throughout His public ministry.

4. At the time appointed by the Father, He went on to the Cross.

5. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of all the sins of the world in our place.

6. He rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

The Jesus shown in John chapter 7 knew all these things. Even while knowing that He would be arrested, mocked, scourged, and put to death on the Cross, He kept on teaching the word so that sinners would believe and be saved.

In the heart of Jesus there was the heaviness of knowing the pain of death, and there was the loneliness of no one fully understanding His will. At the same time, there was the obedience to accomplish the will of the Father without fail and the unchanging love to save sinners to the end.

6. If the heart of Jesus were to be expressed

If the heart of Jesus is expressed in a meditative way, holding to the meaning of the text, it is as follows.

“I have already borne all your sins in My body with the baptism I received from John. Now, bearing this sin, I must receive on the Cross, in your place, the judgment that you were to receive. Even My brothers do not believe in Me, and the world hates Me, but I will go the way of salvation to the end, according to the time appointed by the Father. Even if people misunderstand Me and seek to kill Me, I will preach the truth,

and I will give My body and blood to save you from sin and death."

In the end, the heart of Jesus shown in John 7:1–9 is resoluteness, loneliness, patience, obedience, and sacrificial love toward sinners.

Because Jesus was already bearing the sin of the world, He knew that the Cross was waiting for Him. Yet He was not shaken by people's unbelief and hatred; He waited for the time of the Father and continued the work of salvation. Through this obedience of Jesus, we have believed in the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and have been saved from all sin and judgment and obtained eternal life.

In John 7:14–24, does not the fact that Jesus could converse with the teachers of the law even though He had not learned letters on this earth show that His essence is God?

Yes, it does. John 7:14–24 reveals the divinity of Jesus through the fact that, although He had not received the education in the law of that time, He knew and taught the Scriptures and the law perfectly.

Jesus is not One who came to know the word of God by learning from the teachers of the law. Because Jesus Himself is the Word who was from the beginning and the God who gave the law, He knew not only the letter of the law but also its purpose and its perfect meaning.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

1. *"How does this Man know letters, having never studied?"*

"Now about the middle of the feast Jesus went up into the temple and taught. And the Jews marveled, saying, 'How does this Man know letters, having never studied?'" (John 7:14–15).

The words *"How does this Man know letters, having never studied?"* do not mean that Jesus did not know letters at all; they mean that He had not received the formal education that the teachers of the law of that time received. Jesus was not One who had entered as a disciple of a famous scholar of the law and learned the law and the traditions.

Nevertheless, Jesus went up into the temple and taught the Scriptures and the law. Because that teaching was so accurate and authoritative, the Jews marveled.

Jesus did not merely converse with the teachers of the law on the same level; He revealed the will of God that the teachers of the law did not know and corrected their wrong interpretations. This shows the fact that Jesus is not One who learned knowledge from men, but God, the source of the word.

2. Jesus is God who is the Word, who was from the beginning

The Gospel of John testifies clearly to the essence of Jesus from the very beginning.

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made" (John 1:1–3).

The law, too, is the word of God, and Jesus is God who is

that Word. Therefore Jesus is not a student encountering and learning the law for the first time, but God, who gave the law and knows its true meaning.

Jesus came to this earth in a human body, but in essence He is God the Creator. He knew every language, all wisdom, and the meaning of every word of the Scriptures. It was not that men had to teach Jesus the law; it was Jesus who taught men the true meaning of the law.

3. *"My doctrine is not Mine, but His who sent Me"*

"Jesus answered them and said, 'My doctrine is not Mine, but His who sent Me. If anyone wills to do His will, he shall know concerning the doctrine, whether it is from God or whether I speak on My own authority.'" (John 7:16–17).

That Jesus said, *"My doctrine is not Mine,"* does not mean that He had no knowledge or authority. It means that Jesus, as the Son sent by the Father, did not make up His own thoughts and speak them separately, but conveyed the will and the word of God the Father just as they were.

God the Father and God the Son, Jesus, do not stand in opposition to each other. God the Father planned to save sinners, and Jesus came to this earth according to that will, spoke, and did the work of salvation.

Therefore, that the teaching of Jesus came from God shows the following two things together.

— Jesus is the Son of God, sent by God the Father.

— In the word of Jesus there is the truth and the authority of God Himself.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

4. Jesus sought not His own glory but the glory of the Father

"He who speaks from himself seeks his own glory; but He who seeks the glory of the One who sent Him is true, and no unrighteousness is in Him" (John 7:18).

A false teacher speaks in order to exalt his own knowledge and name. But Jesus did not teach in order to gain human fame for Himself. He spoke in order to accomplish the will of God the Father and to save sinners.

The reason the teaching of Jesus is true is that there is no unrighteousness in Him. Jesus is the sinless Son of God, and He obeyed the will of the Father completely.

At this time, Jesus was already bearing all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He was going on to the Cross. The purpose for which He taught the word to people was also not to exalt Himself, but so that they would believe in Jesus and obtain the remission of sin and eternal life.

5. The teachers of the law knew the letter of the law but did not practice its intent

"Did not Moses give you the law, yet none of you keeps the law? Why do you seek to kill Me?" (John 7:19).

The teachers of the law and the Jewish leaders studied the law and taught others. But in their hearts there was hatred that sought to kill Jesus. They knew much of the letter of the law, but they did not do the righteousness and the love that the law required.

Jesus knew even the murder that was in their hearts. In the

fact that He knew the thoughts people did not show outwardly, the divinity of Jesus is revealed as well. The people denied it, saying, *"Who is seeking to kill You?"* but Jesus already knew their hearts and what was going to happen.

6. Jesus revealed the true meaning of the law

To the Jews who criticized Him for having healed on the Sabbath the man who had been sick for thirty-eight years, Jesus explained, taking circumcision as an example.

"If a man receives circumcision on the Sabbath, so that the law of Moses should not be broken, are you angry with Me because I made a man completely well on the Sabbath? Do not judge according to appearance, but judge with righteous judgment" (John 7:23–24).

The Jews held on only to the letter of the Sabbath and judged Jesus as a man who had broken the law. But Jesus exposed their contradiction of condemning His healing of a man's whole body while they themselves performed circumcision even on the Sabbath.

Jesus knew that the purpose of the law was not to kill people, but to make them realize sin and to make them look to the Savior who was to come. Making the sick man whole was not a matter of tearing down the law, but a matter of revealing the will of God, who saves life.

What the teachers of the law were like	What Jesus was like
They learned the law from men	He is God who is the Word, who gave the law

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

What the teachers of the law were like	What Jesus was like
They emphasized the letter of the law and the traditions	He knew the true meaning of the law and the righteousness of God
They judged people by appearance	He knew the hearts and the innermost being of people
They condemned the healing on the Sabbath	He healed the whole body of the sick man and saved his life
While seeking to kill Jesus, they considered themselves righteous	Though without sin, He gave Himself in order to save sinners
They sought their own righteousness and glory	He sought the glory of God the Father and the salvation of sinners

7. The wisdom of Jesus was revealed from His childhood

Even when Jesus was twelve years old, He conversed with the teachers in the temple.

"Now so it was that after three days they found Him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both listening to them and asking them questions. And all who heard Him were astonished at His understanding and answers" (Luke 2:46–47).

In the course of His growth Jesus grew as true man, but His essence was God. That is why, from His childhood, He could understand the Scriptures perfectly and converse with the teachers.

8. The divinity of Jesus and the work of salvation

The divinity of Jesus shown in John 7:14–24 does not end simply with His having much knowledge. Jesus not only knows the word of God perfectly, but He is God, who accomplished the salvation of mankind according to that word.

1. God who is the Word came to this earth in the flesh.

2. With the baptism He received from John, He bore all the sins of the world in His own body.

3. He taught the righteousness of God and the word of salvation to the sinners under the law.

4. Bearing the sin of the world, He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin in our place.

5. He rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

Therefore, as you asked, the reason Jesus could converse with the teachers of the law and teach them even though He had not received a human education in the law is that His essence was God who is the Word and the Creator.

Jesus is not a scholar like the teachers of the law; He is the God who gave the law and the Savior who Himself completed the salvation that the law points to.

In John 7:25–36, what does the time of Jesus spoken of here mean?

The ‘time of Jesus’ spoken of in John 7:25–36 is the time of salvation appointed by God the Father. Specifically, it refers to the time when Jesus would die on the Cross, rise from the dead, and go up to heaven and return to the Father.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

1. The reason people could not seize Jesus

When Jesus revealed that He was the One sent by God, the Jews tried to seize Him.

"Then Jesus cried out, as He taught in the temple, saying, 'You both know Me, and you know where I am from; and I have not come of Myself, but He who sent Me is true, whom you do not know. But I know Him, for I am from Him, and He sent Me.' Therefore they sought to take Him; but no one laid a hand on Him, because His hour had not yet come" (John 7:28–30).

People tried to seize Jesus and kill Him, but they could not lay a hand on Him. It was because the time appointed by God had not yet come.

The life of Jesus was not something to be taken away by chance at the hands of men. Jesus had to give up His life at the appointed time, according to the will of God the Father. Therefore, even though people hated Jesus and sought to kill Him, they could not seize Him before the time of salvation appointed by the Father came.

2. From the time Jesus received baptism from John, He was headed toward the Cross

Jesus had already borne all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He was going on to the Cross.

Therefore the time Jesus waited for in John chapter 7 does not mean merely the hour of His death. It is connected with the whole plan of salvation of God, as follows.

The work of salvation	What Jesus accomplished
The incarnation	The Son of God came in the flesh in order to save sinners
The baptism He received from John	He bore all the sins of the world in His own body
The testimony of the gospel	He taught that He is the Son of God and the bread of life
The Cross	He shed His blood, receiving in our place the judgment of the sin He had taken upon Himself
Death and resurrection	He overcame the power of sin and death and gave new life
The ascension	He completed the work of salvation and returned to the Father
The final resurrection	He raises up those who believe and makes them live forever

Jesus was not crucified immediately after He received baptism. After testifying to who He was, teaching the word of salvation, and raising up disciples throughout His public ministry, He gave His body over to the Cross at the time appointed by the Father.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. *"A little while longer, and then I go to Him who sent Me"*

"Then Jesus said to them, 'I shall be with you a little while longer, and then I go to Him who sent Me. You will seek Me and not find Me, and where I am you cannot come.'" (John 7:33–34).

In this word, what the time of Jesus is appears even more clearly.

The words *"a little while longer"* mean that the death of Jesus on the Cross was drawing near. The words *"I go to Him who sent Me"* mean that after dying on the Cross and rising again, He would go up to God the Father.

Therefore, the time of Jesus includes the entire flow that follows.

The death of the Cross → the resurrection → the ascension → the return to the Father

John chapter 13 also makes this meaning clear.

"Now before the Feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that His hour had come that He should depart from this world to the Father, having loved His own who were in the world, He loved them to the end" (John 13:1).

The time when Jesus would depart from this world and return to the Father was the time when He would complete salvation through the Cross, the resurrection, and the ascension.

4. The time of Jesus was the time of death and, at the same time, the time of glory

Seen with human eyes, the Cross looks like shame and defeat. But seen by God, the Cross was the time of salvation when Jesus

would settle the sin and the judgment of mankind, and the time when the Father and the Son would be glorified.

"But Jesus answered them, saying, 'The hour has come that the Son of Man should be glorified.'" (John 12:23).

When Jesus is judged on the Cross for the sin of the world that He bore with the baptism He received from John, the price of the sin of mankind is paid in full. When He rises from the dead, the salvation that gives new life and eternal life to those who believe is completed.

Therefore the time of Jesus carries the following two meanings together.

— It is the time of sacrifice, when He dies in place of sinners.

— It is the time of glory, when He overcomes sin and death and completes salvation.

5. Jesus submitted to the time appointed by the Father

Jesus did not move according to His own plans or people's demands. Even when His brothers told Him to show Himself to the world, He did not follow the time of men, and even when the Jews tried to seize Him, He was not dragged along by their plans.

Jesus moved according to the will and the timing of God the Father, who had sent Him. Before the appointed time came, He kept on teaching the word, and when the time came, He gave His body over to the Cross.

Even while knowing that He would die, Jesus did not flee and give up the work of salvation. He bore to the end the sin He had taken upon Himself with the baptism He received from John, and at the time appointed by the Father, He shed His blood and was judged on the Cross.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

6. The word *"You will seek Me and not find Me"*

The Jews did not understand where Jesus meant He was going. They thought He might be going to teach the Greeks, but Jesus was speaking of the resurrection and the ascension.

When Jesus returned to the Father, they would no longer be able to seek and find Jesus present in the body. Moreover, a person who does not believe in Jesus as the Son and the Savior sent by God cannot go to the kingdom of God, where Jesus is.

People thought they knew where Jesus was from, but they did not know His true origin. They saw Jesus only as a man who had grown up in Nazareth, and they did not believe the fact that He was the Son of God, sent by God the Father.

On the other hand, in verse 31 there were also people who saw the signs Jesus performed and heard His word and believed in Him. They saw the same Jesus, but some tried to seize Him and kill Him, and some believed in Him as the Christ. As the time of salvation drew near, people's faith and unbelief were also clearly revealed.

Conclusion

The 'time of Jesus' in John 7:25–36 can be summed up as follows.

It is the time when Jesus, bearing all the sins of the world that He had taken upon Himself with the baptism He received from John, would shed His blood and be judged on the Cross, rise from the dead, complete the salvation of mankind, and return to God the Father.

Before that time came, no one could seize Jesus. But when the time appointed by the Father came, Jesus willingly gave up

His life. With that obedience He completed the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and He gave the remission of sin and eternal life to those who believe in it.

In John 7:37–44, on the last day of the feast Jesus said, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water."* If this word were to be explained in connection with the truth of receiving the Holy Spirit by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, how would it be explained?

"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified" (John 7:37–39).

In this word, Jesus invited to Himself everyone whose soul is thirsty because of sin. And He promised that He would give the Holy Spirit to those who believe in Jesus, so that rivers of living water would flow out of their hearts.

The flow of the text is as follows.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The word of the text	Its meaning within the gospel of the water and the Spirit
"If anyone thirsts"	The state of longing for life and the remission of sin under sin and condemnation
"let him come to Me"	Coming to Jesus without relying on one's own deeds and religious efforts
"drink"	Accepting with the heart and believing the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished
"He who believes in Me"	The person who believes in the incarnation of Jesus, the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection
"rivers of living water"	The Holy Spirit, who comes upon and dwells in the heart of the person who has received the remission of sin
"will flow out of his heart"	The life, the peace, and the word of the gospel that the Holy Spirit gives, flowing on even to other people

1. The word "*If anyone thirsts*"

The thirst Jesus spoke of does not mean only the state of physically wanting to drink water. In the heart of man there is a fundamental thirst that has arisen because of sin.

People try to fill that thirst with the riches of the world, honor, pleasure, and religious deeds. But such things cannot cleanse a

conscience defiled by sin, nor can they remove the fear of the judgment of God. Unless sin is solved, no matter how much one has, the soul cannot help but keep on thirsting.

Toward such sinners, Jesus cried out, *"Let him come to Me and drink."* It is the word that a sinner does not quench his thirst by his own strength, but must receive the life and the remission of sin that Jesus gives.

Jesus also said, *"anyone."* Regardless of origin, position, or past sins, anyone at all who acknowledges his sins and comes to Jesus can drink the water of life.

2. What does it mean to come to Jesus and drink?

To come to Jesus and drink the living water is to hear with the heart and believe the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Jesus, the Son of God, came to this earth in a human body. And with the baptism He received from John, He bore all the sins of the world once and for all. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin, and by rising from the dead, He gave us new life.

Therefore, to drink the living water is not simply to know the word of Jesus as knowledge. It is to accept with the heart the fact that Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of that sin in my place on the Cross, and saved me by rising from the dead.

When one believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit, the sins that were written in the heart of that person are washed away. To the person who has received the remission of sin, God gives the Holy Spirit as a gift.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. The living water refers to the Holy Spirit

The text makes clear what the rivers of living water are.

"But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive"

Therefore, in the text, the living water refers to the Holy Spirit. In the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the 'water' refers to the baptism Jesus received from John, and the *"living water"* of the text refers to the Holy Spirit, who dwells in the person who has received the remission of sin by believing in that gospel.

The Holy Spirit is not One who is received through human zeal or emotional experience in a state in which one has not received the remission of sin. He is the Spirit of God, who comes upon the person who has had all his sins washed away by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished.

The Holy Spirit testifies to the following facts in the heart of the person who believes.

— Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— Jesus received the judgment of sin in my place on the Cross.

— Jesus rose from the dead.

— I, who believe in this gospel, have had all my sins washed away and have become a child of God.

— God has given me eternal life.

Because the Holy Spirit confirms these truths of salvation in the heart of the person who believes, the person who has received the remission of sin no longer thirsts before the condemnation and the judgment of sin.

4. The word *"because Jesus was not yet glorified"*

It is recorded in verse 39 that at that time, because Jesus was not yet glorified, the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon those who believed.

That Jesus would be glorified refers to Jesus taking to the Cross the sin of the world that He had borne with the baptism He received from John, dying there by shedding His blood, and rising from the dead and completing the work of salvation.

At the point of John chapter 7, Jesus was already bearing the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John, but it was before He had accomplished the death of the Cross and the resurrection. Therefore the promise that the Holy Spirit would dwell in the saints who have received the remission of sin had to be fulfilled after the work of salvation of Jesus was completed.

God the Father planned the salvation of mankind. Jesus completed that salvation with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. The Holy Spirit comes upon the heart of the person who believes in this gospel and testifies to the fact that the work of salvation of Jesus is perfect.

5. Why did He say *"rivers of living water"*?

Jesus did not say that the living water would drip little by little; He said, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water."* This means that the life and the grace that the Holy Spirit gives are abundant.

In the heart of the person who has received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the following changes take place.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

First, the condemnation of sin disappears and the peace of salvation arises.

When one looks at his own deeds, he sees his shortcomings, but when he looks at the work of salvation that Jesus completed, he comes to have the assurance that all his sins have been washed away.

Second, the word of God becomes the food of life.

Through the Scriptures, the Holy Spirit makes one realize the salvation of Jesus even more clearly and establishes one's faith firmly.

Third, the word of the gospel flows on to other people.

The rivers of living water do not remain as grace for oneself alone. The person who has received the remission of sin comes to preach, to those who are still thirsting because of sin and condemnation, the gospel of salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Fourth, one gains the strength to live according to the will of God.

The Holy Spirit leads the heart of the person who has been saved, and makes him serve the Church of God and the gospel and do righteous works.

Therefore the word *"out of his heart will flow rivers of living water"* means that the Holy Spirit dwells in the person who has received the remission of sin and makes the gospel of life keep on flowing through that person.

6. Even though people heard the same word, their reactions were different

In verses 40–44, the reactions of the people who heard the word of Jesus are divided. Some saw Jesus as the Prophet whom God had promised to send, and some confessed that He was the

Christ. On the other hand, some judged Jesus only by His being from Galilee and objected that He could not be the Christ. There were even people who tried to seize Jesus.

The reason they showed different reactions even though they heard the same word is that their standards for looking at Jesus were different. Some people heard the word of Jesus and tried to know who He was, but others judged Jesus by the knowledge and the fixed ideas they already had.

It is the same today. If one judges the work of salvation of Jesus by fitting it to his own thoughts, he cannot accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit. But if one lays down his own judgment and hears the word as it is, he comes to believe that Jesus is the Christ, who saved all sinners with the baptism He received from John, the Cross, and the resurrection.

Conclusion

The rivers of living water that Jesus spoke of in John 7:37–44 refer to the Holy Spirit, whom those who believe in Jesus would receive.

A person whose soul is thirsty because of sin must come to Jesus. And he must believe with his heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit: that Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of those sins on the Cross, and completed salvation by rising from the dead.

The Holy Spirit comes upon the person who has received the remission of sin by believing in this gospel. The Holy Spirit testifies to salvation within that person, gives him the peace that overcomes the condemnation of sin, and makes the gospel of life flow through him to other souls. This is the truth of receiving the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Holy Spirit contained in the word *"out of his heart will flow rivers of living water."*

In John 7:45–53, if one speaks of the divinity of Jesus from this word, what can be said?

"Then the officers came to the chief priests and Pharisees, who said to them, 'Why have you not brought Him?' The officers answered, 'No man ever spoke like this Man!'" (John 7:45–46).

The chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to seize Jesus and bring Him. The officers were not people who went to become disciples of Jesus, but people who went to arrest Him. But after they heard the word of Jesus, they could not carry out the order and came back empty-handed.

What they said—that is, the testimony *"No man ever spoke like this Man!"*—shows that the word of Jesus had the authority of God, beyond human knowledge or eloquence.

1. The word of Jesus did not come from knowledge learned from men

In John chapter 7, the Jews thought it strange that Jesus knew and taught the Scriptures clearly even though He had not formally learned letters. To this, Jesus said that His doctrine was not something He had made up Himself, but had come from God the Father, who had sent Him.

Jesus is not One who came to know God little by little by studying the word. Jesus is the Word who was with God from the beginning, and the Son of God, who knows God the Father completely. Because that Word came to this earth in the flesh,

His teaching had authority and life that human knowledge could not produce.

What astonished the officers was not only the way Jesus spoke. They felt the authority of the truth that appeared when Jesus spoke. The word of Jesus was not words to win people's favor, nor words to gain the recognition of the religious leaders. It was the word in which He who had come from God proclaimed the will of God the Father just as it was.

2. Jesus said to come to Him and receive eternal life

Just before this, Jesus had spoken as follows.

"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.'" (John 7:37–38).

Ordinarily a prophet tells people to come to God. But Jesus said, *"Let him come to Me and drink."* He also said that He would give the Holy Spirit and eternal life to those who believe in Him.

The reason Jesus could speak like this is that He is not a mere prophet or religious leader, but God, the source of life. A man cannot remove another person's sins, nor can he give the Holy Spirit, nor can he guarantee eternal life. But Jesus is God, who has the authority to remit sin, to give the Holy Spirit, and to make dead souls live.

Therefore, when the officers said, *"No man ever spoke like this Man!"* it was not merely an evaluation that the teaching of Jesus was excellent. It was a testimony that in the word they heard there appeared a divine authority and a power of life that cannot be found in man.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. Jesus was not seized by men and killed; He gave Himself according to the will of God

In verse 44, just before, it is recorded that there were people who wanted to take Jesus, but no one was able to lay hands on Him. Even the officers were sent, but Jesus was not seized by them.

This shows that the life and the work of Jesus were not ruled by people's plans. Jesus had to accomplish the salvation of mankind at the time and in the way appointed by God the Father.

Jesus had already borne all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He had to go on to the Cross. And after shedding His blood and receiving the judgment of sin on the Cross, He had to rise from the dead.

Therefore, that Jesus was crucified was not because He was helplessly defeated by men. Jesus gave up His own life of His own accord in order to save sinners. He is God, who knew the will of God and the time of salvation completely, and who accomplished His work according to that will.

4. The word of Jesus revealed the hearts of men

The people who heard the word of Jesus showed different reactions.

People	Reaction	The heart revealed
The officers	They came back without taking Jesus	They acknowledged the authority contained in the word of Jesus
The Pharisees	They accused even the officers of having been deceived	The stubbornness of seeking to reject Jesus
The crowd	They regarded Jesus as the Prophet or the Christ	They wanted to know who Jesus was
Nicodemus	He said that one must not judge before hearing and examining	The attitude of examining the word of Jesus again

The word of Jesus is not a word that merely conveys information. Before that word, the hearts and the faith of people are revealed. A person who seeks the truth hears the word of Jesus and comes to know who He is, but a person who seeks to protect his own authority and religious position opposes Jesus even after hearing the same word.

The Pharisees heard the testimony of the officers, but they did not examine the word of Jesus. Rather, they said, *"Have any of the rulers or the Pharisees believed in Him?"* and made the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

authority of men the standard of truth. They also condemned the crowd who believed in Jesus as accursed people who did not know the law.

They knew much of the law, but they did not recognize Jesus, of whom that law testified. They had knowledge of the Scriptures, but because they were captive to their own thoughts and religious authority, they rejected the Son of God, who was right before their eyes.

5. Nicodemus stopped the hasty condemnation

"Nicodemus (he who came to Jesus by night, being one of them) said to them, 'Does our law judge a man before it hears him and knows what he is doing?'" (John 7:50–51).

Nicodemus was the man who had earlier gone to Jesus at night and heard the word about being born again. On this occasion he did not publicly confess Jesus as the Christ, but he pointed out that condemning Jesus without even hearing His word and what He was doing was contrary to the law.

But the Pharisees did not answer the legitimate question of Nicodemus. They attacked him, saying, *"Are you also from Galilee?"* and turned the point of the argument to a prejudice about the region of origin. This shows that they were not seeking the truth. They had already made up their minds to reject Jesus, and they were only looking for grounds to justify their decision.

In the end, they could not tear down the word of Jesus, nor could they seize Jesus, and they scattered and went back to their own houses. Human religious authority could not overcome the word of God.

6. The divinity of Jesus and the gospel of the water and the Spirit

The divinity of Jesus is revealed not only in His word but even more clearly in the work of salvation that He accomplished.

Jesus, who is God, came to this earth in a human body. With the baptism He received from John, Jesus bore all the sins of the world in His own body. And bearing those sins, He received in our place the judgment of all sins by being crucified and shedding His blood. By rising from the dead, He gave eternal life to those who believe.

Because Jesus is God, the sin He bore with the baptism He received from John could be the sin of all the people of the world. Because Jesus is God, the judgment He received on the Cross could be a judgment that paid the price of all sins in full. Also, because Jesus is the God of life, He could rise from the dead and give eternal life to those who believe.

Therefore, to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is not to believe in Jesus only as a great teacher or prophet. It is to believe that Jesus is God the Creator, and that this God loved us and came in a human body, and saved us from all sins with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Conclusion

The divinity of Jesus shown in John 7:45–53 can be summed up as follows.

First, the word of Jesus was not knowledge learned from men, but the word of life that came from God.

Second, Jesus said to come to Him and drink, and to believe

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

in Him and receive the Holy Spirit and eternal life.

Third, Jesus was not dragged along by people's plans, but accomplished the work of salvation at the time appointed by God.

Fourth, the word of Jesus had the authority to reveal the hearts of men and to divide truth from falsehood.

Fifth, Jesus, who is God, completed the salvation of mankind with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Therefore, the testimony of the officers, *"No man ever spoke like this Man!"* does not mean that Jesus simply spoke well. It means that because Jesus Himself is the truth and God, the source of life, in His word there was the authority of God that awakens sinners, saves them, and gives eternal life. ✉

Questions and Answers on John Chapter 7

[Question] 1. When chapter 7 is seen in continuation from John chapter 6, briefly explain its core content.

In John chapter 6, Jesus said that He is the bread of life and that He gives eternal life with His flesh and blood. But many people only wanted the bread of the flesh and did not accept that word, and even among the disciples many left. In chapter 7, that unbelief and opposition become even clearer. Even His brothers in the flesh did not believe in Jesus, the Jewish leaders sought to kill Him, and the crowd also judged Jesus differently from one another, as a good man, as one who deceives, as the Prophet, or as the Christ.

Even while knowing about the moves to kill Him, Jesus went up to the Feast of Tabernacles according to the time appointed by the Father and taught in the temple. He made clear that His doctrine was not something He had made up Himself but had come from the Father who sent Him, and that He, too, was not One who had come of Himself but One who had been sent by the Father. To those who judged by appearance over His making a sick man's whole body completely well on the Sabbath, He said to judge with righteous judgment.

At the end, He called the thirsty to come to Him and drink, and He promised that rivers of living water would flow out of the heart of the one who believes. This points to the fact that Jesus would bear the sin of the world with the baptism He received from

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

John, receive the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and then rise again and be glorified, and to the Holy Spirit whom those who believe in that salvation would receive. Therefore the center of chapter 7 is Jesus going the way of salvation according to the will of the Father even amid opposition and misunderstanding, the dispute surrounding who He is, and the promise of the Holy Spirit to be given to those who believe in Him.

[Question] 2. In John chapter 7 verse 2, what kind of feast is the Feast of Tabernacles, the feast of the Jews?

The Feast of Tabernacles is the feast that remembers how God made the people of Israel dwell in booths in the wilderness when He brought them out of Egypt. According to Leviticus chapter 23, it was kept for seven days from the fifteenth day of the seventh month, and those who were native Israelites dwelt in booths. This was to make their descendants remember that their ancestors had lived in booths under the protection of God after coming out of Egypt.

It was also a feast of thanksgiving and joy kept after gathering in the produce of the land. On the first day they gathered in a holy convocation and did no labor, and for seven days they rejoiced before the LORD. On the eighth day, too, there was a sacred assembly in which they gathered again in a holy convocation. Therefore the Feast of Tabernacles held together both the meaning of remembering the grace of salvation by which God kept them in the wilderness and the meaning of giving thanks for the harvest that God had given.

In John chapter 7, this background is important. While the people were keeping the feast that commemorated the past

protection and provision in the wilderness, Jesus cried out to the thirsty to come to Him and drink. With the promise that He would give the Holy Spirit to those who believe in Him, He led the meaning of the feast to the place of life and salvation.

[Question] 3. In John chapter 7 verses 3–5, why did the brothers of Jesus Christ urge Him to go up to Jerusalem for the Feast of Tabernacles and show Himself?

The brothers of Jesus Christ thought that in order for more people to see the works He was doing, He should not stay buried in Galilee but go up to Jerusalem, where people gathered, and show Himself openly. The words *"no one does anything in secret while he himself seeks to be known openly"* were a worldly judgment that if one is going to perform signs, he should make his name known on a big stage.

But the text makes clear the reason they spoke that way: *"For even His brothers did not believe in Him."* They did not believe the fact that Jesus was the Christ sent by the Father, the One who would give up His body according to the appointed time and save mankind. Even though they had seen the signs, they did not understand His work and His time.

Jesus did not move in order to gain people's attention. He taught according to the time appointed by the Father, not the time to show Himself off to the world, and He looked toward the time when, bearing the sin He had taken upon Himself with His baptism, He would be crucified and complete salvation. Therefore the urging of His brothers sought human success and public fame, while the way of Jesus was the way of obeying the will and the time of the Father who had sent Him.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

[Question] 4. In John chapter 7 verses 21–24, what specifically is the *"one work"* that Jesus Christ spoke of?

The *"one work"* refers to the work recorded in John chapter 5, in which He healed on the Sabbath the man who had been sick for thirty-eight years by the pool of Bethesda and made his whole body completely well. The Jews made an issue not of the grace of Jesus in healing the sick man but of the fact that He had made him take up his bed and walk on the Sabbath, and they persecuted Him.

Jesus showed, with the example of circumcision, that their judgment was contradictory. That is, while they circumcised a man even on the Sabbath so as not to break the law of Moses, it was not right for them to be angry over His making a man's whole body completely well on the Sabbath. They condemned Jesus by looking only at the letter of the law and its outward form, but they did not see the will of God, who gave the law, nor the good work of saving a man.

So Jesus said, *"Do not judge according to appearance, but judge with righteous judgment."* By this, He meant that they should not condemn by holding on only to the outward form called the Sabbath, but should see the mercy of God and His will of salvation in making a sick man whole. This one work revealed that Jesus is the One who saves people and makes them whole, but it also revealed the stubbornness of the Jewish leaders.

[Question] 5. What was the understanding of the Messiah held by the people of that time, as revealed in John chapter 7 verse 27?

The people thought that Jesus could not be the Christ because

they knew His human origin. Saying, *"We know where this Man is from,"* they held the notion that when the Christ came, no one would know where He was from. Because they considered that they knew the background of Jesus' growth in the flesh and His family, they judged Him to be an ordinary man of Galilee.

But Jesus made clear that what they knew was not complete knowledge. He was not One who had come of Himself; He had been sent by the true Father and had come from the Father. People spoke of which town Jesus had grown up in, but they did not know His true origin or the One who had sent Him.

Therefore the view of the Messiah in verse 27 shows the error of trying to discern the Christ by information about human origin and by the notions they held. In order to know the Christ rightly, one must not look only at the origin that appears outwardly, but must believe that He is the Son of God sent by the Father, that He is God, and that He is the One who revealed Himself through signs, the word, and the work of salvation.

[Question] 6. In John chapter 7 verse 37, which day of the feast is *"the last day, that great day of the feast"* of the Feast of Tabernacles, and what meaning does it carry?

"The last day, that great day of the feast" refers to the solemn day on which the observances of the Feast of Tabernacles came to a close. The Feast of Tabernacles was kept for seven days, and Leviticus chapter 23 directed that on the eighth day, too, they gather in a holy convocation and hold a sacred assembly. The Gospel of John records that on the great day that fell at the end of that feast, Jesus stood and cried out so that everyone could hear.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

On that day Jesus said, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink."* At the climax of the feast in which the people remembered both their ancestors who dwelt in booths in the wilderness and the provision of God, He proclaimed that He Himself is the true supplier of life. Then He said that rivers of living water would flow out of the heart of the one who believes in Him.

Therefore the importance of this day does not lie only in confirming the date of the feast. It lies in the fact that at the great gathering with which the feast ended, Jesus openly revealed Himself as the One who quenches the thirst of the soul and gives the Holy Spirit. The feast that commemorated the protection in the wilderness led on to the place where the promise of the living water and the Holy Spirit, which the one who believes in Christ would receive, was heard.

[Question] 7. What does the promise of the Holy Spirit explained in John chapter 7 verse 39 mean?

Verse 39 directly explains that the *"rivers of living water"* that Jesus spoke of refer to the Holy Spirit, whom those who believe in Him would receive. Therefore the rivers of living water do not mean actual water or a passing emotional excitement, but the Holy Spirit, who dwells in the person who believes and gives life. When a heart that is dry and thirsty because of sin believes in the salvation of Jesus Christ and receives the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit comes as a gift and gives peace and life to that heart.

The explanation *"for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified"* shows that the promise of the Holy Spirit is not separate from the work of salvation of Jesus. Jesus bore the sin of mankind with His baptism, received

the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and after rising from the dead, sent the Holy Spirit. Therefore the Holy Spirit comes upon those who have received the remission of sin by believing in the salvation completed by the baptism of Jesus, the Cross, and the resurrection.

Receiving the Holy Spirit is not something a person produces through prayer or sensory experience. It is the gift of God given to the one who knows and believes that Jesus Christ is God and the Savior who removed sin with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That Holy Spirit dwells in the one who believes, makes him believe the word, and leads him to convey the life he has received to other souls.

[Question] 8. In John chapter 7 verses 40 and 41, how does calling Jesus Christ "*the Prophet*" differ from calling Him "*the Christ*"?

Some of the crowd, seeing the word and the signs of Jesus, said, *"Truly this is the Prophet,"* and others said, *"This is the Christ."* The expression *"the Prophet"* presents Jesus as the promised prophet, sent by God to convey the word and perform signs. It is a word that acknowledged to some degree the fact that the authority of God was with Him.

The word *"the Christ"* goes further than that; it is a confession acknowledging Jesus as the Messiah sent by God, that is, the anointed Savior who would save His people. Jesus is not only a prophet who teaches the truth; He is the Son of God and God, who gives up His body and blood to save sinners and give eternal life.

But the fact that the words of the crowd did not come together as one is also important. Some retorted, asking whether

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the Christ could come out of Galilee, and they disputed, looking only at His background in the flesh. Therefore the text shows that one must not stop at admiring the word of Jesus or exalting Him as a prophet, but must know and believe even the fact that He is the Christ sent by God and the Savior.

[Question] 9. In John chapter 7 verses 45–49, what hostile actions did the chief priests and the Pharisees show toward Christ?

The chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to seize Jesus and bring Him. They did not try to hear and judge fairly the word of Jesus and the works He did; from the beginning they had marked Him as one to be gotten rid of. But the officers, overwhelmed by the word of Jesus, came back empty-handed and reported, *"No man ever spoke like this Man!"*

Even after hearing that report, the leaders did not examine the word. Rather, they rebuked the officers, saying, *"Are you also deceived?"* and put forward their own authority, asking whether any of the rulers or the Pharisees believed. They also despised the crowd who had responded to the word of Jesus, saying, *"This crowd that does not know the law is accursed."*

Their hostility was not a simple difference of opinion. They tried to arrest Jesus, they branded as deceived those who had been moved by His word, and they condemned the crowd as accursed. While priding themselves on knowing the law, they themselves broke the principle of the law that one must not judge before hearing a man and knowing what he has done. In the end, their action was not an attitude of trying to examine clearly who Jesus was, but a stubborn opposition to protect their own position and their existing judgment.

[Question] 10. In John chapter 7 verse 51, on what Biblical principle is the objection of Nicodemus, *"Does our law judge a man before it hears him and knows what he is doing?"* based?

The objection of Nicodemus is based on the judicial principle of the law of Moses that one must hear the accused, sufficiently investigate the facts, and then judge fairly. Rather than repeating a single verse verbatim, it summarizes the following principle given repeatedly in Deuteronomy.

Deuteronomy 1:16 commands, *"Hear the cases between your brethren, and judge righteously between a man and his brother."* A judge must not reach a conclusion after hearing only one side's claim; he must hear both sides. Deuteronomy 17:4 also says that when an accusation is heard, *"you shall inquire diligently,"* and verse 6 says not to put anyone to death on the testimony of one witness alone, but to establish the matter by the testimony of two or three. Deuteronomy 19:15–18 likewise commands that the matter be established by the mouth of two or three witnesses and that the judges make careful inquiry.

Therefore Nicodemus pointed out that the procedure of declaring Jesus guilty and trying to arrest Him even before hearing His word directly and investigating what He had done was contrary to the law. It was an objection that revealed that the leaders who prided themselves on knowing the law were, on the contrary, not keeping the principles that the law required: hearing, verification of the facts, evidence, and fair judgment. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 1 by Paul C. Jong

When does the Holy Spirit come upon a person who believes in Jesus?

< John 7:25-39 >

"Now some of them from Jerusalem said, 'Is this not He whom they seek to kill? But look! He speaks boldly, and they say nothing to Him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is truly the Christ? However, we know where this Man is from; but when the Christ comes, no one knows where He is from.' Then Jesus cried out, as He taught in the temple, saying, 'You both know Me, and you know where I am from; and I have not come of Myself, but He who sent Me is true, whom you do not know. But I know Him, for I am from Him, and He sent Me.' Therefore they sought to take Him; but no one laid a hand on Him, because His hour had not yet come. And many of the people believed in Him, and said, 'When the Christ comes, will He do more signs than these which this Man has done?' The Pharisees heard the crowd murmuring these things concerning Him, and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take Him. Then Jesus said to them, 'I shall be with you a little while longer, and then I go to Him who sent Me. You will seek Me and not find Me, and where I am you cannot come.' Then the Jews said among themselves, 'Where does He intend to go that we shall not find Him? Does He intend to go to the Dispersion among the Greeks and teach the Greeks? What is this thing that He said,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"You will seek Me and not find Me, and where I am you cannot come"?' On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified."

The Lord went up to Jerusalem at the time of the feast. But people were trying to seize Jesus and kill Him. Why was that? It was because many people were following Jesus. Among the people of Israel, the Pharisees and the elders in particular, and even the Romans, were keeping their eyes on Jesus. There was the worry that that man must not be left as He was.

It was because Jesus performed miracles and wonders, and so countless people followed Him. So the Roman soldiers worried about what they would do if a new leader should arise in the nation of Israel. They were thinking that it did not matter if there were billions of common people, but that if a leader arose, that was a problem, and so they had to nip it in the bud; they had to kill him.

The Pharisees and the religious leaders, too, were already worried, wondering whether the country would not be thrown into turmoil because of that man, and whether, if He went on like that and stepped forward claiming to be a leader and demonstrations broke out and they came to resist Rome, the Roman soldiers would not kill the people of Israel. So they were trying to kill Him. They were always lying in wait, with the thought of when to kill Him, with what pretext to kill Him, and how to kill Him. Jesus is God; would He not know their scheme?

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

He knew it all.

So we read the word of verse 25, which says, *"Now some of them from Jerusalem said, 'Is this not He whom they seek to kill?'"* It is the word that many people were trying to kill Jesus. At that time the ordinary people were murmuring, asking whether that man was not the one whom people were trying to kill. Yet Jesus went up to Jerusalem. At the Feast of Tabernacles, the feast of the Jews, with the Cross before Him, the Lord Himself went up. Even without that, the leaders were trying to seize Him and kill Him, and the rumor had spread widely even among the people, so that everyone knew they were trying to seize Him and kill Him; and yet Jesus went up, and so this talk arose. Even though the Pharisees were lying in wait to kill Him, Jesus spoke openly, but the people said nothing. Jesus, rather, spoke openly. So the people thought about it. They said to one another, wondering whether the rulers really knew that this man was the Christ.

Today's passage, John chapters 7 through 8, is a section that speaks of the divinity of Jesus Christ. It is a scene in which Jesus defends Himself, caught between the people who were trying to seize Him and kill Him because they did not believe in Him and the people who were trying to kill Him out of envy. Because in a little while He would be crucified and die, He was trying to make clear who He was.

But as we read this word, we can easily think that it has nothing to do with us, because we are not living in the kind of urgent circumstances they had at that time. A person regards something as his own problem only when he is in those circumstances, and you and I are not in such circumstances now. But what if we put ourselves in His place and think of it as if you and I had been Jesus? It is a serious situation now. People are trying to kill Him, and the shadow of death is slowly closing in,

and the common people all know that fact. So the common people, in effect, asked whether the rulers had recognized this man as the Christ. To put it simply, it means: the rulers of Israel said that the Christ would come, so will they accept this man as the Christ?

"He who sent Me is true, whom you do not know. But I know Him"

The people, harboring such doubts and talking, murmured about Jesus as if disparaging Him. But what they said was that they knew this man well. Although it had been said that when the Christ came no one would know where He was from, they were saying that they knew well where this man was from. Saying, is He not the son of Joseph, is He not the son of Mary, is He not a man of Galilee, did He not grow up in the region of Nazareth, they claimed that they knew all about the history of that household and where this man had come from. While the people were murmuring about Jesus like this, Jesus went into the temple and revealed Himself to the people.

Looking at verse 28, *"Then Jesus cried out, as He taught in the temple, saying, 'You both know Me, and you know where I am from; and I have not come of Myself, but He who sent Me is true, whom you do not know. But I know Him, for I am from Him, and He sent Me.'"* That is what He said. And looking at the word of verse 30, it says, *"Therefore they sought to take Him; but no one laid a hand on Him, because His hour had not yet come."*

So it says that many of the people believed in Jesus. They asked whether, even if the Christ should come to this earth, He would perform as many miracles and wonders as this Man did now. It says, *"When the Christ comes, will He do more signs*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

than these which this Man has done?" (John 7:31). How many sick people did Jesus heal, and how many dead people did He raise, within the nation of Israel? The Bible says that if all the miracles and wonders Jesus performed after coming to this earth were recorded in detail, there would be no place on this earth to store those books. It means that the writers of the four Gospels had that much to record. It is an enormous amount.

But in the Bible even the raising of the dead is recorded briefly in only a few verses. It must have been so because the purpose of the record did not lie there. Meanwhile the crowd murmured, and the sound of the crowd murmuring was heard by the Pharisees. The chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to seize Jesus. At that time, in verse 33, Jesus said, *"Then Jesus said to them, 'I shall be with you a little while longer, and then I go to Him who sent Me. You will seek Me and not find Me, and where I am you cannot come.'"* That is what He said.

Upon a person of what kind of faith does the Holy Spirit come?

The Jews thought about it. He had said that they would not find Him, so was He going to die, was He going to kill Himself, or was He going to go to the Greeks who were scattered abroad? Many Jews had fled and were living among the Greeks. They wondered whether He was going to go there and teach the Greeks, or teach the Jews there. To put it simply, they wondered whether He was thinking of going into exile. But the word of Jesus was not spoken about going into exile. When the Lord said that He would go away after a little while longer, the Lord was thinking of the Cross. But the people murmured among themselves, wondering whether He was really going to cross the

sea to Greece and teach the Greeks and live there, and how He could say that they would not find Him.

Then the last day of the feast came, and it is recorded, *"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified" (John 7:37–39).*

It says, *"For the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified" (John 7:39)*. Therefore, under this word we can now think about and discuss upon what kind of person, that is, upon a person of what kind of faith, the Holy Spirit comes, and reach a conclusion. Upon a person who has what kind of faith does the Holy Spirit come? Although Jesus was with the disciples at that time, the Holy Spirit was not yet dwelling in the disciples. It is true that God the Father gave them understanding for a while and made them know. So at the end of this word, John 7:39, the Apostle John added an explanatory note, saying, *"For the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified."* This means that God the Father had determined to send the Holy Spirit after Jesus died and rose again from that death. That is why it is recorded like this here. Then what happens when one receives the Holy Spirit, and what kind of person receives the Holy Spirit? We can ask and speak about this point.

Dear fellow believers, upon which of the people who believe in Jesus today does the Holy Spirit come? That question and its answer are all too clear. We can make it clear and then develop the discussion from there. On what basis do we develop it? Naturally, the Spirit of the Lord comes upon those who believe

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Holy Spirit comes upon those who have received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Holy Spirit does not come upon a person who has not received the remission of sin. The reason is that, because Jesus was not yet glorified, the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon them. What this means is that although the Lord had borne our sins by receiving baptism from John, He had not yet been crucified and died, nor risen from the dead, and so He could not send the Holy Spirit. So this word is the word that, for us today as well, the Holy Spirit cannot come upon those who have not received the remission of sin. The Holy Spirit cannot come. This fact is extremely important. Dear fellow believers, it is extremely important.

Dear fellow believers, the Holy Spirit comes upon the hearts of those who have received the remission of sin. Jesus Christ came to this earth, received baptism in order to bear our sins, was crucified, rose from the dead, ascended to heaven forty days later, and then, ten days after that, on the Day of Pentecost, He granted the descent of the Holy Spirit. This is found in the Acts of the Apostles. Then someone may ask me, "How are you so sure?" I make what I say clear. I ask the question and set down the answer precisely, and then I give the additional explanation. I very much dislike talking in the manner of "this is this and that is that" and then blurring the ending and making a mess of it.

If the Lord bore sin by receiving baptism from John but had not yet been crucified and died and had not yet risen again from the dead, it means that He had not yet completed the work of removing your sins and mine. It means that He had not yet been glorified. And if we think about it again, we must know that the Lord bore our sins by receiving baptism from John, we must know that He was crucified and received the judgment for your sins and mine and died for us, and we must know that He rose again from

that death and went up to the right hand of the throne of God. When we accept this fact, we can be assured of the remission of sin and we can receive the remission of sin. It means that it is also a problem if one knows only that Jesus received baptism from John, and so knows only that sin passed on to Him, and says that the judgment He received and the words that follow are not yet needed. That is why the Lord spoke this word.

When do we receive the Holy Spirit?

In a little while the Lord will be crucified. Then, after He rises again, He comes to find His disciples, and the very first command He gave them was the word to receive the Holy Spirit. *"Receive the Holy Spirit" (John 20:22)*. Let us look at this word. Let us read John 20:19 through 23 together. *"Then, the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them, 'Peace be with you.' When He had said this, He showed them His hands and His side. Then the disciples were glad when they saw the Lord. So Jesus said to them again, 'Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you.' And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, 'Receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained.'"*

Dear fellow believers, when does the Holy Spirit come? When the Lord had received baptism from John, been crucified and died, and risen again from the dead, at that time He said to receive the Holy Spirit. Then when do you and I receive the Holy Spirit? No matter how much those who believe in Jesus believe in Jesus, when they do not know the gospel of the water and the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Spirit, they cannot receive the remission of sin. Then when does the Holy Spirit come upon our hearts? When you and I know and acknowledge the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit and have received the remission of sin in our hearts, the Holy Spirit comes upon our hearts.

That is why, after the Lord rose again, He breathed on them and said to receive the Holy Spirit, to receive the Holy Spirit. The reason I am saying this is that the talk about receiving the Holy Spirit is so crude and so chaotic that you cannot imagine how noisy it is. About receiving the Holy Spirit, some say that one must pray a lot to receive the Holy Spirit, some say that one receives the Holy Spirit by praying a lot in repentance, and some say that one must pray with fasting.

Some say that one does not know when one receives the Holy Spirit, that one receives Him someday while believing in Jesus, and some say that one must have hands laid on him. They say all sorts of things. There are far too many methods for receiving the Holy Spirit, and many people speak that way. It is done especially much in Catholicism. Among the Catholic faithful there are many people who take part in the Holy Spirit renewal movement.

Dear fellow believers, the things that Christianity today carries on noisily in its excitement are all being done in Catholicism. Mumbling and humming, in a low voice, sounds that no one can understand—all of it belongs to the same class. It is the kind of thing that very superstitious people do. How can it be called a sound mind to have no rational discernment but only an abundance of emotion, laughing one moment and weeping the next? Then when do we receive the Holy Spirit? We receive Him after receiving the remission of sin. It is after receiving the remission of sin. The Lord spoke in John 7:37 through 39. *"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus*

stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified." That is what He said.

Dear fellow believers, it is the word that when the Lord had not yet risen again, He had not yet given the Holy Spirit to people. It was the same with the disciples of Jesus. Peter, too, was a man who had confessed before Jesus, *"You are the Christ, the Son of the living God" (Matthew 16:16)*. He was one who had made that confession and believed, having received understanding for a while through God the Father. But did he not abandon Jesus and run away? Did he not deny Jesus? And that, too, face to face on the spot, saying, "I absolutely do not know such a man"—did he not deny Him? And after that, when the rooster crowed, he looked at the face of the Lord and wept. He wept because he remembered the word of the Lord, who had said, *"Before the rooster crows, you will deny Me three times" (Luke 22:61)*. Jesus knows what sin this man will commit, He knows how he breathes, He knows how he will act, He knows when he will die, and He knows all about how he will live. Our Lord knows everything, just as He knows all about what kind of people you and I are. This word of the passage is the word the Lord spoke, and the explanatory note put in parentheses is the part spoken by the Apostle John, who recorded the Gospel of John. Then what must you and I know now? Those who are here know it well and believe it well. Still, we speak for the sake of those who do not know, and in order to set our heads and our hearts in order. And we are speaking so that those who are still deceiving people with this matter of the Holy Spirit cannot deceive them any further, and we are speaking in order to teach those who still do not know.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The Holy Spirit, who comes upon the heart that has received the remission of sin

Dear fellow believers, if the Lord had not borne the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John, been crucified, and risen from the dead, He would not pour out the Holy Spirit. When did that Holy Spirit come upon those who believe in Jesus? The Lord poured Him out after He rose again. Today, after you and I received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Holy Spirit came upon our hearts. He came as a gift. So after the Lord rose again, He came to find the disciples. The disciples were afraid and had shut the doors tight, but the Lord came and stood in their midst. It was not that He opened the door and came in. Jesus simply appeared inside the room. The disciples were startled. Who could it be but Jesus? They probably thought it was a ghost. The disciples were startled, but since it was Jesus, they said, "Lord." When Thomas, who had not been there, said that even so he could not believe, the Lord came again eight days later and told him to put his hand into His side. It was because He had been pierced with a spear. To make sure of His death, a Roman soldier thrust a long spear hard into His side and then pulled it right out. When a person is alive, blood and water are mixed throughout the whole body, but after death the blood all collects to one side and the water pools to one side. So when His side was pierced with the spear, blood and water came out of it.. The Bible speaks of what happened when He was hanging on the Cross.

When the Lord rose again, He came to find the disciples, and the very first command He gave them was the word to receive the Holy Spirit. In order to do this work, the Lord came to this earth and did the work of salvation. He did this work in order to give life to you and me. It is because only then can we become

children of God. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God. A person who does not have the Spirit of God is not a child of God. No matter how much one believes in Jesus, the Holy Spirit does not come upon a person who has sin in his heart. It does not matter whether one is a pastor, a priest, a layman, or whoever. It does not matter even if one is a woman called a saint. The Holy Spirit does not come upon a person who has not received the remission of sin. That is what it means.

And the Lord said in John 20:22–23, *"And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, 'Receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained.'"* What did He say in verse 21, the verse before it? He said, *"So Jesus said to them again, 'Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you.'"* Just as God the Father sent the Son, Jesus Christ, to this earth, our Lord, after rising again, told them to receive the Holy Spirit and then said that as the Father had sent Him to this earth, He also sends them to this earth.

Along with that, it is the word that He gave the authority, *"If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained" (John 20:23)*. What exactly is this authority? It is the authority to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Because we believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit, we can preach this gospel, and without going through a person who preaches this gospel, no one can receive the remission of sin. No one in this world, not a single person, can receive the remission of sin.

Then who sent these preachers of the gospel? God sent them. That is why it is tremendously important. No matter how famous a pastor may be in the world, without this gospel he is nothing but a religionist. If it is a matter of pressing a few coins into someone's hand and telling him to go and buy something to eat,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

that is making spiritual beggars; it is not missions, and it is nothing at all. In the kingdom of God it is the very least of things.

The rivers of living water that flow out of his heart

Dear fellow believers, a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is one who has received the Holy Spirit, and because he has received the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit comes as a gift. Rivers of living water flow in his heart. That rivers of living water flow out means that one becomes a lifeline of life. It means that one becomes a person who can share life and supply the living water of life. It is not the kind of thing certain cult leaders do, handing out the water they have washed their feet in and saying that if you drink that water, sickness is healed. Dear fellow believers, do you know how many strange things there are in this world? Even now, if you pass through a certain area, there is a prayer house there. Its director draws water from a spring, has the cult leader wash his body and feet in it, and then pours that wash water into a big water tank. And they say that if people receive that water and drink it, sickness is healed and they receive blessings. There are many such things in this area, too. You might say it is a lie, but it is a fact. I learned of it once when I went to the home of a certain couple who used to come to our church. Calling it living water, they were fetching that water and drinking it. When I asked what water it was, they said it was the water the cult leader had washed in, and that they brought it home and drank it. So at that time I said that if they were really going to do that, they had better go and drink the water I had washed my feet in, so why drink the water that man had washed his feet in? Then again, I have no water to give from washing my feet, either. That is because every day I wash

carelessly, dipping my feet in once and pulling them right out. Rather than talking about such things, the point is that when a person who has the gospel of the water and the Spirit preaches the gospel, if one believes those words he receives the remission of sin, and if he does not believe, he does not receive the remission of sin.

Dear fellow believers, who has the authority of the remission of sin? It is with Jesus, and it is with the disciples of Jesus. Then who are the disciples of Jesus? They are those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. So if someone makes light of those who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit and harasses them, I say right away, "That person has resolved to be cursed; he is trying to secure himself a seat in the hottest spot of hell." I say clearly that if a person rejects the gospel to the end and tramples on the people of God, that person and his descendants will be cursed for generations. You might ask how someone who claims to be a servant of God can curse people, but if one does not accept the gospel and keeps on doing that, that curse actually comes upon him. It is the same with your faith. If someone torments and oppresses your faith too much, that person is utterly ruined. There is a limit, and if one goes beyond it, he suffers for it as it is. If you look into history at emperors like Nero, who tormented the apostles, and the people connected with them, they were all cursed while they were alive on this earth. There were even some who lost their minds and went mad. If I told all of that, there would not be enough time, so I will stop here.

Dear fellow believers, how do we receive the Holy Spirit? The Holy Spirit is received as a gift after one has received the remission of sin. He is not received by shouting "Lord!" three times, praying, and making a commotion in one's excitement, nor by praying in repentance. But countless people today are

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

doing exactly that. Some say that if one prays earnestly to the point of anguish, he receives the Holy Spirit, and some preach outright that if one prays in repentance until his intestines are torn apart, the Holy Spirit comes and tongues come. It is terribly, terribly wrong.

Dear fellow believers, if you and I do not preach the gospel, all the people of the whole world go to hell. That is why the responsibility of you and me is great, too. If someone who has this gospel only looks after his own household, only attends to his own things, and only takes care of his own interests, that person is a hireling. He is a thief. Even among those who have the gospel of the water and the Spirit there are many such people. Did they not all pack their bags and leave the church? Such people should be sent off cleanly. It means that to such a person we should say, "Is there something I can help you with? Go and live well. When there is someone like you, it is hard to preach the gospel. Even if you earn money, what more would there be than to drink and carouse with it?" and send him off. Dear fellow believers, is that so, or is it not? That much is obvious; what else would there be?

It means: I am satisfied even without doing as you do; I do the work of God. Dear fellow believers, no matter how fine the liquor and how fine the side dishes one eats, would it be more joyful than preaching the gospel to a soul? There is nothing pleasant about such a trivial thing. As for me, I cannot even drink liquor, because my health is poor.

Dear fellow believers, the joy the world gives lasts only for a moment. It touches the instincts of this flesh and makes one feel something for a moment, but it cannot give joy of the heart. The joy of *"out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:38)* is the delight of the heart. It is the joy and the gladness of the heart. It means that the things of the world cannot

give that joy. Even delicious food feels good while you are eating it, but does that feeling continue after you have eaten? If you ate a good buffet meal at lunch and felt content and excited, do you still feel good because of that food even after evening has passed? In the evening you have to eat dinner again and find a new good feeling. If in the evening you made this flesh comfortable and content, when you sleep one night and get up the next morning, do you feel good as a continuation of that? You do not. It is only for a moment.

So the Holy Spirit comes upon those who have received the remission of sin by believing in this gospel of the water and the Spirit. If one has not received the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit absolutely does not come. If something like the Holy Spirit comes and one speaks in tongues, it is a demon that has come. It is the same as a demon coming upon a shaman, or as when Christians who have not received the remission of sin and have sin in their hearts speak in tongues, see visions, and feel trembling in their bodies. In that case, one is possessed by a demon. Seen in the light of the word today, how many of those who believe in Jesus are possessed by demons? Dear fellow believers, there are many who are possessed by demons. It is only that it does not feel real to you; there really are many who are possessed by demons.

The Holy Spirit comes upon our hearts, which have received the remission of sin, and leads us.

Now let us give one more testimony and finish. Let us read Acts 1:4 and 5 once. *"And being assembled together with them, He commanded them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the Promise of the Father, 'which,' He said, 'you have heard*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

from Me; for John truly baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now.'"

This is what happened after Jesus was crucified and died and rose again. The apostles were gathered in a room, afraid. It is the record that, when their hearts had shrunk because it looked as if they would be seized and killed, Jesus spoke these words. After the resurrection Jesus appeared and commanded them *"not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the Promise of the Father, 'which,' He said, 'you have heard from Me'" (Acts 1:4)*. What is that? It is the Holy Spirit. It means that He would pour out the Holy Spirit. Because He had said that He would pour out the Holy Spirit, He told them to wait.

John truly baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit—it is the word that they would receive the baptism of the Holy Spirit. What does that event have to do with you and me today? Dear fellow believers, it is from this day that the Holy Spirit officially and universally came down on this earth and officially worked in the hearts of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It means that, counting the days from after Jesus rose from the dead, the Holy Spirit came down fifty days later. After the Lord rose again, He appeared to the disciples and said precisely, *"You shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now" (Acts 1:5)*.

Dear fellow believers, we receive the Holy Spirit after receiving the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Through the Holy Spirit we come to know that we have no sin. When we understand with our heads and acknowledge in our hearts, "Ah, the Lord bore sin with the baptism He received from John like this, and was crucified and died," the Holy Spirit says, "Your faith is right," and puts His seal on our hearts. He sealed us at the time we acknowledged the gospel. This is not theory. So it is that we receive the Holy Spirit

after we have received the remission of sin; now let us look in Acts chapter 2 at the scene in which they received the fullness of the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost. *"When the Day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. Then there appeared to them divided tongues, as of fire, and one sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance" (Acts 2:1–4).*

It says that when the Day of Pentecost had come, there came a sound as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting; divided tongues, as of fire, appeared to them and sat upon each of them; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. What was the reason? It was because God had planned it in advance. When the Lord was on this earth, He said that it was better for them if He went to the Father, and that if He went, the Father would send the Holy Spirit. He spoke those words in the four Gospels. For after the Lord had gone, if there were no Holy Spirit in our hearts, either, how would we be led by God, preach the word of God, realize the will of God, and how would we preach and serve the gospel?

So this word, "I am with you always," is the word that He is with us through the Holy Spirit. God the Father planned our salvation, His Son Jesus Christ came to this earth and accomplished the plan of the Father, and the Holy Spirit is the One who testifies that that plan has been accomplished. So when a preacher of the gospel correctly conveys this word of the Bible and people believe with their hearts the word they have heard, the Holy Spirit testifies. He says, "Your faith is right." And then the Holy Spirit comes upon that heart and leads us.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Receiving the Holy Spirit and receiving the fullness of the Holy Spirit

But since it says here that they received the fullness of the Holy Spirit, the question arises as to what, then, receiving the Holy Spirit and receiving the fullness are. Theology is originally related to philosophy, and it is a discipline of asking, answering, and thinking. God promised in the Old Testament, *"I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh" (Joel 2:28)*, and that is why the risen Lord told the disciples to wait for what He had promised.

At that time, at Pentecost, it can be considered that the Holy Spirit came completely in fullness, that is, more fully than He came upon us. The reason it was so at that time is that, because it was an age of such severe persecution, it can be said that the Holy Spirit completely took hold of the personality, the emotions, the thoughts, and the actions of the apostles.

Fullness does not mean losing one's mind and going mad; it means being completely seized by the Spirit of God. You and I, too, in our life of faith, often live at times when our very thoughts are completely seized by God, so that not even a word of the things of the world comes to mind. It is the word that refers to that state of being seized. Since it says that one receives the Holy Spirit and also receives fullness, we must receive the fullness of the Holy Spirit.

Living while answering one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs is also a matter of receiving the fullness of the Holy Spirit. When at a retreat we learn praise songs, have fellowship together, hear spiritual testimonies, and share with one another, our hearts become full through the Spirit of God.

To sum up, it is like this. You and I received the Holy Spirit at the moment we received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and the fullness of the

Holy Spirit is received while living the life of faith and testifying about the gospel to other people. It must be summed up like this. If it is not summed up like this, countless people are deceived. Even now far too many are being deceived. When there is time someday, I will have to talk about the gifts as well. So who receives the Holy Spirit? Those who have received the remission of sin by believing in the word of the water and the Spirit receive Him. In the hearts of such people the living water of the Holy Spirit is flowing. Through such people, people can hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit, receive the remission of sin, and go to the kingdom of God. It is in order to give you this word that I have given you the word of the Gospel of John today.

Even though you and I may seem to know it well, knowledge that only oneself knows is nothing. In fact, if someone asks a few questions and asks again and again whether it is a fact, we get confused, wonder whether we have known it wrongly, and quickly collapse. So, as I said a while ago, we must have clear knowledge, and to live the life of faith we must know clearly and have a clear faith.

Today there are many people who are trying to receive the Holy Spirit. Those who believe in Catholicism try to receive the Holy Spirit, those who believe in Christianity try to receive the Holy Spirit, and those who believe in Islam try to receive the Holy Spirit. Dear fellow believers, what do shamans try to receive? Do they not try to make contact with demons? Trying to receive the Holy Spirit without the remission of sin is exactly the same as a person who believes in superstition trying to make contact with demons. So if one believes in Jesus but does not receive the remission of sin, he does not receive the Holy Spirit but comes to receive a demon; but if one believes in Jesus, and believes in the word of the water and the Spirit and receives the remission of sin, and knows the word properly and believes it in

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

his heart, he receives the Holy Spirit as a gift and comes to live the life of faith.

You cannot imagine how hard it is to set this one thing in order. People do not know this fact. Speaking of how one receives the Holy Spirit, they tell absurd stories, saying that the Holy Spirit came because they prayed, or that the Holy Spirit came when someone laid hands on them. It means that that is not the Holy Spirit. Dear fellow believers, if there is sin in your heart, you have not received the Holy Spirit now. Is there sin in your heart, or is there not? There is not. You have no sin. Because you have no sin, the Holy Spirit has come upon you.

God, who works through those who have received the remission of sin

Dear fellow believers, the Bible says, *"No one can say that Jesus is Lord except by the Holy Spirit" (1 Corinthians 12:3)*. If we believe in Jesus but have not received the remission of sin and so the Holy Spirit is not in us, we may be able to say in words, "Jesus is my Lord, my absolute Savior," but we cannot confess it with the heart. We cannot confess it that way with the heart. Only a person who has received the remission of sin comes to make that confession.

Then what difference is there between those people and us? There is a tremendous difference. Can one receive the remission of sin without going through you and me, or not? One cannot. Anyone can preach the gospel. Do I not always say so? I say that all of you can preach the gospel, too. But can you nurture a person? Nurturing is absolutely not easy. Those who packed their bags and left this place say, "We can go out and start a church, too," but while saying a word may be easy, preaching

the gospel to people and nurturing them is not so easy. Even if one can do it, God must establish him and hold him up, God must do the work through him, and God must make him testify to the gospel and work with the word and with power; it does not happen by itself.

So there are many people who try to rise to a high position after believing in Jesus, but what happens when such people become leaders? They become none other than Jeroboam. One hundred percent, they become Jeroboam. What did Jeroboam do after he became king of the nation of Israel? Did he not immediately set up golden calves and serve them?

Dear fellow believers, what is the difference between a person who has received the Holy Spirit and one who has not? The difference is that people receive the remission of sin through the person who has received the Holy Spirit. If you have not received the remission of sin, even if you preach the gospel, other people cannot receive the remission of sin. If you have received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, when you preach that gospel, people receive the remission of sin. Otherwise, they can never receive the remission of sin. Unless one himself believes, even if he preaches the gospel to others, he cannot make them receive the remission of sin. Of course, one can pass on knowledge. One can tell them the theory. In the past I, too, heard a lot of the general talk that if one believes in Jesus he has no sin. I majored in theology, but I cannot say that I learned a great deal with the three years I studied at seminary. With three years of study one knows only a very little of that discipline; to learn it properly, one would have to study for about ten years.

When you and I, those who have received the remission of sin, those who have received the Holy Spirit, preach the gospel, people receive the remission of sin. If we do not preach the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

gospel, people do not receive the remission of sin. That is why we are preaching the gospel. It means that you and I are that precious right now. What did the Lord say? He said that as the Father had sent Him to this earth, He also sends us. Did He say so, or did He not? Did the Lord send us into this world to preach the gospel, or did He not? Do people receive the remission of sin through us, or do they not? Even if you and I are somewhat lacking, God does the work through you and me.

If there are people in the world who boast of being quite something, tell them to try putting out a book. Some say this book is repetitive. When I asked someone to revise Volume 1 of the English book, word reached me that a certain person, without telling me directly, said that this was not a book and yet I was trying to publish it as a book. So I said this: "Yes, in your eyes it is not a book; by your standards it would not be a book. But you must know clearly: through this book countless people all over the world receive the remission of sin. Go and pass this on; he should at least know it. And you, too, read this and believe it." Do you know how hard it is to preach repetitive sermons? Anyone who has tried it knows how hard it is to say the same thing every day.

Dear fellow believers, God has sent you and me to this earth. He is doing the work through you and me right now. Is this fact clear, or is it not? Dear fellow believers, look at the work Pastor Galvão is doing in Brazil. I told them to send books there. We must send them again. The person who is now trying to join hands with Pastor Galvão is said to be a pastor of the Full Gospel Church, but that person only belongs to that denomination; he is not a person who has inherited its ideology. The advocates of the Full Gospel Church's doctrine of the Holy Spirit do not accept our gospel. They reject it. Once one is steeped in that ideology, he cannot accept ours. How many people will receive the

remission of sin through Pastor Galvão? The few hundred people we have here in our country are nothing. I do not know exactly how many saints there are in Brazil, but as they hold meetings and the gospel spreads, and once it catches fire someday, reaching ten million people would be no great matter, either. If ten million people have received the remission of sin, reaching twenty million is not difficult, and reaching fifty million is not difficult, either. And it keeps spreading on to the neighboring countries.

We are the sowers of the seed right now. God is doing the work through us, and He says that only those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are those who have received the Holy Spirit. I have finished the word. I give thanks before God. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 2 by Paul C. Jong

Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water

< John 7:37-39 >

"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified."

"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water"

Today we have looked at this word. On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus cried out and said, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water."* The Jews have three great feasts, and the feast spoken of here is one of them, the Feast of Tabernacles. There are various feasts, but at any rate, on the last day of that great feast, Jesus stood and cried out. He said, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water."* Did the Lord not say that out of the heart of the one who believes in Him would flow rivers of living water? Taken literally, this word means that rivers of living water flow out of the heart of the one

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

who believes.

But Jesus, while speaking this word, said, *"as the Scripture has said."* It means that it is as was spoken in the Old Testament. Then what was said in the Old Testament? Let us read Isaiah 43:14 through 21 together. "*Thus says the LORD, your Redeemer, The Holy One of Israel: 'For your sake I will send to Babylon, And bring them all down as fugitives— The Chaldeans, who rejoice in their ships. I am the LORD, your Holy One, The Creator of Israel, your King.' Thus says the LORD, who makes a way in the sea And a path through the mighty waters, Who brings forth the chariot and horse, The army and the power (They shall lie down together, they shall not rise; They are extinguished, they are quenched like a wick): 'Do not remember the former things, Nor consider the things of old. Behold, I will do a new thing, Now it shall spring forth; Shall you not know it? I will even make a road in the wilderness And rivers in the desert. The beast of the field will honor Me, The jackals and the ostriches, Because I give waters in the wilderness And rivers in the desert, To give drink to My people, My chosen. This people I have formed for Myself; They shall declare My praise.'*"

The Lord said that He would make the Chaldeans, who attacked the nation of Israel, flee in the ships they had come in. Also, when the king of Egypt came with his army to seize and kill the people of Israel, God drowned them all in the Red Sea. The LORD God, who made that army of Egypt be extinguished like a wick going out, speaks like this: "*Do not remember the former things, Nor consider the things of old. Behold, I will do a new thing, Now it shall spring forth; Shall you not know it? I will even make a road in the wilderness And rivers in the desert" (Isaiah 43:18–19)*. Just as the Lord gave water in the wilderness to those who believe in God and gave them water to drink even in the desert, He said that He would make rivers flow out of the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

hearts of those who have received the remission of sin by believing in the righteousness of the Lord.

Here it says, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water,"* and it says that these rivers of living water refer to the Holy Spirit. Looking at what follows in the passage, it says, *"But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive" (John 7:39)*. It is the word that rivers of living water flow out of the hearts of you and me, of those who believe.

The heart of a sinner is like a desert

Even if one believes in Jesus, rivers of living water do not flow out of the heart of a person who has sin in his heart. Seen by God, who made rivers in the desert and waters in the wilderness, the heart of a sinner is like a desert and like a wilderness. A sinner feels a parched thirst in his heart, and, as if he had lost his way in the wilderness and there were no road, he is confused, wanders, and suffers. It means that the hearts of sinners are like that.

But now He said, *"Do not remember the former things, Nor consider the things of old. Behold, I will do a new thing, Now it shall spring forth" (Isaiah 43:18–19)*, and that very new thing has appeared to you and me today. What is this? In the past we had not been saved, but now we have been saved, and in the heart of a person who has been saved the Holy Spirit is present. It is the word that in the heart of a person in whom the Holy Spirit is present, the peace of having no sin flows because of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and this gospel flows through us even to other people so that they, too, come to drink it. Rivers of living water flow out.

There are times when you find it very hard living on this

earth, and those who prayed a lot in repentance before being born again will know this. It is painful because one has sin, but after praying in repentance and weeping and shedding many tears, one feels something refreshing in his chest. They say one feels a pleasant sensation that is called relieving stress, what medicine calls catharsis. But when that time passes, one goes back to the way he was. But a person who has received the remission of sin will feel that rivers of living water are flowing in his heart. Although we live on this earth with a deficient body, heart, and mind, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit we have met the Lord and received the remission of all our sins with eternal atonement, and so we have no sin in our hearts. Because we have no sin, our hearts are at ease, and because our hearts are at ease, peace flows like a river. Dear fellow believers, it is because we have no sin that peace flows.

The peace that flows in the heart that has received the remission of sin

This river is the gospel, and in the heart of a person who has received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Holy Spirit is present. In the heart of a person in whom the Holy Spirit is present, because the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit governs that heart, peace overflows in that heart. It is at peace at all times. It is only that one worries and gets irritated for nothing over useless things all by himself; in reality, there is absolutely no anguish in the heart because of sin.

There is no more of the heart becoming a desert or becoming a wilderness, as before, and feeling rough and parched. When you are very thirsty, do you not want to drink water? But just as

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

one is very satisfied after drinking water when thirsty, our hearts never again fall into anguish because of sin. At all times, by looking to the Lord and ruminating on the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has given, the heart comes to be at peace. It is at peace. And this peace overflows and has an effect even on other people. This is spreading the gospel.

When one meets the Lord through the gospel of the water and the Spirit and receives the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit is present in his heart and his heart comes to be at peace. Once one is at peace, from then on he does worry over the work of serving the Lord, but he never again worries because of sin. Why is that? It is because our Lord came to this earth, bore our sins once and for all by receiving baptism from John, was crucified, rose from the dead, and removed our sins forever. Thus the rivers of living water, that is, the peace of never again worrying because of sin, overflow in the heart. Dear fellow believers, do you have that peace of the remission of sin in your hearts?

Dear fellow believers, if one believes in Jesus but sin is in his heart, there is no peace. Even if he believes every day, there is no peace. What happens when there is no peace? The Apostle Paul said, *"Rejoice always, pray without ceasing, in everything give thanks" (1 Thessalonians 5:16–18),* but modern Christians who have sin in their hearts live the opposite way. Instead of rejoicing always, they are always irritated, and instead of giving thanks in everything, they are irritated in everything. The Apostle Paul said to rejoice always, to pray without ceasing, and to give thanks in everything, but those who have sin in their hearts are always anxious in heart, their hearts are like a desert, they are tormented by thirst, they fall into anguish, and they have no peace of heart.

Dear fellow believers, the Lord said, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the*

Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:37–38). It is the word to come to the Lord and drink. We must drink the truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has given. Did the Lord not remove all the sin of us, mankind? Did the Lord not remove all your sins with the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

By faith we drink the living water that the Lord gives

So all we have to do is drink. He has made it all ready. When summer comes, do not the married sisters, the young sisters, or the workers make delicious drinks at the table? Do they not freeze watermelon and make watermelon punch, float ice in it, pour in plenty of water, and make it sweet, and ladle out a gourdful to each of us when it is very hot in summer? When they prepare it so perfectly and bring it, all we have to do is drink it, is it not so? Is it not so good and refreshing just to drink it?

The Lord speaks to us in the same way. If anyone thirsts, if you are having a hard time because of sin, come to Me and drink; I have removed all your sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit; come and drink—that is the word. We drink by faith. Out of the heart of the one who believes in Me rivers of living water will overflow; it is the word that peace overflows.

To believe in the Lord, it is not enough only to believe in Jesus. Believing in Jesus is the basic thing, and one must believe the work that Jesus did after coming to this earth. What did Jesus do? Did He do the work of removing the sin of us, mankind? Did He bear and remove our sins only on the Cross? In order to remove the sin of man, the Lord put on the body of a man and was born on this earth by borrowing the body of a woman, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

in order to bear the sin of man, He received baptism from John the Baptist and bore the sin of man. And by bearing the sin of the world and being crucified, He received the judgment for sin in place of man, and He died in place of man and rose again, and so became the Savior of mankind.

So, by believing in the Lord, we must know this fact. Why was the Lord crucified, why did the Lord put on the body of a man and come to this earth, why did the Lord receive baptism from John the Baptist—was it not all for you and me? That is the point. Knowing that it was all for you and me, drink; believe—that is the word. He said to drink this faith; if anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink; if he drinks, out of the heart of the one who believes in Me will flow rivers of living water; peace will overflow. When the remission of sin comes, the heart is at peace. Are we not without sin? Though we must do the work we have to do on this earth, are we not without sin? Dear fellow believers, having no sin—this is a tremendous thing.

Among the praise songs we sing, there is one that goes, "In the desert a spring will overflow; in the desert flowers will bloom and give forth fragrance." What exactly does that desert refer to? It refers to the hearts of you and me. In the past, before you and I met the Lord, before we believed in the Lord, who removed all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, before we received the remission of sin, what were our hearts like? Were they not like a desert? Always thirsty; even if water is brought and poured in, it soaks it up as fast as it is poured and is thirsty again right away; even if it is brought and poured in dozens of times a day, there is no end.

If the sand of a desert is about three thousand meters deep, even if all the water of a dam is poured out on it, the sand soaks it all up and no water shows on the surface. And when the sun comes out, it beats down fiercely from above, so that no plant

can live. That "in the desert a spring will overflow; in the desert flowers will bloom and give forth fragrance" means that the remission of sin comes upon the hearts of you and me, and through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has given, through our faith, the peace of the heart overflows.

"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink." He says: Do you, too, really want to gain joy in your hearts, do you want to be saved from sin, then believe in Me; I am your Savior. He says: Though I am the Son of God, I am your Savior and the One who made this universe, and not only that, but for your sake I received baptism from John the Baptist and bore your sins once and for all.

And He says: Bearing the sin of the world like that, I went to the Cross and was nailed to it and died in your place; I died and rose again and saved you; I am your Savior. Dear fellow believers, the Lord is our Master. He is the Savior who saved us from sin. The Lord is our God. He is our Master and the Almighty. He is our Shepherd; He is the Savior who bore our sins in His own body with the baptism He received from John, was judged on the Cross once and for all, died, and rose again, and so saved us from sin; and He is our God. He is the One who leads us, protects us, and blesses us. By believing in Him we obtain salvation.

By faith we drink the living water. When we drink the living water that the Lord gives, when we believe in our hearts that the Lord has removed all our sins, the living water comes upon our hearts, and that is none other than the Holy Spirit. When the Holy Spirit is in our hearts, we are never again in thirst. We never again have a hard time because of sin. It means that although there is worrying and stress over how to serve the Lord, at least one no longer fears because of his own sin, because of his going to hell. Is that so, or is it not?

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The hearts of those who have received the remission of sin are at peace

Dear fellow believers, when we look at the book of Isaiah, it says, *"I will even make a road in the wilderness And rivers in the desert" (Isaiah 43:19)*; the beast of the field, the jackals and the ostriches, will honor Me, because I give waters in the wilderness and rivers in the desert, to give drink to My people, My chosen. In the past, did we not fail to know how our hearts receive the remission of sin? Even though we believed in Jesus, were we not unable to know? So He said that He would make a road in the wilderness. The wilderness is a wide open field. There are no houses, no roads, no utility poles, and no buildings. If you go to such a place, it is a great worry which direction to head in. If you are not careful, you freeze to death. It is hot in the daytime and cold at night, so if you do not solve that problem quickly, you die.

It says, *"I will even make a road in the wilderness And rivers in the desert" (Isaiah 43:19)*, and you and I were born on this earth without knowing where to go, and we lived without knowing where the road was, why I was born on this earth, what the purpose of my birth was, or why I had to live. But the Lord made rivers in the desert and gave the remission of sin abundantly to our hearts, and so made it so that through faith we can never have sin again.

Jackals refer to the beasts that roam the fields. They are so fierce that they eat rotten meat, and they eat one another, are caught, and die. Look at the ostrich, too. How much the ostrich lives by its own strength! The ostrich is a bird, that is, a fowl, but it does not fly; it runs with the soles of its feet on the ground, and they say its speed is eighty kilometers an hour. They say that when a beast like a leopard comes after it, it runs in a hurry at

eighty kilometers an hour. It does not fly; it runs, and at that speed. In the city even a car cannot go faster than sixty kilometers an hour, so how fast is eighty kilometers? The point is that you and I lived like that. Did we not try to live by our own strength in everything, without living by faith, building up our own strength as if building up the leg muscles and lifting dumbbells?

We graduated from a good university, got hold of connections with friends and connections with power, and, riding those connections well, tried to become rich and live well; even after entering a company, we lived building up our own strength like that in order to ride the connections well. But, dear fellow believers, the ostrich has a very low intelligence. Even while running, if there is a stick standing that is taller than itself, it stops abruptly, backs away, and runs off. Regardless of bulk, at any rate, if something is taller than itself, it runs away unconditionally. It is because the ostrich itself is tall.

In fact, the ostrich is much taller than a person. Once I bought two ostriches to try riding them, but they are so dirty that one cannot ride them. They defecate so filthily that it is impossible, and secondly, they do not recognize their owner. I said, “Ostrich, so you have come to live here; let’s live well together; I have brought you food; I have also brought some of the grass you like; will you have some?” but this fellow ignored me, stood up tall and looked at me, and since I was smaller than it, it lunged to peck my head with its beak. So I stood holding the yard broom close behind my back to make myself taller, and then it was thoroughly frightened and ran away.

That foolish ostrich is none other than you and me. It means that in the past we tried to live only by our own strength like that. We must not live by our own strength; we must believe in God. After receiving the remission of sin, we must believe in God and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

pray, and we must believe the word that He will do it for us; then God helps us. He helps when we believe. He does not help when we do not believe. Dear fellow believers, the remission of sin, too, is received by faith. *"I will even make a road in the wilderness And rivers in the desert. The beast of the field will honor Me, The jackals and the ostriches" (Isaiah 43:19–20)*. It is the word that although we were beings like the beasts of the field and like ostriches, when we come to know the Lord by believing in Him, we come to honor the Lord. It says, *"Because I give waters in the wilderness And rivers in the desert, To give drink to My people, My chosen. This people I have formed for Myself; They shall declare My praise" (Isaiah 43:20–21)*. Praise is a matter of speaking well of someone. It means that He intends to make us speak well of God.

So the Lord said in John 7:37–38, *"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.'"* He is saying that in the hearts of those who have received the remission of sin there is peace and the Holy Spirit is present, and that the gospel is spread through those who have received the remission of sin. This word has been fulfilled in you and me today. What is important is the fact that our having received the remission of sin today by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and in the Lord is the fulfillment of the word that the Lord promised in the days of the Old Testament. It has been fulfilled in the hearts of you and me.

In the hearts of those who have received the remission of sin, rivers of living water overflow. Since we have no sin, is it not refreshing? If there is sin, it is a desert. It is like chewing sand. It is too hard. But if there is no sin, even if there is no cow in the stable, no car, no house, even if one cannot run a big business

and the crops in the field do not do well, those who have received the remission of sin are at peace in their hearts. It was said that I will rejoice in the God of my salvation, in the LORD who saved me. The hearts of those who have received the remission of sin are at peace. Storms rage and there are complicated matters, but in the end they are at peace. It is because they have no sin, because they believe.

"He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water"

Dear fellow believers, I met the Lord, and I came to know and believe the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord gave, and I received the remission of sin. Having received the remission of sin, you cannot imagine how much at peace my heart is. My heart was so very much at peace that, although I used to weigh 53 kg, suddenly I gained 10 kg and weighed 63 kg, and then, in the days when I was not doing much of the work of God but only doing a certain amount, I suddenly became 70 kg. I went up from 53 kg to 70 kg, and then I kept going up past 70 kg, too. Later my knees hurt when I walked, and thinking that this would not do, I consciously try to cut down, and I try never to go over 70 kg. But 68 kg is my usual weight, and after I go home and eat ramyeon three or four times, I go over 70 kg. Every time I come back from a meeting, I gain 2 to 3 kg.

In the old days I went to meetings all the time, and at night the young workers ate so much ramyeon that we boiled the ramyeon in a bucket. We would fetch water in a bucket, put it on the gas burner, bring it to a rolling boil, and throw in about ten packets of ramyeon and boil them; but while the ramyeon

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

was cooking, we held the prayer meeting so long that the noodles swelled up, and what should have filled only half the bucket swelled and rose all the way to the top. And they ate it so heartily, saying how delicious it was: they ate a big dinner, then held the meeting, then ate again, and the last thing they ate before going to bed was ramyeon. They said they were not satisfied unless they ate ramyeon, and even when they ate until they were full and went to bed, they were young then, so they digested it well. Because there is no sin, I am telling you, the weight went up by some 17 kg.

One of our evangelists, too, when I first met him, was a very lean man weighing about 53 kg, like I used to be. We met in the garden of a university campus. There are countless episodes, as many as the stars in the night sky, but I waited for him to go to the cafeteria for lunch and come out after eating, caught hold of him, and we sat on the campus lawn and talked. I divided a sheet of notebook paper into four sections, wrote on it as I went, and laid out the word of God and talked. I preached the gospel. So he believed. He received the remission of sin. From then on his heart became at peace, and from then on he began to put on weight. Some couples eat even more and yet do not put on weight. There are such couples once in a while. No matter how much they eat, they stay bone-thin and do not put on weight, so I do not know where they are storing it away.

The word in John chapter 7, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water"* has exactly this meaning. It is the word that by believing in the Lord and in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we receive the remission of sin, and the peace of the heart flows out like a river. Also, because we have received the remission of sin through this faith, when we preach the gospel, everyone who drinks this water

gains refreshment of heart, the remission of sin, and peace, and becomes a child of God—that is the word. What an amazing word this is! When the Lord was on this earth, He said, *"He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water"* and He spoke this word meaning that the peace of the heart overflows.

The salvation accomplished by the risen Lord

But it said, *"For the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified" (John 7:39)*. The disciples did not yet have the Holy Spirit. But because the Lord had received baptism from John on this earth, was He not crucified? On the Cross He suffered all the sufferings, said, "It is finished, it is finished," and breathed His last. People laid Jesus in the rock tomb of a rich man. And they blocked the entrance with a great stone. They blocked it with a stone that took three or four men to roll, and Roman soldiers guarded that rock tomb. They had it guarded in several layers. They guarded it because Jesus had said that He would die and rise again.

But in the night an angel came down from heaven and a great earthquake occurred, and the guards were on the point of fainting and all ran away. When the angel came and rolled away the stone door, Jesus had already risen; He left the linen cloths that had wrapped His body lying as they were, folded the handkerchief that had wrapped His head and put it in a separate place, and came out and appeared to the disciples.

He appeared to Mary. When Mary came looking for Jesus and was weeping because the body of Jesus was not there, the Lord asked, "Woman, whom are you seeking?" and Mary answered, "Jesus was lying here; I am looking for my Lord," and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the Lord said, “It is I.” Mary did not know at first, but later she knew. So she told the disciples, but the disciples did not believe, either. But while the disciples were inside a room, without even opening the door, He suddenly appeared before the disciples. When He said, “Have you been well? Have you eaten?” they were all startled and yet relieved, and they even touched Him.

But a disciple named Thomas, who had not been there, could not believe in his heart even after eight days had passed. He doubted with a suspicious eye, wondering whether it was a ghost or whether it was being shown now as a three-dimensional image. So Jesus said, put your finger into My side once; the mark of the spear is still there; put it in here; and He told him to stretch out his hand and put it into His side. When He said, will you believe now, Thomas put it in and found that the mark of the spear was there and everything was there, and yet Jesus had risen. If it were you or I, with a hole that big in the body, we could not come back to life. But Jesus rose again with the marks of the nails still in His hands as they were. So when He said, believe, Thomas said, my Lord, I believe, and the Lord said that those who have not seen and yet believe are blessed. That is how Jesus saved us from sin.

We become full of the Holy Spirit when we serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit

By believing in this Lord, we receive the remission of sin and can preach it to other people as well. Through the gospel that we preach, countless people come to receive the remission of sin. Because the rivers of living water overflow through us, the rivers of living water overflow not only when we preach the gospel and testify to the word, but in our lives as well. So everyone who

meets us receives the remission of sin.

Everyone who comes into contact with our books receives the remission of sin, and so when mission reports are given, so much of that news comes in. This is exactly that word. I received the remission of sin and preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit to you, and you, too, are now preaching this gospel. You, too, come to eat a lot after receiving the remission of sin, do you not? The first symptom is that you come to eat a lot. You ate a lot even when you were not saved, but you come to eat even more than that, and you digest it better, too. Then, after some time passes and your faith becomes somewhat firm and grows, you come to be entrusted with a lot of work. When you are entrusted with a lot of work, you cannot eat much, and you lose some weight, too. The peace is not as great as it used to be, either. It is only to the extent of having no sin; peace does not overflow and so on. It is a little like that only when we testify to the word, and the rest of the time it is a headache. In a way, one cannot even tell well whether he has received the remission of sin or not, and there are times when one is more troubled than when he had not received the remission of sin. There are times when one feels he will die from the hardship while working. Still, what does not change is that we have no sin, that however deficient we are, we have no sin, the fact that the Lord bore it all and removed it all. So the rivers of living water are still overflowing in our hearts, and they are full.

The fullness of the Holy Spirit comes when we testify to the gospel of the water and the Spirit, when we serve the gospel, when we do the work of God by faith, when we believe in God. But if we sink into the thoughts of the human flesh and work, and live by the thoughts of the flesh, if we do not live by faith, we are not full of the Holy Spirit; we have received the remission of sin, but we are irritated and in pain. So if we know the word

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

of the Lord well and know that this word has that meaning, the Holy Spirit, who is in your hearts, will take care of everything and lead you. I give thanks. Dear fellow believers, is that so, or is it not? The Lord saved us and made us praise the Lord. He made us speak well of the Lord. I am truly so very thankful. Another week has already gone by, but you cannot imagine how thankful I am.

Having no sin is so good, and it is such happiness. We must know that this word has that meaning and live that way. I have finished the word. Thank you. ✉

Sermon 3 by Paul C. Jong

The Holy Spirit, who refreshes the heart

< John 7:37-39 >

"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified."

The word about the Holy Spirit spoken on the last day of the feast

Today I intend to share the word about the Holy Spirit from the word of John 7:37 through 39. Jesus went up to Jerusalem for the feast of the Jews and preached this word, and people were trying to seize Jesus and kill Him. But it was not yet the time for Him to die. Jesus is arrested at the time of the feast of the Passover, suffers humiliation, and is put to death. This feast was the Feast of Tabernacles, before the Passover, and He spoke like this: *"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.'"* And here, as an additional explanation, this explanatory note was added: *"But*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified."

Jesus said, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink"* and He said that if one comes to the Lord and eats and drinks the water of salvation that the Lord gives, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:38)*; the question is what this word means. This word is the word about the Holy Spirit, whom the Lord sends after bearing our sins with the baptism He received from John on this earth, being crucified and dying, rising again on the third day, and going up to the kingdom of heaven. His saying, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water"* meant that the Holy Spirit is present in the heart of the person who has received the remission of sin, and that the Holy Spirit refreshes our hearts. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are living while experiencing this fact every day through the Holy Spirit.

In the heart of a person who has received the remission of sin, the river of the Holy Spirit is flowing at all times.

Dear fellow believers, when one receives the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit is present in his heart, and the Holy Spirit refreshes the heart. Then what is the opposite of the word refresh? It means that there was a stifling feeling. Before we received the remission of sin, there was a stifling feeling in our hearts even unconsciously. Even when we worshiped, our chests felt stifled; because we had sin, we felt stifled; and even when we worshiped God and gave praise, our chests were always as parched as a desert of dry sand. So our souls were in thirst. We were thirsty,

and there had to be something that would refreshingly solve the problem of sin in our hearts, but before we met the righteousness of the Lord and believed, it was not so. So there was no refreshment in our hearts, but now that we have truly met the Lord, refreshment has arisen in our hearts. There is One whom the Lord sent after coming to this earth, receiving baptism from John, being crucified, rising from the dead, saving us, and going up to the kingdom of heaven, and He is the Holy Spirit. When the Holy Spirit comes upon the heart of a person who has received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, he comes to know this: My sins passed on to Jesus Christ when He received baptism from John the Baptist, Jesus bore the sin of the world and was nailed to the Cross, and He said, "It is finished," and died, so the problem of sin has been solved. When we come to know that our problem of sin has been solved, our hearts are refreshed. You and I feel that refreshment. That is why it is written in the Bible, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:38)*.

The hearts of you and me are not thirsty and often feel refreshment, and what this refreshment is, is none other than the remission of sin. It is refreshing because the Holy Spirit is present in our hearts and testifies that Jesus Christ bore the sins of you and me with the baptism He received from John, was crucified, rose from the dead, and saved us, and because the problem of sin in our hearts has been solved. It is saying that there is the refreshment that comes from that.

Dear fellow believers, in the heart of a person who has received the remission of sin, the river of the Holy Spirit is flowing at all times. Even though we are deficient, we come to know that the Lord bore our sins through the baptism He received from John, was crucified, and rose from the dead for us. The reason we could truly breathe a sigh of relief and obtain

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

peace when the Holy Spirit gave that realization to our hearts was that there was the fact that the Lord saved you and me from sin with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Because that was there, there was peace.

Until rivers of living water flowed in a heart that was like sand

Before I met the Lord, my heart was like sand. When I first believed in Jesus, I was full of emotion, and when I thought of Jesus being crucified, tears came, and so on. When I watch television, the TV actors who belong to the Presbyterian church seem to act well, too. They immerse themselves in emotion and weep at the drop of a hat, and since someone like me is not good at emotional immersion, when those people really weep, tears come to me, too. But a little later they giggle and laugh, and I simply cannot keep up with them.

When I first believed in Jesus, I was that full of emotion. But as I lived on and committed sins, sin piled up in my heart, I was tormented because of sin, and later, even while studying theology, when I sat in the worship service, there was sin in my heart, and my heart was in thirst like a desert. It was bone-dry, without a drop of water, and in thirst. No matter how excitedly I sang praise, it was only for that moment, and when it was over my heart felt empty; no matter how much I climbed a mountain and prayed, it was stifling. There was no assurance that the Lord had answered, and because it was stifling, I prayed shouting even louder, and I used to say that one must receive the gift of tongues and receive the Holy Spirit to the point of falling into a trance. My heart was truly empty.

But since I met the Lord, even when there are hard things and

there are deficiencies in myself, I often experience that, through the Holy Spirit being in my heart, rivers of living water flow like a river out of my heart. My heart is refreshed. When I think that the Lord has solved all my deficiencies, it is truly a relief, and it is truly refreshing, and I am thankful. That is why the Lord spoke this word here.

The spirit of a heart that has sin is not the Holy Spirit

The Holy Spirit does not come upon the heart of a person who has not received the remission of sin. The Holy Spirit comes upon our hearts at the same time as the remission of sin, when we know and believe that the Lord came to this earth, bore our sins by receiving baptism from John, was crucified and received the punishment for our sins, died in our place and rose again, and so became our Savior. So a person who has sin in his heart does not have the Holy Spirit. When a person who has sin in his heart says that the Holy Spirit is in his heart, what he is referring to is either his own emotion or an evil spirit. There is indeed a spirit. There is indeed some spirit other than himself, and even though he has sin, there can be things that somehow warm the heart, make it glad, make one pray frantically, and make one preach the gospel, but they are all evil spirits. There are evil spirits in those who believe in Jesus.

Dear fellow believers, the Holy Spirit dwells in the heart of a person who has no sin. Then how can sin be removed? By acknowledging and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, one can become a person who has no sin. It makes no sense, but the reason that today people with sin in their hearts act as pastors, act as revival speakers, hold the offices of senior

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

deaconess, elder, and evangelist, and say that they are clergy is that it is nothing more than religion; such people are not the people of God. Recently a certain cardinal of the Catholic Church passed away, and countless people all over the country held memorial Masses. They say they prayed that their cardinal would go to heaven. Dear fellow believers, a person who has sin goes to hell, whether he is a cardinal or even the Pope. Office has no effect at all.

It was said in the text of the Bible as well. It said, *"He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water. But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified" (John 7:38–39)*. It means that although the Holy Spirit could give understanding for a while to a person like Peter, at that time it was not yet a matter of believing through the Holy Spirit as you and I do.

Then how do we prove this? We must prove it by the Bible. It is just as the Lord Himself said, *"as the Scripture has said" (John 7:38)*. Let us look at John 20:19 through 23. *"Then, the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them, 'Peace be with you.' When He had said this, He showed them His hands and His side. Then the disciples were glad when they saw the Lord. So Jesus said to them again, 'Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you.' And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, 'Receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained.'"*

The risen Lord said to receive the Holy Spirit

The Holy Spirit came ten days after Jesus died and rose again and went up to the kingdom of heaven forty days later. God promised in the Old Testament that He would pour out His Spirit. At that time the disciples of Jesus were gathered and praying, and the Holy Spirit came in great fullness, like tongues of fire. It is recorded that the Holy Spirit came and they spoke in tongues, became one in heart, prayed, and preached the gospel. Because I have told you that the Holy Spirit does not come upon a person who has not yet received the remission of sin, I am speaking with this fact in mind.

Jesus received baptism from John, was nailed to the Cross, shed all His blood, died, and rose again on the third day. And His appearing to the disciples is this word of John 20:19 through 23. On Friday Jesus was nailed to the Cross and died, and He was laid in the tomb that day, and the next day was the Sabbath. For the Jews, Saturday is the Sabbath. On the first day newly greeted after the Sabbath had passed, Sunday in our way of counting, the disciples were gathered together in fear that they, too, might be killed, and Jesus appeared. And He greeted them, saying, *"Peace be with you,"* and when He showed them His hands and His side, the disciples saw the Lord and were glad. Having been crucified and died and then risen again, He showed them His side and showed them His hands, and confirmed to them that He had risen.

And Jesus spoke to the disciples. *"So Jesus said to them again, 'Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you.' And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and said to them, 'Receive the Holy Spirit.'" (John 20:21–22)*. After He rose again, the very first command He gave to those who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit was the word to receive

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the Holy Spirit. It was at this time that He gave the Holy Spirit. Because He said to receive the Holy Spirit, on the Day of Pentecost the Holy Spirit came and the fullness came. And then the Lord is telling us what authority a person upon whom the Holy Spirit has come has. *"If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained" (John 20:23)*. It is the word that if we remit anyone's sins by conveying the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they are remitted; that is, that the authority to remit people's sins is with those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

So a person who does not listen to the words of a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit does not listen to the words of God, and a person who refuses the spreading of the gospel by a person who believes in and preaches the gospel of the water and the Spirit commits the same sin as refusing the salvation that God gives. That is why the Lord gave the Holy Spirit to those who know and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That is, they are those who believe in the coming of Jesus, and that He is the Son of God and the Creator. And He gave the Holy Spirit to those who believe that He came to this earth in the body of a man and bore the sin of mankind by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, and that He was crucified and died and rose again from the dead and so became our Savior. In other words, it is the word that He gave the Holy Spirit as a gift to those who have received the remission of sin, to those who have not a single sin in their hearts.

Do rivers of living water flow out of your hearts, too, from the heart, often and often?

What this means is that He set a seal. He set a seal like a

stamp; He stamped a seal, saying, "This is yours"; and with what did He stamp it? He stamped the seal with the Holy Spirit. So a person who is a sinner even while claiming to believe in Jesus is not a person who truly believes in Jesus. He is not a person who has met Jesus. In such a person, the Holy Spirit does not flow in his heart like a river; his heart is still like bone-dry sand. He has no Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is not a matter of some feeling. The Holy Spirit, being in the hearts of you and me, who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, often and often testifies to us with the word, saying that the Lord bore your sins by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, was crucified, died, and rose again, and so became your Savior. So He stands surety and testifies, saying, you have no sin, you are children of God, you are workers of God. When that happens, it means that the hearts of you and me come to obtain refreshment, just as a river soaks the heart and gives refreshment.

How are your hearts? Does the Holy Spirit, that is, the rivers of living water, flow out of your hearts, too, from within, from the heart, often and often? Dear fellow believers, if you truly believe in this gospel in your hearts, rivers of living water flow. Even though we are deficient, the Lord gives our hearts ease and refreshment, saying, "It is all right; I bore all that sin." When we are tormented because of sin and He reminds us again that the Lord has solved that problem of sin entirely, our hearts obtain refreshment. It is because our sins have been solved. That is the word He spoke, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water."*

So when people today who believe in Jesus wrongly say that, even though they have sin, the Holy Spirit has come and God is using them, it is all a lie. A certain pastor came to the church in our country where the largest number of people gather and preached that he had thought he was too deficient and too much of a sinner to do pastoral ministry, but that God had spoken to

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

him. “You have sin and you are lacking in everything else, but you are all right; because you love God so very much, you are all right.” He said God had told him so. That man said so while preaching. It means that even though he had sin in his heart, God said it was all right. Who would that God be? I should leave that to your imagination, but still I had better tell you. It is the Devil, I mean. I cannot stand it, I want to say it so much.

Dear fellow believers, it is the word that we must know that whenever something appears as the Holy Spirit to those who have sin in their hearts among the people who believe in Jesus today, and lets them hear some voice and shows them visions, it is all the work of the Devil. That is the work of the Devil. How absurd it is! Seen that way, among those who believe in Jesus in this age, those who have received the Holy Spirit, those who have received the remission of sin, are so few that they can be counted on the fingers. They are that hard to find. The Lord said, if anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink; but what is it that He tells us to come and drink? It is the word to eat and drink, as much as we like, the word of truth that the Lord removed our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, so that, because our problem of sin has been entirely solved, rivers of living water may flow out of our hearts and our hearts may obtain refreshment. It is the word to come before the Lord and enjoy the fact that we have obtained eternal life and received blessing. The Lord spoke this, and the Holy Spirit is teaching this fact to you and me, who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit in our hearts. Saying, there is refreshment in your hearts, rivers of living water flow, I have solved your whole problem of sin, He is bringing that joy and refreshment.

Who has the authority to remit sins?

The Holy Spirit is doing these things within our hearts. He testifies to what the Lord did. The Holy Spirit does no separate work of His own. The Holy Spirit testifies like this. How did the Lord bear our sins? He says that He bore them when He received baptism from John the Baptist. Why was the Lord crucified and why did He die? He says that because He had borne our sins, He could not but be crucified and die in our place. Then why did He die and rise again? He says that because He had borne our sins and died for us, if the Lord did not rise again there would be no rising again for us and believing in Jesus would have no meaning at all, and so He rose again in order to raise us from the dead. The Holy Spirit is testifying to all of this in that way.

It means that He plays the role of testifying to what the Lord did after coming to this earth; the Holy Spirit does not speak as a separate matter. If you read the Acts of the Apostles, there is the word that when the Apostle Paul was about to go to Jerusalem, the Holy Spirit testified in every city that chains and tribulations awaited him. That, too, was speaking of the fact that because the Apostle Paul preached the righteousness of Jesus Christ everywhere he went, because he testified that Jesus is the Son of God and our Savior and the Messiah whom the people of Israel were waiting for, he would be hated by the Jews and would suffer.

The point is whether the Holy Spirit spoke like a fortune-teller, without any relation to Jesus. No. It is not so. The Holy Spirit was faithful concerning Jesus Christ, concerning the plan of God the Father. This is the work of the gospel and the work of salvation. That is why, for any one of us to receive the remission of sin, he must truly accept and believe in his heart the truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord came

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

to this earth and gave us. Only then can the Holy Spirit flow like rivers of living water within that heart. Through the Holy Spirit testifying that the Lord removed our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our hearts can be saved from sin and obtain refreshment.

So to talk about the Holy Spirit, one must prove it by the Bible. If, unable even to prove it by the Bible, one speaks in tongues at random and says that the Holy Spirit is working, that is the work of demons. I even spoke in tongues before I met the word of the truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That was all the work of the Devil. I preached the gospel, too. It was the work of the Devil. The Holy Spirit does not make noise. He is very personal, rational, and faithful to the truth.

We, in whose hearts the Holy Spirit is present, have the authority to remit people's sins. When you and I convey to people, "Jesus remitted your sins like this," one who believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of sin, and if one does not accept the word of this gospel, he does not receive the remission of sin. He goes to hell. Dear fellow believers, who has the authority to give the remission of sin? It is with Jesus Christ, and it is with us, the disciples of Jesus, who believe in the righteousness of Jesus Christ. It is the word that today it is with you and me.

Dear fellow believers, in the Catholic Church, at the sacrament of confession, the priest says, "I remit your sins." In the Catholic Church, the Vatican began to grant indulgences. In the Middle Ages they sold indulgence tickets, saying that if you bought a ticket, the soul of your dead ancestor would go to heaven, that at the moment the coin dropped with a clink, the soul of your ancestor would go to heaven; that is how they sold the tickets. And recently it was reported outright in the newspapers that the Pope had granted indulgences. It means that

it was not a matter of selling tickets, but that he gave the authority of exemption from sin to high-ranking people such as bishops and cardinals.

It means that the Pope gave the authority to exempt people as having received the remission of sin when a priest says, "I remit your sins." As for why he gave such authority, that Pope said that there is so much sin in the world these days that it is hard to believe in God unless sin is exempted, and so he gave the authority of exemption to the cardinals. Dear fellow believers, if you go to a cardinal and ask him to forgive your sins, and the cardinal says, "I remit your sins in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit," are they remitted? Would they be remitted that way? They are remitted because the Lord has remitted our sins, and we receive the remission of sin by believing what the Lord has remitted with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And when we, who have received the remission of sin, convey to another person, saying, "The Lord has remitted your sins like this with the gospel of the water and the Spirit," that person receives the remission of sin when he believes.

His saying, *"If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained" (John 20:23)*, is not a matter of it being done because we say, "I remit your sins." It is the word that He gave us the authority to convey, "The Lord removed my sins like this with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and He removed your sins like this."

It means that it is not that you and I have the authority to remit sin, but that He has entrusted to us that authority which is with the Lord, the authority to convey that the Lord has remitted our sins. That is why a person who has not received the remission of sin has neither the ability nor the authority to convey the gospel of the water and the Spirit to people. They cannot preach this gospel of the water and the Spirit. Only those

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

who have received the remission of sin can do this. Come to think of it, you and I are people who have tremendous authority. If you and I keep our mouths shut, people go to hell, and if you and I open our mouths, and also preach the gospel through literature missions, all those who believe our words receive the remission of sin, so we have tremendous authority. We are tremendous people. No matter how big a company in the world puts on airs, do you think there is anything good in getting on the wrong side of the righteous? It cannot be, unless one intends to be cursed. There is no need for us to behave arrogantly toward people, but in fact you and I, who have received the remission of sin, have tremendous authority. If someone gets on our wrong side, he goes to hell. But does that mean we will not even preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to them? We must preach this gospel even to hateful people so that they may receive the remission of sin. Just as the Lord has compassion on us, we, too, must have compassion on them and do so.

The Holy Spirit testifies to the work of Jesus Christ

None of the religions of the world has the authority to remit sins. Only Jesus Christ has the authority to remit people's sins. Those who can convey and teach the word of power that Jesus Christ has remitted our sins and so make people receive the remission of sin are only we, who have already received the remission of sin and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Only we can do that work. No one else can do it. They can be envious, but they cannot do this work. That is why we must know about the Holy Spirit in detail. This age is the age of the Holy Spirit. The One who testifies to this work—how Jesus Christ bore our sins two thousand years ago, how He was

crucified, and how He saved us from death—is the Holy Spirit. Through whom does this Holy Spirit testify? He is making it so that this testimony is given to the people of the world through you and me, who already believe the word of God today. So the work the Holy Spirit does is to testify to the righteousness of Jesus Christ.

It said that when the Holy Spirit comes, *"He will convict the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment" (John 16:8)*. What did it say concerning righteousness? He said, *"Because I go to My Father and you see Me no more" (John 16:10)*. It means that Jesus is the King of righteousness. It is the righteousness by which Jesus saved us out of all sins. He said, *"Of sin, because they do not believe in Me" (John 16:9)*. The Lord came to this earth, had our sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, was crucified, rose from the dead, and saved us, and yet not believing this—that is sin. It is the sin of going to hell and the sin of being destroyed.

A person who, even after receiving the remission of sin, does not unite with the Lord and lives only for himself, God treats as a wicked person. Even though one has received the remission of sin, in the end it can be revoked. He picks out the wicked from among the wheat and throws them away. It is the word that there is judgment within the Church of God, too. So please know that it is a delusion to say shamelessly, "I believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, so when I die I will go to the kingdom of the Lord with only this confession." Dear fellow believers, the Lord is wiser and more just than men, and He surely judges. There is no exception for anyone. That is why, after we have come to know this gospel of the water and the Spirit, even though it is sometimes lonely and hard, we do not mix with the world but serve the Lord. We follow the Lord. Otherwise, who is there to follow the Lord? The Apostle Paul said, *"Lest, when*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified" (1 Corinthians 9:27). If one preaches the gospel to others and then goes out into the world himself and does nothing and does not serve the gospel, he himself comes to be cast away.

A life of following the Lord in the Holy Spirit

There are times when you and I find it hard, too. Still, the reason we work on quietly is that we believe the word of the Lord, and that the Lord has told us the things He will do in the future. It said, *"Of judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged" (John 16:11)*. When Jesus Christ bore the sin of the world through the baptism He received from John, was crucified and judged, and said, "It is finished," He received all our judgment for us as well and also judged the Devil.

Now, as for what the final judgment is, it is the matter of throwing them into the fire of hell and making them suffer. The verdict has already been given, and now nothing remains but actually to carry out the sentence. So what we must surely remember is the fact that the Holy Spirit, with the glory of Jesus Christ, testifies to and guarantees the things concerning Jesus Christ.

We must know without fail the fact that the Holy Spirit is not a spirit who works separately from Jesus. We must know that Jesus Christ is not One who works separately from the will of the Father, and we must know and believe that although there are the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, They are one God and are our one and the same Savior. I have finished the word. ✉

Sermon 4 by Paul C. Jong

Rivers of living water become a reality in the hearts of those who have received the Holy Spirit

< John 7:37-39 >

"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified."

"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink"

He said, *"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.'" (John 7:37–38)*. It says the last day of the feast, and this refers to the Feast of Tabernacles. The people of Israel have three great feasts. There are the Passover, the Feast of Harvest, and the Feast of Tabernacles. The Passover is the feast kept in the days of the Old Testament to commemorate that Jesus would become the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

sacrificial Lamb and, by sacrificing Himself, make mankind pass over from death; the Feast of Harvest is the feast kept to give thanks and commemorate that they had harvested wheat and barley and come to eat them; and the Feast of Tabernacles is the feast corresponding to Thanksgiving. It is the feast kept to give thanks that the Lord had worked and given them much food and produce throughout the year. Also, the Feast of Tabernacles is the feast kept for a week from the fifteenth day of the seventh month in order to recall that the people of Israel lived in the wilderness for forty years, and to commemorate that they built booths and dwelt in them in the wilderness. It is a great feast for the people of Israel. Among the feasts kept by the church in the days of the New Testament there is Thanksgiving, and it is the same as the Feast of Tabernacles.

Jesus cried out loudly on the last day of this Feast of Tabernacles. The feast that comes around after the Feast of Tabernacles has passed is the Passover. After performing the rite of the Passover, Jesus is crucified and dies. So now is the time when the time for Jesus to be crucified and die has drawn near. That the time for Jesus to be crucified and die had drawn near means that it was after Jesus had come to this earth and borne all the sin of mankind, the sin of this world, once and for all by receiving baptism from John the Baptist. He is speaking with the approach of the time when the Lord would be crucified in mind.

"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:37–38). It is the word that, as was spoken in the Old Testament, rivers of living water flow out from within our hearts. As for how this word is fulfilled, it is fulfilled in the hearts of those who have received the Holy Spirit. But verse 39 is saying that Jesus had not yet been crucified and died, and that therefore the Holy Spirit was not yet

in the hearts of the disciples of Jesus.

The Holy Spirit comes upon the heart that has received the remission of sin

Only a person who believes in the work of salvation, in which Jesus came to this earth, bore the sin of mankind with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, and went to the Cross and received the judgment for sin, receives the remission of sin. Only a person who knows and believes the fact that Jesus Christ has removed our sins receives the remission of sin, and the Holy Spirit comes upon the heart of the person who has received the remission of sin, and through that Holy Spirit, whatever he may do throughout his whole life on this earth, rivers of living water overflow.

The Holy Spirit makes it so that the Lord's having removed our sins is always remembered in our hearts, so that we become blessed people whose hearts are never thirsty, who are steeped in that love at all times, and who can live well, giving thanks and also serving and preaching the gospel, giving thanks to God. Therefore, for a person who has not received the remission of sin, the Holy Spirit is not in his heart. Why is that? The word in verse 39, *"Because Jesus was not yet glorified,"* is the word that the Holy Spirit had not yet come because it was the state in which He had not yet died, risen again, and gone up to the right hand of God.

Then when, and upon whom, did the Holy Spirit come on this earth? Looking at the Acts of the Apostles, there is the event of the Day of Pentecost. The fiftieth day after Jesus was crucified and died and rose again is called Pentecost, and on that day God showed, visibly to people's eyes, the Holy Spirit coming like

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

tongues of fire upon each of the disciples, who were sitting gathered together in one place. It means that on that day, after the disciples received the fullness of the Holy Spirit, they testified to the gospel of the water and the Spirit in the nation of Israel. They testified to the work in which the Lord came to this world, bore the sin of this world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross, shed His blood, and rose again, and to the Lord who died and rose again. So all who believed were baptized and became disciples of Jesus. It was the baptism received as the sign of believing in Jesus.

Why does one receive baptism? One receives baptism because Jesus came to this earth to save mankind, bore the sin of this world with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, and went to the Cross. “Jesus bore my sins like this with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment for sin, rose from the dead, and saved me. This is what I believe. Because the Lord saved me like this, I, too, believe like this.” This confession of faith is what one makes through baptism.

So there is no Holy Spirit in the heart of a person who has not received the remission of sin. But there are people who teach that even a person who has not received the remission of sin can become full of the Holy Spirit, that one receives the fullness of the Holy Spirit by going to pray on a mountain, and that one receives the Holy Spirit by praying. They also say that when they, as those who have received the Holy Spirit, pray with the laying on of hands and put their hands on someone’s body, that person comes under the rule of the Holy Spirit and receives the gifts of the Holy Spirit. They are all swindlers. They are all thieves.

Dear fellow believers, one must have money in order to lend money. In the same way, if one does not have the faith that believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, if there is no evidence in his heart of having received the Holy Spirit, if the

Holy Spirit does not actually dwell in his heart, he cannot do the work of the Holy Spirit. We are now preaching that Jesus bore the sin of this world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist and went to the Cross and received the judgment for our sins, and this fact is the very evidence that the Holy Spirit has come upon our hearts.

It is because He said, *"You shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be witnesses to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth" (Acts 1:8)*. Only those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit receive the remission of sin, and the Holy Spirit has come into the hearts only of those who have received the remission of sin. And in the hearts of those in whom the Holy Spirit is present, that love and that truth, that the Lord had our sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John and bore them and washed them away, went to the Cross, shed His blood, rose from the dead, and saved us, flow like a river.

It is the word that this heart—that the Lord bore my sins with the baptism He received from John, bore all my sins and went to the Cross, shed His blood, died and rose again, and so became my Savior, and made me sinless like this—always overflows until the end of the world. This is the very word He cried out on the last day of the Feast of Tabernacles.

"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink" (John 7:37). "He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:38). Dear fellow believers, when are the hearts of you and me refreshed, and when are they at peace? When that faith, that word—that the Lord came to save me and, with that baptism He received from John the Baptist, bore my sins, that is, the sin of this world, was crucified, rose from the dead, and saved me, and made me sinless—is in our hearts, we feel no want in our hearts, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

through the love, the peace, and the blessing of the Lord we become people who enjoy joy and live gladly in this world. The Holy Spirit cannot be received unless one believes in the gospel of the baptism the Lord received and the Cross. The Lord bore the sins of you and me with the baptism He received from John, and with the body that had borne those sins He went to the Cross, received the judgment for sin, was nailed and shed His blood, and rose from the dead, and so became the Savior of you and me. Is that so, or is it not? It is so.

Dear fellow believers, it is a word you often hear, but the reason you were able to live this well this week, too, even while the world is gloomy, is that the Lord, for you and me, bore the sin of this world by receiving baptism from John, went to the Cross with that sin and solved our problem of sin, rose again and became our Savior, and poured out the Holy Spirit upon the hearts of you and me. So we were able to live like this without thirsting, and we were able to live without falling into complete despair. We must know that fact. It is not that we do not fall into depression because we have good personalities. If we look at this world, we can tell what is going to happen in the future. In the past, too, when it was said that an age of famine was coming, people said, with the world as good as this, what age of famine could come? But the age of famine came. Saying, "With so much to eat, what famine? Well, it may come someday," is exactly the same as what Martha said to Jesus.

When Martha went out to meet Jesus, Jesus said, "If you believe My word, your brother Lazarus will rise again." Martha answered, *"I know that he will rise again in the resurrection at the last day" (John 11:24)*. It was the word that Jesus would raise him right now, but Martha answered, "I believe in the resurrection; I believe that he will rise at that time, when the last judgment comes."

When Jesus said, "You do not believe My word. But let us go and see; where is your brother buried?" Martha answered, "We laid the body over there, in the place blocked with a great stone." He said, *"Take away the stone" (John 11:39)*, and Jesus prayed, *"Father, I thank You that You have heard Me. And I know that You always hear Me" (John 11:41–42)*. And with a loud voice He said, *"Lazarus, come forth!" (John 11:43)*. Lazarus had been bound in white linen, but he got up and came outside, as if hopping with both feet together in his bound body. He said, *"Loose him, and let him go" (John 11:44)*. He came out of that tomb where, four days after his death, the body had begun to decay and there was the stench of a corpse, so if he were loosed, how much would it smell? But his skin and his vitality had already returned, all the process of decaying had already stopped, and life was flowing again.

When one receives as a gift the Holy Spirit that the Lord gives, rivers of living water flow out of that heart

It is exactly the same. For a person who has not received the remission of sin, there is no work of the Holy Spirit. If it is said that the Holy Spirit works in a person who has not received the remission of sin in his heart, that is the work of demons. For a person who has not received the remission of sin in his heart to say that he believes in the Lord and gives thanks, that he does the work of the Lord, is—though he cannot say it openly—a matter of working in order to make a living by doing the work of God. It is not truly serving the Lord by faith.

Today those who believe in Jesus say that when they, as people who have received the Holy Spirit, pray with the laying

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

on of hands, they also cast out demons and cause the Holy Spirit to come upon the heart, but it does not work because there is sin in the heart of the one laying on hands. If one has hands laid on him by such a person, a demon passes over to him. Dear fellow believers, if a demon passes over, what will it do? A demon is a deceiver.

I, too, experienced it in the past: a very fragrant smell rises from below the throat, one's mood becomes very fresh and cheerful, and laughter keeps coming out. They say that when one takes drugs, one's mood improves, do they not? It becomes like that. And when there is a weak person, a strong desire arises within to go and pray for him with the laying on of hands. It is a feeling that if one goes and prays with the laying on of hands, the sickness will be healed. But I was a person who did not belong to a denomination that emphasizes tongues and divine healing, and by temperament I do not like such things. So I suppressed it and did not do it. But sin was still in my heart. Although, believing in the Lord, my body grew warm, I felt good, the word all seemed believable, and there was something that made it seem as if I could exercise the power to heal sickness with the gift of divine healing, there was sin in my heart.

It means that if there is sin in the heart, this is not the work of the Holy Spirit. It is the word that when one believes in that Jesus, who bore all the sins of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross and received the judgment for sin, and rose from the dead and became our Savior, and receives as a gift the Holy Spirit that the Lord gives, at that time, just as rivers of living water flow out of that heart, one comes to live experiencing peace, freedom, grace, and love through having no sin.

Verse 39 is saying it clearly. It said, *"Because Jesus was not yet glorified."* This word refers to the state in which, although it

was a fact that Jesus had taken over and borne the sin of this world with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, He had not yet gone to the Cross, had not yet been nailed to it, and had not yet died and risen again.

Then in the days of the Old Testament, how could the prophets such as the Prophet Isaiah, the Prophet Jeremiah, and the Prophet Ezekiel receive the fullness of the Holy Spirit and record the word and speak the word of God on His behalf? In that age, God chose His servants and called them personally and worked. God made those servants prophesy by the Holy Spirit that Jesus Christ would come to this earth, receive baptism from John, be crucified, rise from the dead, remove our sins, and give the Holy Spirit, and that there would come into being those who receive the Holy Spirit in their hearts.

So the Prophet Isaiah, too, prophesied in Isaiah chapters 53 and 7 all of this: that Jesus would be born by borrowing the body of a virgin, receive baptism from John, die on the Cross for us, and receive the judgment for sin. In those days God called His servants one by one and made them receive the remission of sin and receive the Holy Spirit. But in this present age, the Lord says, *"If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:37–38)*. It is that anyone at all who wants to believe in Jesus and receive the remission of sin should come to the Lord and drink. The days of the New Testament are the age of being saved from all sins. Anyone at all can receive the remission of sin. Receiving the remission of sin is this easy, and it is all too easy for those who know, but those who do not know do not understand even when they read it. They do not understand even when it is spoken in the original language, and they do not understand even when it is pointed out to them with a finger, one thing at a time.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

But a person who believes in the Lord believes that the Lord is the Son of the holy God the Father, and that He is our God and our Savior. And it is the word that by believing that He came to this earth, received baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross with the sin of this world, received the judgment for sin, rose from the dead, and saved us, he has received the Holy Spirit and become a child of God and a worker of God. This is something one can preach even with his eyes closed. Even if the electric light goes out, even if the light goes off while preaching the word and it becomes pitch dark, one can go on and preach the whole word. But a person who has not received the remission of sin, a person who has not received the remission of sin in his heart, will have to stop his sermon if the electric light goes out. Even when praying, a person who has not received the remission of sin has to write out prayers and has to learn written prayers. But a person who believes in Jesus with his heart is not like that. Even if it is dark, even without writing out a prayer, he can pray.

"We have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God"

In John 6:69 it says, *"We have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."* As Jesus kept saying, "If you eat My flesh and My blood, you will obtain eternal life," even the disciples of Jesus, who were with Him, found this word too hard to hear. He also said, "No one can come to Me unless the Father draws him." Because Jesus performed many miracles and wonders, there were many people who followed Him around, but when He said, "No one can come to Me unless the Father draws him," many of those who had been following Him went back and walked with Him no more.

The people said that He should make bread and give it to them, but seeing that He kept speaking only of the word, which cannot be seen with the eyes, they thought that there must be nothing more for Him to show, and they all left, saying, let us go. When He asked whether they also wanted to go away, Peter said, *"Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life. Also we have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God" (John 6:68–69)*. Peter was a man who had made the confession of faith, *"You are the Christ, the Son of the living God" (Matthew 16:16)*, but when Jesus kept saying that one must eat His flesh and blood and that only those whom the Father draws can come to Him, it was a word that was hard to understand.

In chapter 6 verse 60, many of His disciples, when they heard this, said, *"This is a hard saying; who can understand it?"* It was a hard word that even the disciples could not understand. Jesus should have explained it or spoken it plainly; someone with a hasty temperament would have asked Him to speak its meaning openly. If I had been a disciple of Jesus, I would have said, "Jesus, it is too hard; I cannot understand it; please speak openly."

Peter, too, in a state in which ordinary people could not understand, said, *"We have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."* It means that if we, too, had not believed that Jesus is the One sent by God, the Son of God the Father, the Son of the holy God, we, too, would have been unable to understand. It means that we, too, said, "We have believed and known that Jesus is the Son of God the Father and the Creator, who made heaven and earth and all things in the universe, and that He is the Jesus who came to this earth to remove our sins, bore our sins by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, and would go to the Cross and die." It is a confession

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

that we knew Jesus by faith, and that we were able to understand what the Lord did and what the Lord said.

Dear fellow believers, in living the life of faith, faith comes first. One may ask which came first, the chicken or the egg, but logically, an egg hatches and becomes a chicken, and a chicken lays an egg, so this and that are one. But there is only one way for us to believe in Jesus. It is to look at the word recorded in the Bible. It said, *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God" (John 1:1)*, and when God said, *"Let there be light" (Genesis 1:3)*, there was light, and by that word all things in this universe came into being. Since it said, *"All things were made through Him" (John 1:3)*, it means that they were made through Jesus.

Then we cannot help but believe. For us, who cannot go and see the scene and cannot know the world of God, there is only one way to know Him. It is to know that He is the Creator by believing the word that Jesus made all things in the universe. It is that we believe first and then know that He was the Creator; did we go and see Him making them, did we see it, did we taste it? One may ask how one can believe what cannot be known, but the point is that if one believes first, one can know. *"We have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."*

Only the written word is the ground of faith

Peter and the disciples of Jesus, too, knew the word that Jesus spoke by believing it; they did not come to know it by confirming it through phenomena that appeared. The only way for us to believe in Jesus is to believe the written word of God just as it is. There is no other way at all. By what evidence do

we know that Jesus is God? We can know it by looking at the created things, we can know it by looking at the air and the sunlight, and we can know it by looking at people, but that alone is not enough. The certain evidence is the word. It means that because this holy word of the Bible tells us and teaches us who God is, and when, where, what, why, and how God removed our sins and saved us, according to the five Ws and one H, we can know and believe.

By believing the holy word, we can know God and believe in Him, we can receive the remission of sin, we can believe that we have received the remission of sin, and we can believe that we have become children of God and workers of God and that we are going to heaven. Therefore we know. No matter how clever a person may be, if he believes by having scientific evidence presented to him, doubt will arise again.

If one clearly believes that this word is precisely the word of God, that is, if one believes according to the written word, then, since the word said that Jesus is the Son of God, if the word says He is the Son, then He is the Son. If the word of God said that Jesus came to this earth to save mankind, bore the sin of this world with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, went to the Cross and received the judgment for sin, rose from the dead, and saved us, then it has been accomplished just as it says. We are saved by faith, and by faith we can know that Jesus has become our Savior. Apart from this way, we can absolutely never know. Have you gone and seen it?

Long ago, before I was born again, I was praying, and I do not pray noisily but very calmly. I was calling on the name of the Lord and praying when, half asleep and half awake, I saw a vision. The sky was very high and there were many clouds, and a pinhole appeared in those clouds; then, as the hole widened, a figure like Jesus came out of it and came straight down toward

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

me from that high sky. It grew bigger as it came down closer, as if a rocket were coming down. But in my heart I thought, "There is a problem with this. What if it is an evil spirit? What if it is not the real Jesus?"

Because from the time I believed in Jesus I believed on the premise that the Bible is the word of God, I was able to realize the gospel of the water and the Spirit, to believe it, and to preach it to you. But watching that vision I thought, "Ah, this is probably not the Jesus who saved me," and when it came right up before me and suddenly turned around, I saw that the front wore white clothes and shone with radiance, but the back wore pitch-black clothes. So I said to myself, "My thought was right after all." Dear fellow believers, after accepting Jesus by seeing a vision, saying that Jesus came upon oneself, that He said He loved oneself—all of that is fake. If one trusts in visions, one fails every time. And what will one do when yet another vision appears?

We *"have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God" (John 6:69)*. We come to know by believing; we do not believe after knowing. But the Bible also speaks like this: *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free" (John 8:32)*. In a way it seems to be the opposite, but in reality it is the same thing. What is the truth? What Jesus did after coming to this earth is the truth.

That Jesus, who was born by borrowing the body of Mary, received baptism from John the Baptist when He was about thirty years old, bore the sin of this world and went to the Cross, died and rose again, and saved us, and what Jesus did, are the truth. Just as this word says that if we know the truth, the truth sets us free from sin, did Jesus not set us free from sin and save us? Is that so, or is it not? It is so. So by believing the word we can know Jesus, we can also receive salvation, we can also

become workers of God, and we can also obtain eternal life.

The word is here, and one must not claim to believe in Jesus while setting the word aside. There are some who say, “Even though I believe in Jesus, my heart goes back and forth; some days I believe and some days I do not; when I hear the pastor’s sermon it sounds plausible and I believe it, but as soon as the service ends and I step out the door, my head goes blank and I cannot recall it.” Even such a person has nothing to worry about. Even if you cannot recall the content, the word of God is recorded here, and if you have grasped the word of God with your heart, if you ruminate on that word and believe it, you are one who believes in Jesus. If you believe the word, you are a believer, and if you do not believe the word, you are not a believer. Do you understand? Yes.

That is why the Lord spoke like this. The Holy Spirit comes upon the heart of the person who has had his sins washed away, and fills it with the spiritual blessings of heaven that come through the Holy Spirit. He always gives peace to our hearts. When your dreams are foul and unsettling, do you not feel anxious, wondering whether something like that is going to happen to you? At such times, if you command, “In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ I command you, Satan the Devil, get away,” that is the end of it. If a big snake appears in a dream and tries to harm you, if you command, “You filthy Devil, in the name of Jesus Christ I command you, Satan the Devil, get away,” then even though that Satan the Devil appeared in the dream, he can no longer come and work. Why is that? It is because there is authority in the name of Jesus.

It means that because He is the Son of God, the Savior who is God, who bore the sin of mankind with the baptism He received from John, went to the Cross and received the judgment for sin, rose from the dead, and saved us, before Him something

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

like a fallen angel is nothing at all. They all retreat. We must know it that way and believe it that way.

We must not be deceived. It is said that there are many people who believe in Jesus, but if you ask whether there is sin in their hearts or not, if you ask whether they do not commit sin again, most people answer that they have sin. If you then ask again, does that not mean there is sin in your heart, they say, where is there a person who has no sin? Such a person is still a sinner. He is not a person who has met the Lord. Such a person speaks of the Holy Spirit, or speaks of miracles, or speaks of blessings. Then that person is a swindler. He is a complete swindler and a thief.

We must place the ground of our faith in the word of God. Where is that word? It is in the Bible. When someone tells a person who believes the word of the Bible to show from the Bible concrete evidence that his sins have been removed, he confesses by faith the word in which Jesus, receiving baptism from John the Baptist, said, *"For thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15),* and John allowed Him. The moment he thrusts that word forward, saying, "Jesus bore the sin of this world by receiving baptism from John, received the judgment for sin on the Cross, rose from the dead, and saved us—is there anything wrong with that?" Satan the Devil has no answer.

Dear fellow believers, the word is the truth. The first blessing God gave to mankind is the word of the Bible. Without the word of God, there would be no one on this earth who has received the remission of sin. In the days of the Old Testament, too, God recorded in detail in the Bible concerning Elijah, whom He said would come, and Jesus, whom He said He would send. Without this word, we could not know what Jesus came and did in the New Testament. It is because the Bible has been placed in the

hands of you and me even to this day that we were able to hear with our ears, see with our eyes, believe with our hearts, and become righteous. Through the literature missions we are carrying out overseas, many people send in testimonies of salvation; how is that possible? Because I received the remission of sin by believing the word, and introduced Jesus to those people by conveying the word, they, too, receive the remission of sin when they believe in their hearts through the word of God that I conveyed. They receive the remission of sin just as I did, and they work overseas just as I do.

When we have believed in Jesus as our Savior, we receive the Holy Spirit as a gift

As you now know, many people have received the remission of sin. What gospel do those who have received the remission of sin by believing in the Lord have? Naturally, it is the gospel of the water and the Spirit held by those who believe in the risen Jesus, who came to this earth, bore sin by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross, was nailed and judged, rose from the dead, washed away all our sins, and gave us new life. The gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have is a tremendous gospel.

Look ahead for a moment. It is said that there are about three billion people on this earth who believe in Jesus. When the Antichrist appears, an innumerable number of people will appear as those who believe in the same gospel of the water and the Spirit as we do. If there are a hundred million, can they be counted? If a billion people receive the remission of sin, can they be counted? It means that, though we do not know how many, innumerable people receive the remission of sin. When? Now,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

and at the time of the last harvest, that many people receive the remission of sin. It is that we now preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and people know this gospel, and then, when the Antichrist appears as the word says and stirs up some work, countless people will say, "This word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit is right," and believe and receive the remission of sin and be martyred.

Looking only at us now, it seems that only we believe, does it not? There are many who believe all over the world, too. Then one may wonder what will become of it when the number is this small, but at the time of the last harvest God harvests in great quantity. Originally, harvesting is something done in autumn. Does one sow seed and harvest a month later? One keeps on doing the work of sowing, and then, when autumn comes, when the time comes, one takes up the sickle and harvests all at once.

He said, *"Out of his heart will flow rivers of living water" (John 7:38)*. What does this word mean? It is the word that from the hearts of you and me, who have received the remission of sin, the river of the truth of salvation—that Jesus bore the sin of this world by receiving baptism from John, went to the Cross and received the judgment for our sins, and saved us—that is, the word of God, overflows. So those who believe in this gospel receive the Holy Spirit as a gift at the same time as they receive the remission of sin, and they share the gospel with people and make them receive the Holy Spirit along with the gospel.

In Acts 2:38, Peter said, *"Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit,"* and in Acts 3:19 it said, *"Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord."* Dear fellow believers, the remission of sin is a gift that God gives. It is the work in which Jesus came

to this earth, bore the sin of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross, was nailed and shed His blood and died, and rose again on the third day after His death, and so saved us. There is a gift we receive when we have believed in that Jesus as our Savior, and that gift is the Holy Spirit. We receive the holy Spirit as a gift. Therefore, because the Holy Spirit, who is the Spirit of God, is present in the heart, we come to be called children of God. Before receiving the Holy Spirit in the heart, one is not a child of God, because an evil spirit is in the heart. It is because an evil spirit can rule that heart. When one receives the Holy Spirit in his heart as a gift, even when an evil spirit tries to deceive us, if we resist it with the word, it retreats.

When one lives the life of the church, Satan the Devil can do nothing. Not long ago, some people overseas plotted a scheme to disrupt the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When I heard that news, I thought, these fellows are making light of me; it seems that a considerable opponent has appeared; this will not do; and so I am doing literature missions again. Although I do not do as much as before, the thought arose in me: "You cannot deceive us who believe; you cannot make us your underlings; you absolutely cannot." So from then on I began to do literature missions again.

It seems that because I was keeping quiet, I looked like an easy mark; so all of you, come and try; do not do it with words, but you, too, come at me with literature—that is what I mean. If it is done with words, when someone says something and then says he did not, nothing can be done about it, but if it is done with literature, there is evidence. Writing the gospel accurately in literature is not easy. It is because one must speak with grounds. They seem to think that I just rattle off anything, but that is not so. It is because I have much knowledge that I write

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

in simple terms. When one has no knowledge, one speaks in a difficult way. People with no knowledge try to make others understand by quoting the words of theologians, the words of philosophers, and illustrations, and instead they confuse people's minds, so that after one worship service the minds of the church members are in a haze, and so they are told to sing praise loudly.

"If they drink anything deadly, it will by no means hurt them"

We believe that Jesus had our sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John and bore them, went to the Cross and died, and rose from the dead and saved us. We believe in that Jesus as our Savior. After we have believed, the doctrines made by the theologians of the world try to deceive us, but they absolutely cannot.

Jesus said that these signs will appear to those who believe. It is Mark 16:17 through 18. *"And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new tongues; they will take up serpents; and if they drink anything deadly, it will by no means hurt them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover."* This is the word Jesus Himself spoke to His disciples. Is this word the word of God, or is it not? It is the word of God. That is right. But if this word is applied in a fleshly way, one is bitten by a snake and dies. Because He said that such signs would appear to those who believe in Jesus, many pastors brought a container with a poisonous snake in it, said, "I believe in Jesus, so I will not die even if a snake bites me," and put their hands in before many people. They were bitten. And they died. There were many such people.

The word of Jesus speaks about our hearts, just as He said, *"It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing" (John 6:63)*. What He says concerning the body is spoken in the part about receiving the blessing of the fatness of the land if one believes and follows the word, but this word is not that word. *"And these signs will follow those who believe" (Mark 16:17)*. "In My name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new tongues"—casting out demons and speaking with tongues, they can do. But does one not die if he eats potassium cyanide while reciting this word, just because it says that if they drink anything deadly it will by no means hurt them? This word was spoken concerning the theological doctrines made by theologians, that is, the theological doctrines that carry that evil poison and come at us trying to deceive us. It is the word that even though we may have come into contact with such doctrines, heard them, and been confused for a while, those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are not killed by them, and do not fall into them and get deceived and enslaved by them.

Dear fellow believers, a person who has not been born again is no match for a person who has been born again. However learned a person who has not been born again may be, he can be handled as if handling a child. When we ask, "Doctor, is there no sin in your heart?" he says, "Of course there is sin; how could there not be?" When we ask, "Then is the Holy Spirit in your heart?" he says, "I have received the Holy Spirit." When we ask, "There is sin in your heart, and yet you have received the Holy Spirit?" he says, "Yes, I have." When we ask, "What is the meaning of the word Holy Spirit? Does it not mean the holy Spirit? Would the holy Spirit be present in a heart that has sin, or would He not?" he says, "He would not." When we ask, "Then, though you have sin, do you go to heaven because you believe in Jesus, or do you not?" he says, "I do." When we ask,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"Is heaven a place where those who have no sin go, or a place where those who have sin go?" he says, "It is a place where those who have no sin go." Then we ask, "Then is it right or wrong to say that you go to heaven while there is sin in your heart?"

From then on that person tilts his head in puzzlement. You do not know how many contradictions there are in what you say. If there is a person who has sin in heaven, is that place heaven, or is it hell? It cannot be heaven. It is because a person who has sin always deceives, always robs, and tries to kill.

So in 2 Corinthians chapter 6 it says not to do the work of God together with sinners, not to be yoked together with unbelievers. Why is that? It is the word that because they are people who keep deceiving, robbing what one has, trying to kill, and plotting such schemes, one must not work together with those people. For those people to work with us, they must believe.

Only one who acknowledges that he is a sinner can believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and become righteous

What is difficult about believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? Jesus came as the Savior; He is the Son of God; He is our Savior; He is the Creator; He came to this earth, bore all the sins of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross, was nailed and died, and rose again, and so saved us from sin—if one believes that fact, it is salvation. If one believes the word, it is salvation. When you come to know it, receiving the remission of sin is not difficult. Only, there is one thing that must be presupposed without fail in this gospel. Because one was born a sinner, one must acknowledge that at

present he is a sinner, and one must also acknowledge that if he has sin, he is one who goes to hell.

With this fact presupposed, one can receive salvation by believing the work in which Jesus bore our sins with the baptism He received from John, and what Jesus did in being judged and dying on the Cross and rising from the dead and saving us. Unless one is a sinner, one can never receive salvation. Only a sinner can receive salvation, and only a sinner can believe and become righteous. Do you understand? The Lord saved us and gave us the Holy Spirit as a gift, and after one has fully believed in the gospel of the remission of sin and had his sins washed away in his heart, the Holy Spirit is always present and pours living water into our hearts like a river.

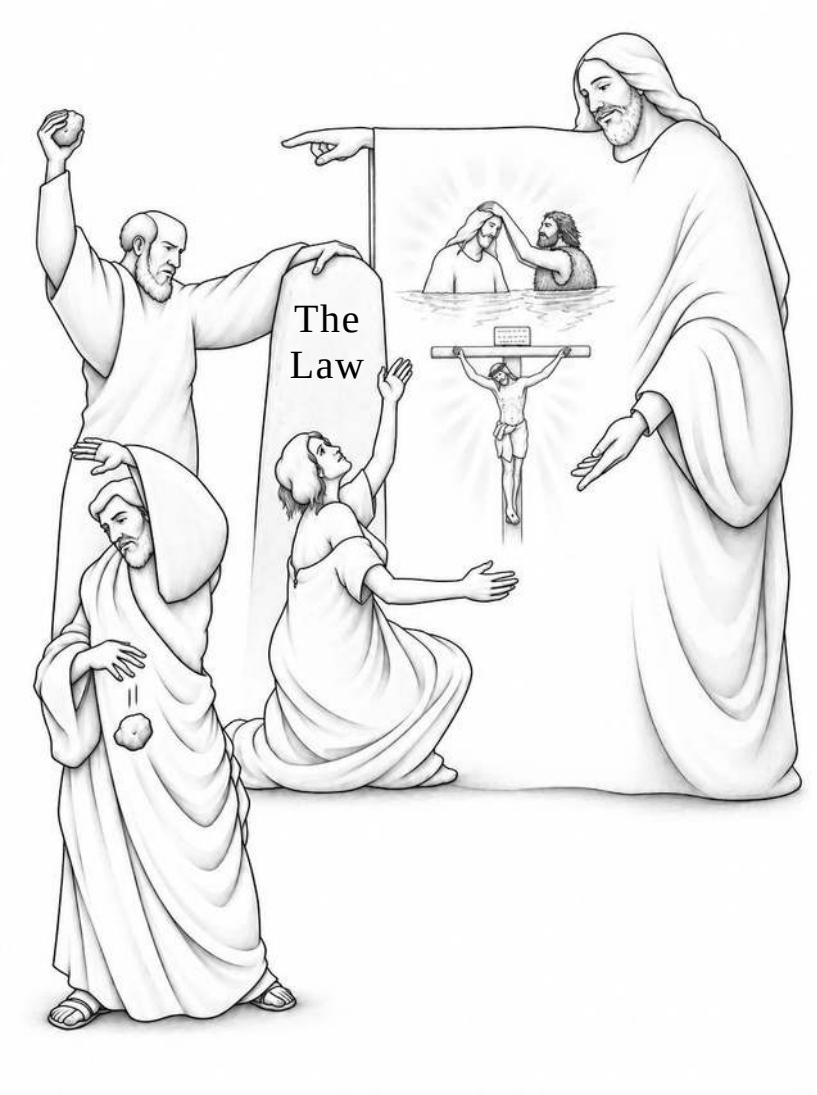
It is the word that because the word—that Jesus took our sins upon Himself and bore them by receiving baptism from John, was judged and died on the Cross, and saved us—is always in our hearts, our hearts do not become like hell over ordinary matters. Peace flows in the heart like a flowing river, so there is peace in my heart and there is peace in your hearts. But since the human heart is as small as a grain of millet, when even one irritating thing arises, the peace is sometimes broken because of that matter, but soon we regain the peace again. It is because the Lord has saved us. I give thanks. Dear fellow believers, is that so, or is it not? It is so. He has given you such fullness of the Holy Spirit. I hope you will give thanks by faith. I have finished the word. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

CHAPTER

8

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.



You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 8 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit

In John 8:1–11, Jesus said to the woman who had been caught in adultery, in the very act, *"Neither do I condemn you."* If these words were to be explained within the gospel of the water and the Spirit, divided into three—first, the sin inherited through Adam; second, the sins we commit every day while living on this earth; and third, our eternal sins—how would it be?

"When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, 'Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?' She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'" (John 8:10–11).

To explain the words of Jesus in the dimension of three kinds of sin, we must first make the distinction clear.

The first is the sin inherited from Adam, the root and the source of sin; the second is the actual sins that come out of that sinful nature and that we commit throughout our lives; and the third is all the sins of the world, including past, present, and future, for which we must receive eternal judgment. It is not that the three each require a different salvation. They are explained by dividing them into the origin of sin, the actual acts of sin, and the scope of sin in time.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Category	The meaning of sin	How it appears in the text	How Jesus solved it
The sin inherited from Adam	The status of a sinner and the sinful nature held from birth	The accusers, too, were all convicted by their conscience and left	He bore all the sin of mankind with the baptism He received from John
The sins committed every day	The actual sins committed throughout one's life in heart, thought, and deed	The woman was actually caught in adultery, in the very act	He bore all those sins and was judged on the Cross
Eternal sins	All the sins of the world, including past, present, and future, and the eternal judgment that follows them	The woman was placed in the position of having to die according to the law	He accomplished one eternal atonement, rose from the dead, and gave eternal life

1. First, the sin inherited through Adam

The problem of the woman caught in adultery did not begin only with the one act she committed that day. The root of that sin lies in the fact that, through the transgression of Adam, all mankind came to be born under sin.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

It is not that a person first becomes a sinner because he has committed sin; rather, he commits sin because he was born with a sinful nature as a descendant of Adam. In the heart of man there are sins such as lewdness, greed, hatred and envy, falsehood and pride. When these sins meet with circumstances and opportunities, they appear in thoughts, words, and deeds.

Therefore, the woman caught in adultery was not the only sinner. The scribes and the Pharisees who held stones and condemned her were likewise sinners who had inherited sin from Adam. They saw only the sin of the woman that had been exposed, but Jesus knew even the sins that were in their hearts.

When Jesus said, *"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first,"* the accusers were convicted by their conscience and all went away. Before these words, the difference between the woman and her accusers disappeared. The woman was a sinner whose sin had been revealed in action, and the accusers were sinners who hid their own sins and condemned others. Before God, all of them were the same sinners born under sin through Adam.

Jesus came to save all such people who inherited sin from Adam. With the baptism He received from John, Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all. Even the status of a sinner and the condemnation of sin that had continued from Adam were all transferred to the body of Jesus.

Therefore, the starting point of salvation lies not in the thought, "I am better than that woman," but in admitting, "I, too, am a person born under sin through Adam, a sinner who cannot escape the judgment of God." The person who admits the root of his own sin can receive the grace of the remission of sins that Jesus accomplished.

2. Second, the sins we commit every day while living on this earth

The sin of the woman caught in adultery was not a sin that had stayed only in her heart, but an actual sin that had appeared in a real act. The law pointed out that sin clearly, and the woman could not deny her deed.

We, too, commit countless sins in thought, word, and deed while we live. We fail to love God perfectly, fail to love our neighbor as ourselves, and we hate, judge, lie, and harbor greed. There are sins we commit knowingly, sins we commit repeatedly out of weakness, and sins we commit without even realizing that they are sins.

A person cannot even remember all the sins he has committed, nor count them one by one. But the law of God and our conscience point out that we have done wrong. The reason the people who accused the woman were convicted by their conscience when they heard the words of Jesus was that they, too, knew their own sins.

Jesus bore even all the sins people commit every day. With the baptism He received from John, Jesus bore in His own body not only the sin of adultery that the woman had committed, but also the sins that all people commit in heart and deed throughout their lives. And having the sin of the world transferred to Him, He bore that sin and went on to the Cross. By shedding His blood on the Cross, He received in our place the judgment of all those sins.

Therefore, the words "*Neither do I condemn you*" do not mean that the adultery of the woman was not a sin. They are a declaration of salvation that this sin had been transferred to Jesus and that Jesus would now receive the judgment of that sin in her place. Jesus did not overlook the sin; He bore the price of the sin with His own body.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. What should be done about the sins committed after being saved?

Even a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit may do wrong while living, because his flesh is weak. But those sins, too, are included in the sin of the world that Jesus bore.

When a person who has received the remission of sins does wrong, it is not that he passes his sin on to Jesus anew in order to be saved again. He must honestly admit his wrong before God, and confirm by faith the fact that Jesus already bore that sin, too, with the baptism He received from John and was judged for it on the Cross. And he must turn from his wrong and live according to the will of God.

The order in which Jesus spoke to the woman is important.

1. First, He said, *"Neither do I condemn you."*
2. Then He said, *"Go and sin no more."*

It is not that one escapes condemnation by not committing sin. Because Jesus first saved us from sin and condemnation, we can live a new life. The words *"sin no more"* are not a condition for receiving the remission of sins, but the direction of the new life that a person who has received the remission of sins is to live.

A saved person does not make grace an excuse for committing sin. Rather, because he knows the love of Jesus, who bore our sins and was judged for them, he turns from sin, and he comes to offer his body not to sin but to the righteous work of God and to the spreading of the gospel.

4. Third, our eternal sins

In this explanation, 'eternal sins' refers to all the sins that

mankind has committed from the beginning of the world to its end, including past, present, and future. It also includes the problem of the eternal judgment that people must receive because of those sins.

Jesus did not bear only the sins we have committed up to now. The sin that Jesus bore with the baptism He received from John is *"the sin of the world."* The sin of the world includes all of the following sins:

— The sin inherited from Adam

— The sins committed from birth until now

— The sins committed now in heart and deed

— The sins that will be committed while living from now on

— The sins committed by all mankind from the beginning of the world to its end

The baptism that Jesus received was an event that took place once and for all. His dying by shedding His blood on the Cross was also a judgment accomplished once and for all. By rising from the dead, Jesus overcame sin and death and completed eternal salvation.

Because Jesus, who is the eternal God, accomplished one eternal atonement with His own body, the effect of that salvation is also eternal. If Jesus had removed only the sins of the past, a person would have to come under condemnation again every time he sins today. If the sins of the future remained, no one could be sure of eternal salvation.

But Jesus, knowing from beginning to end all the sins of human beings who live within time, bore them all at once with the baptism He received from John. On the Cross He paid the price of those sins in full, and by saying, *"It is finished!"* He completed the judgment. Those who believe in this fact receive the eternal remission of sins and eternal life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

5. Why did Jesus say, *"Neither do I condemn you"*?

Because Jesus is God, who is without sin, He was the only One among the people present there who could actually judge the woman. But Jesus did not come to condemn the woman; He came to save her from sin.

The reasons Jesus could say to the woman, *"Neither do I condemn you"* are as follows.

1. Because Jesus had already borne the sins of the woman with the baptism He received from John.

2. Because He would bear those sins and be judged in her place on the Cross.

3. Because He would rise from the dead and give new life to the woman and to all who believe.

4. Because the Holy Spirit confirms the remission of sins to those who believe in the salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Jesus did not treat the judgment that was rightly to fall on the woman as though it had never existed. He took that judgment upon His own body. Because the condemnation that the woman was to receive was transferred to Jesus, Jesus declared to the woman not condemnation but salvation.

6. The condemnation of the law and the salvation of the gospel

The law exposed the sin of the woman, but it could not remove that sin. The law says, "You have committed sin and must be judged." But Jesus says, "I will bear your sin and receive your judgment in your place."

What the law does	What the gospel of the water and the Spirit does
It exposes sin	It shows that Jesus bore the sin that was exposed
It condemns the sinner	It testifies that Jesus received the condemnation in place of the sinner
It declares that the wages of sin is death	It testifies that the wages of sin were all paid on the Cross
It sets the sinner before judgment	It leads those who believe to the remission of sins and eternal life

The scribes and the Pharisees condemned others with the law, but they did not realize their own sins or seek the grace of Jesus. The woman was left alone before Jesus, in a state in which she could not hide her sin. Right there she heard from Jesus the word of the remission of sins and salvation.

It is hard for a person who hides his sin and condemns others to accept the grace of Jesus. But the person who admits his own sin and stands before Jesus can hear the word of salvation, *"Neither do I condemn you."*

Conclusion

In John 8:1–11, Jesus appeared as the Savior who solves all the problems of the sin inherited from Adam, the sins we commit every day throughout our lives, and the eternal sins that include past, present, and future.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Through Adam all people became sinners, countless actual sins came out of that sinful nature, and because of all those sins people had to receive eternal judgment. But Jesus, who is God, came in the flesh of a man and bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. By shedding His blood on the Cross He received the judgment of all sins in our place, and by rising from the dead He completed eternal salvation.

Therefore, the words *"Neither do I condemn you"* are a declaration of salvation that Jesus Himself bore the root of sin that continued from Adam, all the sins we commit throughout our lives, and the eternal judgment. Those who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with their hearts receive the remission of all their sins, escape condemnation, and become the children of God. And giving thanks for the grace of the remission of sins they have received, they come to live in the light according to the words *"go and sin no more."*

In John 8:12–20, Jesus said that He is the light of the world; if this is explained within the gospel of the water and the Spirit, by which He bore and removed all our sins, how does it turn out?

"Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying, 'I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life.'" (John 8:12).

That Jesus called Himself *"the light of the world"* does not stop at meaning that He is a teacher who gives ethical lessons to the people of the world. It means that He is the God of life who

saves mankind, fallen into the darkness of sin and death through Adam, with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

In particular, verse 12 follows the event in which He said to the woman caught in adultery, in the very act, *"Neither do I condemn you."* Therefore, Jesus, the light of the world, is the Savior who lifts sinners out of the darkness of condemnation and gives them the remission of sins and eternal life.

1. Darkness means sin, condemnation, and death

To understand Jesus, who is the light, we must first know what kind of darkness people are in.

People were born under sin through the transgression of Adam. Because they are born with a sinful nature in their hearts, they commit sin continually in thought, word, and deed while they live. Those sins are recorded in the conscience of man and exposed by the law of God.

The adulterous woman who appears in the first part of John chapter 8 was also in this darkness of sin. She was caught in adultery, in the very act, and was placed in the position of having to die, condemned by the law. But the scribes and the Pharisees who accused her were not people without sin either. When they heard the words of Jesus, they, too, were convicted by their conscience and all went away.

What darkens people is as follows.

— The sinful nature inherited from Adam

— The sins committed in thought, word, and deed throughout one's life

— The condemnation pronounced by the law and the conscience

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

— The death and judgment that must be received as the wages of sin

— The spiritual ignorance that fails to recognize God and Jesus

— The power of Satan that holds people with sin and death

A sinner cannot drive out this darkness by his own efforts. Just as darkness cannot turn itself into light, a sinner cannot remove his own sins with good deeds and religious acts. Darkness disappears only when light shines in from outside. The One who came to this earth as that light is Jesus Christ.

2. Jesus is not a light that only exposes sin, but the light that removes sin

The law also exposes the sins of people. But the law only points out sin and condemns it; it cannot remove that sin. Jesus, the light of the world, not only exposed the sins of people, but also bore those sins Himself and removed them.

Jesus, who is God, came to this earth in the flesh of a man in order to save sinners. And with the baptism He received from John, He bore all the sins of the world once and for all. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin in our place, and by rising from the dead He overcame sin and death.

This is the reason Jesus is the light of the world.

The darkness of sin	The work of Jesus, the light of the world
Through Adam all people became sinners	He came as the Savior in the flesh of a man
All the sins of people are exposed before God	He bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John
One must receive death and judgment as the wages of sin	He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin in the sinner's place
The sinner is under the power of death	He rose from the dead and overcame death
People live in condemnation without knowing God	He clearly shows the remission of sins and eternal life through the word of the gospel
People live as slaves of Satan	He brings those who believe over to be the children of God

Therefore, the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the light of salvation that drives out the darkness of sin. When the fact that Jesus bore all sins with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of those sins on the Cross, and gave us new life by rising from the dead shines into the heart of a sinner, the darkness of condemnation disappears.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. *"He who follows Me"* is the person who believes in the work of salvation of Jesus

Jesus said, *"He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness."* To follow Jesus does not mean only to imitate the good deeds of Jesus outwardly. It is first to know who Jesus is, and to believe with the heart in the work of salvation that He accomplished.

To follow Jesus is to have the following faith.

— We believe that Jesus is God the Creator.

— We believe that this God came as the Savior in the flesh of a man.

— We believe that Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— We believe that Jesus bore my sins and was judged on the Cross.

— We believe that Jesus rose from the dead.

— We live as those who have received the remission of sins, according to this word of salvation.

Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit live in the light, not because they have not committed sin. They escape the darkness of condemnation because they believe in the word of salvation, that Jesus bore and removed all their sins.

Even when their weaknesses are revealed after they are saved, they do not rely on their own deeds again. They honestly admit their wrongs, and they look to the light of the gospel, that Jesus bore even those sins with the baptism He received from John and was judged for them on the Cross. Then, without being seized by guilt and condemnation, they gain the strength to live again according to the will of God.

4. To *"have the light of life"* means to obtain the remission of sins and eternal life

The light that Jesus gives is not merely a light that brightens human knowledge. It is the light of life that brings dead souls to life.

When we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, all the sins that were in our hearts are washed away and condemnation disappears. God gives the Holy Spirit as a gift to those who have received the remission of sins and makes them His children. The Holy Spirit testifies to the following facts in the hearts of those who believe.

— Jesus bore all my sins.

— On the Cross, the judgment of my sins was finished.

— Through the resurrection of Jesus, new life was given to me.

— I have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

— God has made me His child and given me eternal life.

The person who has this testimony in his heart is the person who has obtained the light of life. Even if the circumstances of the world become difficult or one's own weakness is revealed, the light of salvation does not disappear. This is because the salvation Jesus accomplished does not change according to human feelings or deeds, but is the perfect and eternal work of God.

5. The reason the testimony of Jesus is true

The Pharisees said to Jesus, *"You bear witness of Yourself; Your witness is not true."* To this, Jesus said that His testimony

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

was true because He knew where He came from and where He was going.

Jesus was not One who lived without knowing His own birth, ministry, and death. He knew that He had been sent by God the Father and had come in the flesh of a man. He also knew that He would bear the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John, that bearing that sin He would be crucified and die, and that after rising again He would return to God the Father.

The Pharisees saw only the body of Jesus. Because they judged Jesus to be an ordinary man from Nazareth, they could not accept the testimony that He is the light of the world. But Jesus knew all of these: His own origin, the purpose for which He had come, and the place to which He would return.

There is clear testimony to the work of salvation of Jesus.

1. Jesus Himself testified of Himself as the light of the world and the Savior.

2. God the Father testified to the words and the work of Jesus.

3. When Jesus received baptism from John, God the Father testified of Him as His beloved Son.

4. The baptism of Jesus, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection became the testimony that He accomplished the salvation of mankind.

5. The Holy Spirit confirms the remission of sins and eternal life in the hearts of those who believe in this gospel.

Therefore, the gospel of the water and the Spirit is not a theory of salvation that people have made up. It is the truth of salvation that God the Father planned, that Jesus accomplished with His own body, and that the Holy Spirit testifies to in the hearts of those who believe.

6. The reason the judgment of Jesus is true

Jesus said to the Pharisees, *"You judge according to the flesh."* They judged by looking only at people's origins, appearance, and social status. So even though the Son of God was right before their eyes, they did not recognize Him.

But the judgment of Jesus is true. Jesus is God, who knows not only the outward appearance of people but also all the sin and faith that are in their hearts. Moreover, Jesus does not judge alone; He judges together with God the Father who sent Him.

The judgment He gave earlier to the adulterous woman, *"Neither do I condemn you,"* was also a true judgment. It was not that Jesus, without knowing the sins of the woman, said He would remit them unconditionally. Because He had borne those sins in His own body with the baptism He received from John, He did not condemn her, meaning that He Himself would receive the judgment of those sins in her place.

The justice and the love of God were accomplished together in Jesus.

— The justice of God judges sin without fail.

— The love of God did not bring that judgment down on the sinner, but had Jesus bear it.

— Jesus bore sin with the baptism He received from John.

— On the Cross He received the judgment of that sin and fulfilled the justice of God.

— By giving the remission of sins and eternal life to those who believe in this fact, He fulfilled the love of God.

Therefore, the judgment of Jesus is not a judgment that treats sin lightly, but the judgment of salvation given after the price of sin has been paid in full.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

7. If we know Jesus, we come to know God the Father

When the people asked, *"Where is Your Father?"* Jesus said, *"You know neither Me nor My Father. If you had known Me, you would have known My Father also."*

To know Jesus is not only to know His background in the flesh. It is to know that Jesus is the Son of God and is God, and that He came to save mankind according to the will of God the Father.

When we look at the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished, we come to know what kind of God the Father is. God is the just One who hates sin, and at the same time He is the God of love who loved sinners and sent His own Son. Through the baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection of Jesus, God the Father justified sinners and made them His own children.

Therefore, to believe in Jesus as the Savior is to believe in God the Father, and to accept the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished is to accept the love of God the Father.

8. *"His hour had not yet come"*

Verse 20 records that Jesus spoke these words in front of the treasury of the temple, but that no one laid hands on Him. The Cross of Jesus was not an accidental death that happened because He was dragged along by the plans of men.

Jesus had to give up His body at the time appointed by God the Father. He first had to bear all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John, and then, as the Lamb of God bearing that sin, He had to shed His blood on the Cross at the appointed time.

When the hour of Jesus had come, He gave up His life of His

own accord. And He rose from the dead and completed the salvation of mankind. This shows that Jesus, the light of the world, accomplished the work of salvation from beginning to end according to the will of God the Father.

Conclusion

That Jesus said, *"I am the light of the world"* means that He is God who removes the darkness of sin, condemnation, and death with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Jesus came to this earth in the flesh of a man. With the baptism He received from John, He bore all the sin of mankind once and for all. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin in our place, and He rose from the dead and gave new life and eternal life to those who believe.

The person who believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with his heart is the person who follows Jesus. That person no longer walks in the darkness of the condemnation of sin and of death. The Holy Spirit testifies to the remission of sins and eternal life in his heart, and makes him live in the light, relying on the salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Therefore, to follow Jesus, the light of the world, is not to try to overcome darkness by one's own deeds, but to accept with the heart the light of salvation, that Jesus removed all sins with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and to live according to that word.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 8:12–20, what does it mean that Jesus came to this earth to fulfill the words of prophecy concerning the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement in the Old Testament, received baptism from John, was crucified and shed His blood, rose from the dead, and became the Savior of all who believe?

In John 8:12, Jesus said:

"Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying, 'I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life.'"

Jesus is *"the light of the world"* not merely because He gave excellent teachings. It is because He came to this earth to save mankind, shut up in the darkness of sin and judgment, and Himself fulfilled the prophetic promise contained in the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement in the Old Testament.

1. The sacrifice of the Day of Atonement in the Old Testament showed the work of salvation of Jesus in advance

On the Day of Atonement in Leviticus chapter 16, Aaron the high priest laid both his hands on the head of the live goat as the representative of the people of Israel.

"Aaron shall lay both his hands on the head of the live goat, confess over it all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions, concerning all their sins, putting them on the head of the goat, and shall send it away into the wilderness by the hand of a suitable man. The goat shall bear on itself all their iniquities to an uninhabited land; and he shall release the

goat in the wilderness" (Leviticus 16:21–22).

In this sacrifice, the principle by which a sinner is saved appears clearly.

1. The high priest represents the people.

2. Through the laying on of hands by the high priest, the sins of the people pass on to the sacrificial offering.

3. The sacrificial offering that has received the sins passed on to it dies and sheds its blood in place of the people.

4. The people receive the remission of the sins that the sacrificial offering bore.

But the sacrifice of animals had to be repeated every year. Through this sacrifice, God showed in advance the eternal atonement that the Son of God would Himself come and accomplish in the future.

2. Jesus fulfilled the laying on of hands of the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement with the baptism He received from John

Although Jesus is the Son of God, who is without sin, He went to the Jordan River and received baptism from John. Jesus spoke of the reason as follows.

"But Jesus answered and said to him, 'Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.' Then he allowed Him" (Matthew 3:15).

In the Old Testament, the high priest laid his hands on the head of the sacrificial offering and passed the sins of the people of Israel on to it. In the New Testament, John, who had been raised up as the representative of mankind, baptized Jesus, and with that baptism Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

What Jesus called *"to fulfill all righteousness"* is to fulfill completely the righteous will of God to save sinners from sin. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross.

The sacrifice of the Day of Atonement in the Old Testament	The work of salvation that Jesus accomplished
The high priest represented the people	As the representative of mankind, John baptized Jesus
Hands were laid on the head of the sacrificial offering	Jesus received baptism from John
All the sins of the people passed on to the sacrificial offering	All the sins of the world were transferred to Jesus
The sacrificial offering died and shed its blood in the people's place	Jesus shed His blood and died on the Cross
The people received the remission of sins	Those who believe in the gospel obtain the remission of sins and eternal life

3. The blood of the Cross is Jesus receiving the punishment for the sin He bore

The sacrificial offering in the Old Testament shed its blood because it had received the sins passed on to it. In the same way, Jesus was crucified and shed His blood not because of His own sin, but because He was receiving in our place the judgment of the sin of the world that He had borne with the baptism He

received from John.

On the Cross, Jesus bore the curse, the punishment, and the death that we were to receive. Therefore, the blood of the Cross is the testimony that Jesus paid in full the price of all the sins of the world.

"By that will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all" (Hebrews 10:10).

The sacrifices of the Old Testament were repeated every year, but Jesus offered His own body once and for all and accomplished eternal atonement.

"For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified" (Hebrews 10:14).

4. The resurrection of Jesus is the testimony that salvation has been completed

It did not end with Jesus bearing the sin of the world and dying on the Cross. By rising from the dead, He overcame the power of sin and death.

The resurrection of Jesus testifies to the following facts.

— The price of the sin of the world that Jesus bore has been paid in full.

— God has fully accepted the work of salvation of Jesus.

— New life and eternal life have been given to those who believe in Jesus.

— It has been revealed that Jesus is the Son of God and the living Savior.

Therefore, the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the word of perfect salvation in which the incarnation of Jesus, the baptism He received from John, the blood and death of the Cross, and the resurrection are joined into one.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

5. This is the reason Jesus is *"the light of the world"*

A person who has sin is under the judgment of God, and so he is in spiritual darkness. But Jesus bore that sin with the baptism He received from John, paid the price of sin on the Cross, and rose from the dead. Those who believe in that work of salvation escape sin and condemnation and obtain the light of life.

From John 8:13 on, the Pharisees claimed that because Jesus testified of Himself, His testimony was not true. But Jesus said that God the Father who sent Him testified together with Him.

"I am One who bears witness of Myself, and the Father who sent Me bears witness of Me" (John 8:18).

God the Father promised salvation in advance through the sacrificial system of the Old Testament, sent Jesus into the world, and when Jesus received baptism from John, the Father Himself testified that Jesus is the Son of God. Jesus completed the work of baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection according to the will of salvation that the Father had established.

In verse 20, the reason no one laid hands on Jesus was that His hour had not yet come. The death of Jesus did not happen by an accidental decision of men. Jesus had to bear the sin of the world and be crucified at the time appointed by God, and so complete salvation.

Conclusion

That Jesus fulfilled the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement in the Old Testament means the following.

Jesus came to this earth in the flesh of a man according to the will of God. And with the baptism He received from John, He

bore all the sins of the world once and for all. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. By shedding His blood and dying on the Cross, He received the punishment for all sins, and by rising from the dead He completed eternal salvation.

Those who believe in this work of salvation with their hearts receive the remission of all their sins, escape condemnation and judgment, and receive the Holy Spirit and eternal life. Therefore, Jesus is the light of the world that illuminates the darkness of sin, and He becomes the perfect Savior of all who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In John 8:21–30, what do these words say?

John 8:21–30 is the text in which Jesus spoke of where He came from and where He was going, and in whom a person must believe so as not to die in his sins.

The central word of the text is verse 24.

"Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for if you do not believe that I am He, you will die in your sins."

Here, to believe *"that I am He"* means to believe in Jesus not as a mere teacher or prophet, but as the Son of God sent by God the Father and the only Savior of mankind.

Text	Central content
Verses 21–22	Jesus said that He would return to the Father by way of the Cross and the resurrection
Verses 23–24	People belong to what is beneath and to the world, but Jesus is the One who came from above

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Text	Central content
Verses 25–27	Jesus existed from the beginning and spoke what He heard from the Father
Verse 28	After Jesus was lifted up on the Cross, it was revealed that He is the Savior
Verses 29–30	The Father is with Jesus, and many people believed His words

1. *"I am going away"* means that after the Cross and the resurrection He would return to the Father

Jesus said:

"Then Jesus said to them again, 'I am going away, and you will seek Me, and will die in your sin. Where I go you cannot come.'" (John 8:21).

That Jesus was going away does not mean that He was fleeing somewhere in this world. He was saying that He would be crucified and die, and that after rising from the dead He would return to God the Father.

But the Jews understood these words only in a fleshly way and wondered whether Jesus was going to kill Himself. They heard the words of Jesus with their ears, but they did not realize the fact that Jesus is the Son of God who came from heaven and the Savior.

The Kingdom of God, to which Jesus was going, is not a place one can enter carrying sin. Therefore, a person who does not believe in Jesus and has not received the remission of sins cannot go where Jesus was going.

2. The words *"You are from beneath; I am from above"*

"And He said to them, 'You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world.'" (John 8:23).

People are born as descendants of Adam and placed under sin and death. By human thoughts, deeds, and efforts alone, no one can escape sin and enter the Kingdom of God. This is because people are from beneath and belong to this world, which is stained with sin.

But Jesus came from above. Jesus was born in the flesh through the body of Mary, but His essence is God. The Son of God, who is without sin, came to this earth in the flesh of a man in order to save mankind, fallen into sin.

Therefore, the only One who can save sinners is Jesus Christ, who came from above.

3. The words *"if you do not believe that I am He"*

To believe *"that I am He"* is to believe the following facts about Jesus with the heart.

— Jesus is God, who has existed from the beginning.

— God the Father sent Jesus as the Savior of mankind.

— Jesus came to this earth in the flesh of a man.

— Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

— Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross.

— He shed His blood on the Cross and received all the punishment for sin.

— By rising from the dead, He overcame sin and death.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

— He gives the remission of sins and eternal life to those who believe in Him.

To believe in Jesus is not merely to acknowledge the fact that "Jesus existed." It is to know and accept with the heart who Jesus is and how He saved me from all my sins with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

If one does not believe in this fact, one's sins remain as they are. That is why Jesus said again and again, *"You will die in your sins."* To die in one's sins means to die without having received the remission of sins and to come to receive the judgment of God.

4. The reason they asked, *"Who are You?"*

The Jews asked Jesus, *"Who are You?"* Jesus answered, *"Just what I have been saying to you from the beginning."*

Jesus is not One who suddenly appeared and claimed to be the Savior. Jesus is God, who was with God the Father from the beginning, who created all things, and who spoke in advance, through all the promises and prophecies of the Old Testament, of the salvation He would carry out.

Yet the Jews judged Jesus only by the flesh. They thought of the region Jesus came from and His family in the flesh, but they did not recognize God the Father who sent Jesus, nor the divinity of Jesus.

5. The words *"When you lift up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am He"*

"Then Jesus said to them, 'When you lift up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am He, and that I do nothing of Myself;

but as My Father taught Me, I speak these things.'" (John 8:28).

The words *"When you lift up the Son of Man"* mean that they would hang Jesus high on the Cross and put Him to death. John 12:33 also testifies that these words signified by what death Jesus would die.

Jesus on the Cross was not only a sinless One dying unjustly. Jesus was already in the state of having borne all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John. Therefore, the Cross is the place of judgment where Jesus received in our place the punishment for the sin of the world that had been transferred to Him.

Only after Jesus died on the Cross and rose again did the disciples and many people come to know the following facts clearly.

— Jesus was the Christ promised in the Old Testament.

— Jesus was the Son of God, sent by God.

— He bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John.

— The death of the Cross was a death that paid the price of the sin of mankind in our place.

— The resurrection was the testimony that Jesus is the Savior who overcame sin and death.

6. Jesus did the will of God the Father perfectly

"And He who sent Me is with Me. The Father has not left Me alone, for I always do those things that please Him" (John 8:29).

The work of salvation of Jesus was not a human plan that Jesus set up alone. God the Father sent the Son in order to save mankind, and Jesus obeyed the will of the Father.

The thing Jesus did that pleased the Father was the work of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

saving sinners from sin and judgment. Jesus bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John, received the punishment for that sin on the Cross, and by rising from the dead completed the plan of salvation of the Father.

7. *"As He spoke these words, many believed in Him"*

When Jesus said that He was the One who came from above, the Savior sent by the Father, and that He would be lifted up on the Cross in the future, many people believed.

Salvation does not come from altering with human thoughts what Jesus accomplished and then believing it. We receive the remission of sins when we accept, just as the word says, who Jesus, whom God sent, is and what salvation He completed with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Conclusion

Therefore, John 8:21–30 may be summarized as follows.

Jesus, the Son of God who came from above, bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John, was lifted up on the Cross and received the punishment for sin, and then rose from the dead and returned to the Father. Those who believe in this Jesus as their own Savior obtain the remission of sins and eternal life, but those who do not believe die in their sins and come to receive judgment. Therefore, the core of this text is: do not die in your sins, but believe with your heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ accomplished.

In John 8:31–59, if the reason the Lord said, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free"* were explained with the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, how would it be?

In John 8:31–59, Jesus spoke of what true faith is, of what people are bound to, and of how they obtain freedom from that bondage.

"Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'" (John 8:31–32).

The reason Jesus said these words is that people are born as slaves of sin and cannot escape sin and judgment by their own strength. Jesus taught that the truth that sets sinners free is He Himself and the work of salvation He accomplished.

1. People think they are free, but in reality they are slaves of sin

The Jews claimed that they were the descendants of Abraham and had never been slaves to anyone. But Jesus was not speaking of their lineage or social status; He was speaking of their spiritual state.

"Jesus answered them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin. And a slave does not abide in the house forever, but a son abides forever. Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.'" (John 8:34–36).

People think they are free if they live according to their own thoughts. But if one keeps committing sin even after resolving

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

not to, and cannot escape guilt and the fear of judgment, one is under the rule of sin.

A slave of sin is in the following state.

— He is under the sin inherited from Adam.

— He commits actual sins continually while he lives.

— He cannot escape the condemnation and judgment of sin.

— He cannot remove his sins with his own good deeds and religious efforts.

— After death he comes to receive the judgment of God.

So true freedom is not something a person obtains by himself; it must be given by Jesus, the Son of God.

2. What is *"the truth"* of which Jesus spoke?

In John 14:6, Jesus said that He Himself is the way, the truth, and the life. Therefore, the truth spoken of in John chapter 8 is not mere knowledge or an ethical teaching.

The truth is Jesus Christ Himself, and the word of salvation that Jesus accomplished in order to save sinners. Spoken in terms of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that truth is as follows.

1. Jesus, the Son of God, came to this earth in the flesh of a man.

2. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

3. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross.

4. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the punishment for all the sins of the world.

5. By rising from the dead, He overcame the power of sin and death.

6. He gives the remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal

life to those who believe in this word of salvation with their hearts.

The First Epistle of John also says that Jesus came by water and blood, and that the Holy Spirit testifies to this.

"This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not with the water only, but with the water and with the blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is the truth. For there are three who bear witness, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and the three agree in one" –ASV (1 John 5:6–8).

Here the water testifies to the baptism that Jesus received from John, and the blood testifies to the judgment of sin that He received on the Cross. The Holy Spirit testifies that this work of salvation is the true salvation of God. Therefore, the testimony of the water, the blood, and the Spirit is not a gospel divided into parts, but shows the one perfect salvation that Jesus accomplished.

3. How did Jesus set sinners free?

A sinner cannot pay the price of his own sin by himself and live. So Jesus stood in the place of the sinner.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world in His own body with the baptism He received from John. As a result, the sin of the world did not remain on the sinner as it was, but was transferred to Jesus. Jesus, who bore the sin of the world through baptism, bore that sin and was crucified.

The blood of the Cross is the testimony that Jesus paid with death the price of the sin He bore. And by rising from the dead, Jesus showed that the punishment for sin had completely ended and that eternal life had been given to those who believe.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

What the sinner was bound to	The work by which Jesus set the sinner free
All the sins recorded in the heart	He bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John
The condemnation of sin	He had sin transferred to Himself and removed the condemnation of the sinner
The punishment and curse of sin	He shed His blood on the Cross and was judged in the sinner's place
Death and destruction	He rose from the dead and gave eternal life
The lies of the devil	He makes true salvation known through the written word of the gospel
The status of a slave	He makes those who have received the remission of sins the children of God

Therefore, the words *"if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed"* mean that because Jesus actually bore our sins and paid the price of those sins in full, those who believe become righteous people who are truly without sin.

4. The words *"If you abide in My word"*

Jesus did not call true disciples those who merely know His name and say with their mouths that they believe. He said, *"If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed."*

To abide in the word of Jesus is as follows.

— It is to believe the written word of God rather than one's own thoughts.

— It is to rely not on one's own deeds but on the salvation that Jesus accomplished.

— It is to believe in the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection as the gospel that removed one's own sins.

— It is, whenever one's shortcomings are revealed, not to look at one's own deeds but to hold on to the word of completed salvation.

— It is, even after receiving the remission of sins, to hear the word of God and live according to that word.

To know the truth is not merely to remember doctrines in one's head. It is to know through the word how Jesus bore all my sins and was judged for them, and to believe that word with the heart. When we believe in this way, the truth of the gospel drives sin and condemnation out of our hearts.

5. What matters is not one's lineage in the flesh but which word one believes

The Jews claimed that they were the descendants of Abraham. But while acknowledging that they were the descendants of Abraham in the flesh, Jesus said that their deeds were different from the faith of Abraham.

Abraham believed and obeyed the word of God, but these people rejected Jesus, whom God had sent, and His word, and tried to kill Him. Therefore, becoming a child of God is not decided by lineage in the flesh or by one's religious history.

Jesus said:

"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God" (John 8:47).

A person who is of God does not pick out and believe only

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the words that agree with his own thoughts. When God says that He has removed sin with the baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection of Jesus, he accepts that word as it is.

6. The devil keeps people from believing the truth

Jesus called the devil *"a liar and the father of it."* What the devil does is to make people doubt the word of God and to keep them from believing in the salvation that Jesus completed.

The devil makes people believe the following lies.

— He makes them think that even if they believe in Jesus, sin still remains in their hearts.

— He makes them think as if the salvation of Jesus were not perfect.

— He makes them believe that to receive the remission of sins, a person must keep washing away his sins with his own deeds.

— He makes them leave out of salvation the baptism Jesus received from John, and believe in the Cross alone, separately.

— He makes them put human tradition and doctrine ahead of the written word.

But the truth of the gospel testifies that Jesus bore all the sins of the world and completely received even the judgment of those sins. When we believe this truth with our hearts, we can escape the condemnation and the lies that the devil brings.

7. *"If anyone keeps My word he shall never see death"*

"Most assuredly, I say to you, if anyone keeps My word he shall never see death" (John 8:51).

These words do not mean that a person who believes in Jesus will not die physically. They mean that a person who has received the remission of sins and eternal life by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit will not come to the eternal judgment and destruction caused by sin, even though his body dies.

To keep the word of Jesus is to accept into one's heart the word of salvation that Jesus completed and to keep it by faith. Such a person has become not a slave of sin but a child of God, and has obtained the life to abide in the house of God forever.

8. The reason Jesus can set us free

"Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, before Abraham was, I AM.'" (John 8:58).

Although Jesus was born in the flesh long after Abraham, He existed before Abraham was born. This is because Jesus is not a created being but God, who has existed from eternity.

When the Jews heard these words, they tried to stone Jesus. They knew the fact that Jesus had revealed His divinity, but they did not believe in Him as God.

Because Jesus is the eternal God, the salvation He accomplished also has eternal effect. The righteous death of one man alone could not remove the sin of all mankind, but Jesus, who is God, bore the sin of all the people of the world with the baptism He received from John and was judged once and for all on the Cross, and so accomplished eternal salvation.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Conclusion

The reason Jesus said, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free"* is that all people are born as slaves of sin and cannot escape sin, judgment, and death by their own strength.

This truth is Jesus Christ and the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He accomplished. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received all the punishment for sin, and by rising from the dead He completed eternal salvation.

Those who believe this truth with their hearts receive the remission of all their sins, are set free from the condemnation and judgment of sin, escape the lies of the devil, and become the children of God and obtain eternal life. This is the gospel of the water and the Spirit, by which the Son of God truly sets sinners free.

In John 8:31–59, what does it mean that those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit with their hearts do not oppose those who have the same faith, but are united with one another?

John 8:31–59 shows the difference between those who believe the truth and those who oppose the truth. Those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with their hearts do not regard as rivals

or enemies the brothers and sisters who believe in the same gospel. Because they have received the same remission of sins and the same life from the one Jesus Christ, they accept one another as the family of God and as fellow workers of the gospel, and they are united.

However, unity is not a condition for receiving the remission of sins. One first receives the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished, and as a result, one comes to be united with those who have the same faith.

1. They are united because they abide in the same word of truth

"Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'" (John 8:31–32).

A true disciple of Jesus does not make his own thoughts the standard of faith, but abides in the word of Jesus. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit believe the same word, as follows.

— Jesus, the Son of God, came to this earth in the flesh of a man.

— Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

— Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross.

— He shed His blood on the Cross and received the punishment for all sins.

— By rising from the dead, He completed eternal salvation.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

— Those who believe in this gospel with their hearts receive the remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life.

In this way, people for whom the content of salvation is the same and the standard of faith is the same naturally come to look in the same direction. Though each one's character, circumstances, and assigned work differ, at the center of their hearts are the one Jesus Christ and the one gospel.

2. Because all have received the remission of sins by the same grace, there is no reason for anyone to exalt himself over another

"Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed" (John 8:36).

The One who set us free from sin is Jesus. We did not receive the remission of sins because we lived good lives or were more faithful than others. We received the remission of sins by faith because Jesus removed all our sins with the baptism He received from John and the blood of the Cross.

Those who believe in the same gospel all know the fact that they were saved by grace. Therefore, there is no ground for claiming that one is more righteous or higher than another.

— All were sinners, but they became the righteous by the grace of Jesus.

— All were slaves of sin, but the Son of God set them free.

— All were to be judged, but Jesus was judged in their place.

— All became the children of God not by their own merit but by believing in the same gospel.

When we believe this fact with our hearts, rather than rashly condemning or opposing other brothers and sisters when we see their shortcomings, we come to bear with one another,

remembering the fact that we, too, are people who have received the same grace.

3. Those who are of God hear the same word of God

The Jews in John chapter 8 claimed that they were the descendants of Abraham and the people of God. But they rejected the words of Jesus, whom God had sent, and tried to kill Jesus.

Jesus spoke of who the children of God are, as follows.

"Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I proceeded forth and came from God; nor have I come of Myself, but He sent Me.'" (John 8:42).

And He said again:

"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God" (John 8:47).

Two clear features appear in a person who is of God.

First, he loves Jesus, whom God sent.

Second, he hears and believes the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God has spoken.

Therefore, those who love the same Jesus and believe in the same gospel have no fundamental reason to oppose one another. This is because it is not that one person follows the word of Jesus and another follows his own thoughts, but that all of them humble their hearts before the same word.

4. They are united because they are the children of God who have received the same Holy Spirit

The Holy Spirit comes upon those who have received the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with their hearts. Therefore, the unity of those who have received the remission of sins does not come about simply because their characters suit one another or their human purposes are the same. It is the spiritual unity of people who believe in the same gospel and have received the same Holy Spirit.

The Epistle to the Ephesians says of this as follows.

"With all lowliness and gentleness, with longsuffering, bearing with one another in love, endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called in one hope of your calling; one Lord, one faith, one baptism; one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all" (Ephesians 4:2–6).

The ground on which the saints can be united is clear.

The ground of unity	Meaning
One body	The saints who have received the remission of sins belong to the one body of Christ
One Spirit	The same Holy Spirit dwells in the heart of each person
One hope	All look toward the Kingdom of God and eternal life
One Lord	All serve Jesus Christ as the Lord
One faith	All believe alike in the baptism of Jesus, the Cross, and the resurrection
One baptism	All believe that Jesus bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John
One God	All become the children of the one God and Father

Because the Holy Spirit has already made them one, the saints are not to create that unity anew, but to keep it with humility, gentleness, longsuffering, and love.

5. The difference between those who believe the truth and those who oppose the truth

Those who opposed Jesus in John chapter 8 heard the words of Jesus, but they did not accept those words into their hearts. They boasted of their lineage and their religious status, and they tried to kill Jesus for the reason that His words did not agree with their own thoughts.

The opposition Jesus spoke of is not a mere difference of character or of opinion. It is spiritual opposition that rejects and tries to do away with Jesus, whom God sent, and the truth He proclaimed.

In contrast, those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit acknowledge the salvation that Jesus accomplished. They lay down their own thoughts before the word of God, and they serve the Lord together with those who believe the same word.

Those who oppose the truth	Those who believe the truth
They put their own thoughts and status first	They make the word of God their standard
They reject the word of Jesus	They abide in the word of Jesus
They condemn others and try to kill them	They accept those who have received the same grace

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Those who oppose the truth	Those who believe the truth
They follow false teachings	They believe in and keep the gospel of the water and the Spirit
They seek their own glory	They seek the glory of Jesus Christ
They cause division and strife	They unite their hearts for the spreading of the gospel

6. How does unity appear in actual life?

The unity of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit appears not as a vague feeling but as an actual life of faith.

They bear with one another's shortcomings

Even a person who has received the remission of sins is weak in the flesh and can make mistakes. But a person who knows the fact that Jesus bore all his sins does not merely condemn when he sees the shortcomings of a brother or sister. He exhorts with the word, waits, and helps him to stand firm in the gospel again.

They bring their hearts together as one with the gospel as the standard

The center of unity is not people's assertions or personal tastes, but the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When all believe in the salvation that Jesus accomplished and obey that word, they can have one purpose.

They work together for the spreading of the gospel

One person may preach the word, another may pray, and yet another may serve with material things, time, and talents. Though the assigned tasks differ, the purpose is for people to hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit and receive the remission of sins.

They do not compete with one another, but work together

The fruit of the gospel is not the glory of any one person. It is the result of Jesus having accomplished salvation and of the Holy Spirit having worked. Therefore, those who have the same faith do not quarrel over who is higher or who has done more work, but help one another according to the office each has received.

They resolve conflicts with the word

When differences of thought arise among the saints, they do not judge by their own feelings and pride, but resolve them with the word of Jesus and the benefit of the gospel as the standard. They consider it more important that the gospel be preached fully and that the church stand firm than that their own assertions prevail.

7. The center of unity is not a person or an organization but the truth

True unity is not simply being gathered together or belonging

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

to the same organization. At the center of unity, Jesus Christ and the gospel of the water and the Spirit must be present without fail.

Jesus is God, who existed before Abraham was born. This Jesus bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and rose from the dead. Believing in this same Lord and this same gospel is the foundation that brings about the unity of the saints.

Therefore, to believe in the same gospel does not mean merely agreeing on a few doctrines. It is to believe together in the salvation that Jesus accomplished, to be led by the same Holy Spirit, and to share heart and faith in the work of saving souls within the Church of God.

Conclusion

Those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with their hearts are the children of God who have received the same grace and life through the one Jesus Christ. All of them were saved by believing in the baptism Jesus received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and they have received the same Holy Spirit and the same hope.

Therefore, saints who have the same faith accept one another not as people to oppose, but as brothers and sisters and fellow workers who are to serve the Lord together. They bear with one another's weaknesses, exhort one another with the word, and bring their hearts together for the work of keeping and preaching the truth of the gospel.

For those who believe in the same gospel to be united means to lay down their own thoughts and their own glory, to love one

another, with the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ accomplished at the center, and to serve the spreading of the gospel together with the Church of God. This is the fruit of faith that appears in the children of God who have obtained freedom through the truth.

In John 8:31–59, there are in this world the children of the devil and the children of God; if we were to say, in the dimension of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, through what one becomes a child of the devil or a child of God, how would it be?

In John 8:31–59, Jesus said that the children of God and the children of the devil are revealed not by lineage in the flesh or religious status, but by which word one believes with the heart and to whom one belongs as one lives.

Here the word ‘children’ does not mean being physically born of God or of the devil; it speaks of spiritual belonging and a relationship of faith. If one believes the word of God and is led by the Holy Spirit, one becomes a child of God; if one rejects the truth of God and follows the lies of the devil, one comes to live as one who belongs to the devil.

1. People are not born as the children of God from the beginning

All people are creatures whom God created, but they do not automatically become the children of God from the moment they are born. A person born as a descendant of Adam inherits sin

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

and lives as a slave of sin.

After Adam and Eve sinned by accepting the lie of the devil rather than the word of God, their descendants, too, came to be born under sin and death. Therefore, people are by nature born in a state placed under the rule of sin and the lies of the devil.

But Jesus came to set free those who were born as slaves of sin.

"Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed" (John 8:36).

Escaping the rule of the devil and becoming a child of God is not brought about by a person's good deeds or religious efforts. One must believe with the heart in the salvation that Jesus, the Son of God, accomplished.

2. The Jews boasted of their lineage in the flesh, but they did not believe in Jesus

The Jews claimed that they were the descendants of Abraham and served God as their Father. But they did not accept Jesus, whom God had sent, and rather tried to kill Him.

Jesus said to them:

"Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I proceeded forth and came from God; nor have I come of Myself, but He sent Me.'" (John 8:42).

If they believed in God as their Father, it would be right for them to love Jesus, the Son whom God sent, and to accept His words. Yet even while saying that they believed in God, they rejected the words of Jesus.

This shows that becoming a child of God is not brought about by lineage in the flesh or by religious claims.

— One does not become a child of God by being a descendant of Abraham in the flesh.

— One does not become a child of God by having attended church for a long time.

— One does not become a child of God by an office or by theological knowledge.

— Nor does one become a child of God by good deeds and religious acts.

Becoming a child of God is brought about by believing with the heart in Jesus Christ, whom God sent, and in the word of salvation that He accomplished.

3. The children of the devil accept the lies of the devil and act on them

"You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it" (John 8:44).

The most important characteristic of the devil is falsehood. From the beginning, the devil made people doubt the word of God and made them unable to believe what God had done.

Even today, the devil deceives people with the following lies.

— He makes them think that Jesus did not completely remove the sin of the world.

— He makes them believe that even if they believe in Jesus, sin still remains in their hearts.

— He keeps them from accepting the meaning of the baptism that Jesus received from John.

— He makes them think that to receive the remission of sins, a person must keep washing away his sins with his own deeds.

— He makes them believe human tradition, doctrine, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

their own thoughts more than the written word.

— He makes them hate and oppose those who preach the word of God and the saints who have received the remission of sins.

The Jews of the time of Jesus said that they believed in God, but they tried to kill Jesus, whom God had sent. Because the devil was a murderer from the beginning, they, too, tried to kill Jesus, following the works of the devil.

Therefore, the fact of being a child of the devil is not decided simply by having done a morally deficient act once or twice. It speaks of the spiritual state of fundamentally rejecting the truth of God, accepting the lies of the devil, and following those lies.

4. The children of God hear and believe the word of God

"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God" (John 8:47).

The clearest standard for becoming a child of God is accepting the word of God with the heart. Here, to hear does not simply mean to hear a sound with the ears. It is to acknowledge and believe the word and to accept it into the heart.

When his own thoughts and the word of God differ, a person who is of God lays down his own thoughts and believes the word of God. When God says that He has removed all our sins with the baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection of Jesus, he accepts it as it is.

A person who believes the word of God can confess as follows.

— I was a sinner born as a slave of sin.

— Jesus came to this earth to save me.

— Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— My sins were transferred to Jesus.

— Jesus bore those sins and went on to the Cross.

— He shed His blood on the Cross and received the punishment for all my sins.

— By rising from the dead, He gave me new life and eternal life.

— By believing in this gospel with my heart, I have received the remission of all my sins and become a child of God.

5. We become the children of God by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit

The way to become a child of God is to believe with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished.

The baptism Jesus received from John

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. At this time, the sin inherited from Adam and all the sins people commit throughout their lives were transferred to Jesus.

The blood of the Cross

Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. By shedding His blood and dying on the Cross, He received all the punishment and the curse of sin.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The resurrection of Jesus

By rising from the dead, Jesus overcame sin and death. The risen Jesus gives new life and eternal life to those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Believing with the heart

When we believe with our hearts in the salvation that Jesus accomplished, we receive the remission of all our sins. The Holy Spirit comes upon the heart whose sins have been washed away, and that person becomes a child of God, born again of God.

"But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name: who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God" (John 1:12–13).

The children of God are not made by lineage in the flesh or by the will of man. They are born again of God by believing with the heart in the salvation of Jesus Christ.

6. The Holy Spirit testifies that we are the children of God

The Holy Spirit comes upon those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Holy Spirit is not One who is brought into a heart that has sin by human feelings or efforts; He is the gift that God gives to the heart that has been made clean by believing in the remission of sins that Jesus accomplished.

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons

of God. For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father.' The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God" (Romans 8:14–16).

The Holy Spirit testifies to the following facts in the hearts of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

— Jesus bore all my sins.
— Jesus paid the price of my sins in full.
— I have received the remission of sins by faith.
— I am no longer a slave of sin.
— God has become my Father.
— I am a child of God and have obtained eternal life.

7. By what are the children of God and the children of the devil revealed?

Category	A person who belongs to the devil	A person who belongs to God
The word he believes	The lies of the devil and human thoughts	The written word of God
Attitude toward Jesus	He rejects the divinity and the work of salvation of Jesus	He believes in Jesus as God and the Savior
Attitude toward the gospel	He opposes the gospel of the water and the Spirit	He accepts the gospel of the water and the Spirit with his heart
The state of sin	He has not received the remission of sins and is under sin	He has received the remission of all his sins and become righteous

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Category	A person who belongs to the devil	A person who belongs to God
The spirit dwelling in the heart	He is ruled by the lies of the devil and by sin	The Holy Spirit dwells in him and leads him
The fruit that appears	Falsehood, hatred, condemnation, opposition to the truth	Love of the truth, love of the brethren, spreading of the gospel and unity
Final result	He dies in his sins and comes to judgment	He obtains eternal life as a child of God

Deeds are not the cause of becoming a child; they are the fruit that shows to whom one belongs. A person does not become a child of God by doing many good deeds. First one receives the remission of sins and the Holy Spirit by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and becomes a child of God, and then the fruit of loving God and following His word appears.

8. It is important to believe who Jesus is

At the end of John chapter 8, Jesus said:

"Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, before Abraham was, I AM.'" (John 8:58).

Jesus is not an ordinary man born after Abraham. In the flesh He was born through Mary, but His essence is God, who has existed from eternity.

Even after hearing the words of Jesus, the Jews did not believe in Him as God and tried to stone Him. In contrast, the children of God believe the fact that Jesus is the eternal God, and

that this God came in the flesh of a man and saved them with the baptism He received from John, the Cross, and the resurrection.

Conclusion

What divides the children of the devil from the children of God is not lineage in the flesh, religious office, or human good deeds. The standard is whose word one believes with the heart and to whom one belongs.

A person who believes the lies of the devil and rejects the truth of God is still a slave of sin and is under the rule of the devil. But those who believe with their hearts in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of those sins on the Cross, and rose from the dead, receive the remission of all their sins.

The Holy Spirit comes upon a person who has received the remission of sins, and He makes him call God Abba, Father. At that time, that person escapes the rule of the devil and of sin and becomes a child of God, born again of God.

Therefore, a child of God is a person who has received the remission of sins and the Holy Spirit by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart, and a child of the devil is a person who rejects the truth of God, believes the lies of the devil, and still lives under sin. One's spiritual belonging is revealed through whether one hears and believes the word of God, or rejects and opposes it.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 8:31–59, what do these words say?

John 8:31–59 shows the difference between true disciples who believe the words of Jesus and those who reject His words. The center of these words is as follows.

"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free" "Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed" "He who is of God hears God's words" "before Abraham was, I AM"

That is, Jesus is the truth that sets sinners free from sin, and those who are of God hear and believe His words. Moreover, Jesus is the eternal God, who existed before Abraham.

1. The person who abides in the word of Jesus is a true disciple

Jesus said to the Jews who claimed to have believed in Him:

"Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'" (John 8:31–32).

Saying that one believes in Jesus and abiding in the word of Jesus are different. To abide in the word is to know who Jesus is and what work of salvation He did for us, and to believe it with the heart.

Jesus is the Son of God, and He is God who came in the flesh in order to save us from sin. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin, and He rose from the dead and

became the eternal Savior of those who believe.

The person who accepts this word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit into his heart and keeps on believing it is a true disciple of Jesus.

2. The freedom of which Jesus spoke is the freedom of being saved from sin

The Jews claimed that, being the descendants of Abraham, they had never been slaves. But the slave Jesus spoke of was not a political or social slave, but a slave of sin.

"Jesus answered them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin. And a slave does not abide in the house forever, but a son abides forever. Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.'" (John 8:34–36).

People are born with sin, commit sin throughout their lives, and must be judged because of that sin. By their own good deeds, the works of the law, and religious efforts, they cannot escape this power of sin.

But Jesus, the Son of God, has set us free. Jesus bore all our sins with the baptism He received from John, paid the price of those sins on the Cross, and completed salvation by rising from the dead. Therefore, those who believe this truth of salvation are no longer slaves of sin and judgment. They have all the sins of their hearts washed away, become the children of God, and abide in the house of God forever.

True freedom is not the freedom to live as one pleases, but the freedom of having received the remission of sins and having become able to serve God and live for righteous work.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. Not lineage in the flesh but faith shows who are the descendants of Abraham

The Jews boasted of the fact that they were born of the lineage of Abraham. But Jesus said that if they were the descendants of Abraham, they should believe the word of God as Abraham did.

Abraham believed the word that God spoke. But these people did not accept the words of Jesus, who came from God, and rather tried to kill Jesus. In the flesh they were the descendants of Abraham, but in faith and deeds they did not follow Abraham.

Becoming the people of God is not decided by lineage or religious tradition. One becomes a child of God by knowing Jesus Christ, whom God sent, and by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished.

4. The children of God and the children of the devil are revealed by whose word they believe and follow

Jesus said that if God were their Father, they would love Jesus. This is because Jesus is not One who came of Himself, but the One whom God the Father sent.

But they did not accept the words of Jesus into their hearts. Rather, they hated Jesus, who spoke the truth, and tried to kill Him. So Jesus revealed their spiritual state as follows.

"You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it" (John 8:44).

The devil changes the word of God into falsehood, keeps

people from believing the truth, and makes them hate those who preach the truth. The reason the Jews tried to kill Jesus was that the word of God had found no place in their hearts.

In contrast, those who are of God hear the word of God.

"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God" (John 8:47).

Here, to 'hear' is not only to hear a sound with the ears. It is to accept the word of God as the truth, to believe it with the heart, and to live according to that word. Those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit love Jesus, treasure the word of God, and want to preach this gospel of salvation to other souls as well.

5. Those who keep the word of Jesus do not see eternal death

The Jews called Jesus a Samaritan and insulted Him, saying that He had a demon. But Jesus did not seek His own glory; He honored God the Father. And He said:

"Most assuredly, I say to you, if anyone keeps My word he shall never see death" (John 8:51).

To keep the word of Jesus does not mean to pile up legalistic deeds in order to obtain salvation. It means to keep in one's heart and believe the word of salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Even a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit dies in the body, but he neither receives the judgment of sin nor enters eternal destruction. This is because Jesus has already borne that person's sins and judgment. That person has obtained the remission of sins and eternal life, and on the last day he will rise again and live with the Lord forever.

Because the Jews thought only of the death of the body, they

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

objected, saying, *"Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and You say, 'If anyone keeps My word he shall never taste death.'"* But Jesus was speaking of eternal life beyond the death of the body.

6. Jesus is the eternal God, who existed before Abraham

Jesus said that Abraham had looked forward to the time of the Christ who was to come, and rejoiced. When the Jews asked, *"You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham?"* Jesus declared:

"Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, before Abraham was, I AM.'" (John 8:58).

Jesus is not One who first began to exist in Bethlehem. Jesus existed before Abraham was born, and He is God the Creator, who has been with God the Father from the beginning.

Therefore, Jesus could say, *"If anyone keeps My word he shall never see death."* This is because Jesus is not a mere prophet or religious leader, but God, who raises the dead and gives eternal life.

When the Jews heard these words of Jesus, they took up stones to throw at Him. Through the words of Jesus they could have known that He is God, but they could not give up their own thoughts and religious boasting, and they rejected the truth.

Conclusion

Text	Key content
Verses 31–36	True disciples who abide in the word of Jesus know the truth and are saved from sin.
Verses 37–42	Not lineage in the flesh but faith that believes the word of God shows who are the true descendants of Abraham and the children of God.
Verses 43–47	Those who belong to the devil reject the truth, but those who are of God hear and believe the word of God.
Verses 48–51	Those who believe and keep the word of Jesus are saved from the judgment of sin and eternal death.
Verses 52–59	Jesus is the eternal God, who existed before Abraham, and the Savior who gives eternal life.

Therefore, John 8:31–59 asks us:

"Are you relying on lineage in the flesh and religious deeds, or are you believing in the word of salvation that Jesus Christ, who is God, accomplished?"

Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of those sins on the Cross, and rose from the dead. Those who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with their hearts escape from being slaves of sin and obtain true freedom, become the children of God, and obtain eternal life. This is the truth of salvation to which John 8:31–59 testifies.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 8:31–59, what kind of person is one who seeks the glory of God, and what kind of person is one who opposes God?

John 8:31–59 clearly contrasts those who seek the glory of God with those who oppose God. The difference lies not in whether one outwardly says that one believes in God, but in whether one accepts with the heart Jesus Christ, whom God sent, and the word of salvation that He proclaimed.

1. Those who seek the glory of God abide in the word of Jesus

Jesus said:

"Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'" (John 8:31–32).

Those who seek the glory of God do not make their own thoughts or religious knowledge their standard; they abide in the word of Jesus. To abide in the word is to know the work of salvation of Jesus and believe it with the heart, and to make that word the standard of one's faith and life.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin, and He rose from the dead and became our eternal Savior.

Those who seek the glory of God do not change this gospel of the water and the Spirit according to their own thoughts. They accept it just as God has spoken it, and they believe that their

sins have been washed away clean by the work of salvation of Jesus.

2. Those who seek the glory of God exalt not their own righteousness but Jesus

Jesus said to the Jews as follows:

"And I do not seek My own glory; there is One who seeks and judges" (John 8:50).

Jesus did not try to show Himself off and receive human praise from people. What Jesus sought was to accomplish the will of God the Father and so glorify the Father.

Jesus came to this earth in obedience to the will of the Father, received baptism from John and bore the sin of mankind, and received the judgment of that sin on the Cross. And by rising from the dead, He completed the will of salvation that God the Father had established. All the work of Jesus revealed the righteousness and the love of God the Father.

At the same time, God the Father gives glory to Jesus, the Son.

"Jesus answered, 'If I honor Myself, My honor is nothing. It is My Father who honors Me, of whom you say that He is your God.'" (John 8:54).

Therefore, a person who gives glory to God the Father exalts Jesus. He believes in Jesus as God the Creator, acknowledges Him as the Savior of mankind, and believes that the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which Jesus accomplished, is the perfect truth of salvation.

To seek the glory of God does not end with merely saying with the lips, "I give glory to God." The life that gives glory to God is to believe in the salvation that Jesus accomplished and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

give thanks for it, and to preach that gospel of salvation to other souls.

3. Those who seek the glory of God love Jesus

Jesus revealed the spiritual state of the Jews as follows:

"Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I proceeded forth and came from God; nor have I come of Myself, but He sent Me.'" (John 8:42).

Loving God and loving Jesus cannot be separated. This is because God the Father sent Jesus. One cannot say that one loves God while rejecting Jesus.

Those who seek the glory of God love Jesus and treasure His word. This is because they know what sacrifice Jesus made in order to save them from sin. Such a person is not ashamed of the baptism of Jesus, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and he testifies with joy to the grace of salvation that God has given.

4. Those who seek the glory of God lay down their own thoughts before the word of God

"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God" (John 8:47).

Even in a person who hears the word of God, the thoughts of the flesh and self-assertion can rise up. But a person who seeks the glory of God submits himself before the word when his own thoughts and the word collide.

Rather than holding on to the heart that says, "In my opinion it is not so," he believes, "Because God has said so, it is right."

Exalting not one's own thoughts but the word of God is the faith that gives glory to God.

A person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit does not boast of his own merit or righteousness. Because the One who washed his sins away clean is Jesus, he gives all the merit and glory of salvation to Jesus.

5. Those who oppose God have no place in their hearts for the word of God

Jesus said to the Jews:

"I know that you are Abraham's descendants, but you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you" (John 8:37).

The Jews claimed that they were the descendants of Abraham and the people who believed in God. But in their hearts there was no room for the word of Jesus to enter. This was because their own righteousness, religious tradition, and boasting of their lineage occupied their hearts.

A person who opposes God is not necessarily only a person who says there is no God. If a person says that he believes in God but does not accept Jesus, whom God sent, and rejects the word of salvation that Jesus accomplished, then in reality he is opposing God.

6. Those who oppose God seek their own glory and the benefit of the flesh

A person who seeks the glory of God thinks, "What is the will of God?" but a person who opposes God first thinks, "What

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

benefit is there for me?"

He rejects the truth in order to protect his own position, honor, and religious authority. The reason the Jews rejected Jesus was also that the words of Jesus tore down their religious boasting and authority. Instead of humbling themselves before the truth, they tried to do away with Jesus, who spoke the truth.

A person who seeks his own glory ends up exalting his own deeds over the merit of Jesus. He relies more on his own repentance, good deeds, and religious life than on the word that Jesus has washed away all sins. This is giving the glory of salvation not to Jesus but to man.

7. Those who oppose God reject the truth and follow falsehood

"You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it" (John 8:44).

The work of the devil is to keep people from believing the word of God and to change the truth into falsehood. A person who opposes God does not accept the perfect salvation that Jesus accomplished, and sets up human deeds and religious efforts as conditions of salvation.

Such a person also hates those who preach the truth and hinders the work of spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When the Jews could no longer prevail over the words of Jesus by argument, they called Jesus a Samaritan and insulted Him, saying that He had a demon. In the end they took up stones to throw at Jesus.

This is the fruit of a heart that opposes God. It begins with not accepting the word, but finally goes as far as hating the truth and hindering the work of the gospel.

8. Believing in Jesus as God is the faith that gives glory to God

Jesus said:

"Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, before Abraham was, I AM.'" (John 8:58).

Jesus is the eternal God, who existed before Abraham. Therefore, the work of salvation in which Jesus bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John and was judged on the Cross is not merely the sacrifice of one human being. It is the eternal salvation that God the Creator Himself came in the flesh and accomplished.

Because Jesus is God, the remission of sins that He accomplished is perfect and eternal. Those who know and believe the divinity of Jesus and His work of salvation exalt Jesus, rely on Him, and give all the glory of salvation to God.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Conclusion

One who seeks the glory of God	One who opposes God
He abides in the word of Jesus.	The word of Jesus has no place in his heart.
He believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with his heart.	He puts his own thoughts and religious doctrines ahead of the truth.
He boasts not of his own righteousness but of the salvation of Jesus.	He boasts of his own deeds and religious merit.
He exalts Jesus as God and the Savior.	He belittles or rejects the divinity and the work of salvation of Jesus.
He lays down his own thoughts before the word.	He follows his own stubbornness and the desires of the flesh rather than the word.
He serves the work of the gospel that brings souls to life.	He hates the truth and hinders the spreading of the gospel.
He loves God, Jesus, and the saved brethren.	He harms others and causes division for his own benefit.

In conclusion, one who seeks the glory of God is a person who believes in the salvation that Jesus completed with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and who gives all the glory of salvation to Jesus.

He devotes himself to the work of bringing other souls to life according to the word of Jesus.

In contrast, one who opposes God is a person who says with his mouth that he believes in God, but does not accept the word of Jesus, rejects the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and seeks his own righteousness, the benefit of the flesh, and the glory of men. Therefore, we must not seek our own name and glory, but must exalt Jesus Christ, who saved us from all our sins, and live for the spreading of His gospel. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Questions and Answers on John Chapter 8

[Question] 1. Explain what the manuscript problem is that is raised in connection with the text of John chapter 8.

The manuscript problem of John chapter 8 is the question of whether John 7:53–8:11, the story of the woman caught in adultery, was included in the text of the Gospel of John from the beginning. This passage is contained in our Bible, but the evidence of the existing Greek manuscripts is not uniform.

The major manuscripts of the early period do not contain this passage but go straight from John 7:52 to 8:12. This is the case with the papyrus manuscripts of the third century and Codex Sinaiticus of the fourth century, and in the existing Greek New Testament manuscripts up to the fourth century this story is not found. The earliest existing Greek manuscript that contains this passage is Codex Bezae of the fifth century. Many later manuscripts contain this story, but some manuscripts attached marks indicating doubt beside the text.

The location of this story is not fixed either. While some manuscripts place it after John 7:52, its usual location, others place it after John 7:36 or 7:44, at the end of the Gospel of John, after Luke 21:38, or at the end of the Gospel of Luke, among other places. Because of the fact that it is absent from the old manuscripts and, while contained in the later manuscripts, its location differs from one to another, the question has been raised as to whether this passage belonged to the earliest text of the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Gospel of John at its present location.

Therefore, this manuscript problem is not a matter of directly determining whether the event actually happened. It is a matter of judging, through the existing manuscript evidence, whether this story was included in the earliest form of the Gospel written by the Apostle John, and whether its present location is its original place. This passage has been widely preserved in many later manuscripts, but on the manuscript evidence alone it is difficult to affirm that it was included in the earliest text of the Gospel of John at its present location.

[Question] 2. Where does John 8:1 record that Jesus went?

In John 8:1 it is recorded, *"Jesus went to the Mount of Olives."* Therefore, the place Jesus went to was the Mount of Olives. Then verse 2 says that in the morning He came again into the temple and taught the people who came to Him.

The Mount of Olives is a mountain on the east side of the city of Jerusalem, where Jesus stayed during the period of the feasts. The Gospel of Luke records the scene at that time: *"In the daytime He was teaching in the temple, but at night He went out and stayed on the mountain called Olivet" (Luke 21:37)*. Therefore, the beginning of chapter 8 shows the flow of a day in which Jesus spent the night on the Mount of Olives and in the morning came again into the temple and taught the people.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

[Question] 3. In John 8:6–9, when the scribes and the Pharisees accused the woman who had committed adultery, how did Christ respond?

The scribes and the Pharisees brought the woman caught in adultery in order to obtain grounds for accusing Jesus Christ. But Jesus did not answer their question at once; He stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger. When they kept pressing Him for an answer, He raised Himself up and said, *"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first,"* and then stooped down again and wrote on the ground.

With these words, Jesus made the people who had been condemning only the woman look first at themselves. The law not only exposed the sin of the woman, but also made the accusers realize that they, too, were sinners. Convicted by their conscience, they went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the youngest, and at last only Jesus and the woman were left.

Therefore, Jesus neither disregarded the law nor said that the sin of adultery was right. By making those who had been condemning others apply that law to themselves first, He revealed the fact that no one can put forward his own righteousness and judge another sinner. However, since what Jesus wrote on the ground is not disclosed in the text, we must not guess at its content.

[Question] 4. In John 8:11, what is the meaning of Christ's not condemning the woman while commanding her to sin no more?

The words *"Neither do I condemn you"* do not mean that

Jesus regarded the woman's sin of adultery lightly or said that it was not a sin. According to the law, that woman had to receive the judgment for her sin. But Jesus had already borne in His own body the sin of the world, including the sin of that woman, by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, and He was the One who would receive the judgment of that sin in our place on the Cross in the future. Therefore, it was not that He simply overlooked the sin of the woman; He said that He did not condemn her as the Savior who Himself bears that sin and its judgment.

These words connect with the words of Romans chapter 8, *"There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus."* It is not that a sinner escapes condemnation by correcting his conduct or piling up merit. It is by believing in the salvation in which Jesus Christ bore sin with His baptism and received the judgment of that sin on the Cross that one is set free from the law of sin and death.

The words that follow, *"Go and sin no more,"* do not mean that since one has received the remission of sins, one may sin as one pleases. Nor do they mean that salvation is maintained only if the woman never once commits sin in the future. They mean that, since she has first received the grace of being lifted out of condemnation, she is now to live not held fast by sin, but following the Lord who saved her. That is, they are not a condition requiring one to live a good life in order to receive the remission of sins, but an exhortation to turn from sin and follow the light of life in thankfulness for the salvation already bestowed.

Therefore, salvation and a new life are contained together in these words. Jesus not only lifted the woman out of condemnation, but also sent her to walk a new path, believing in the grace that had saved her, without living bound to the sins of the past.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

[Question] 5. In John 8:12, what is the meaning of Jesus calling Himself the light of the world and saying that those who follow Him obtain the light of life?

That Jesus called Himself *"the light of the world"* means that He is the One who saves mankind, fallen into the darkness of sin and death, and gives them life. The Gospel of John has already said, *"In Him was life, and the life was the light of men."* Therefore, this light is not mere knowledge or an ethical teaching, but Jesus Christ Himself and the light of the salvation that He accomplished.

Although Jesus is God, He came in human flesh, bore the sin of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, received the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and then rose from the dead. Because He thus lifted sinners out of sin and judgment and gave them new life, Jesus is the light of the world. The event earlier, in which He said to the woman caught in adultery, *"Neither do I condemn you,"* shows what this light actually does. He saved a person who was condemned in darkness and had to die, and led that person to the way of life.

To 'walk in darkness' means to live under sin and death without knowing who Jesus is and how He removed sin. It also refers to the state of not believing in Jesus, the light, but becoming a slave of Satan and following one's own thoughts and sins. Even though the light has come into the world, a person who loves darkness rather than light because he hates to have his deeds exposed does not come to the light.

In contrast, to follow Jesus does not mean merely to respect Him as an excellent teacher. It is to know and believe with the heart the fact that Jesus is the Savior sent by God, and that He removed all one's sins with His baptism, the Cross, and the

resurrection. It is also to hold on to that word of salvation, to be no longer dragged along by sin and falsehood, and to live according to the will of the Lord.

The person who thus believes in and follows Jesus, the light, obtains *"the light of life."* That is, he obtains the remission of sins, new life, and eternal life, becomes a child of God, and comes to live in the truth that saved him. Therefore, these words are not a declaration that Jesus merely shows light to people, but a declaration that He Himself is the true Light who saves sinners and gives them eternal life.

[Question] 6. In John 8:25, what does it mean that Jesus revealed Himself as 'the One who has been speaking from the beginning'?

When Jesus Christ said, *"If you do not believe that I am He, you will die in your sins,"* the Jews asked, *"Who are You?"* Even while seeing Jesus Christ before their eyes and hearing His words, they did not know His true identity.

The words *"Just what I have been saying to you from the beginning"* show that Jesus Christ is not One who came into existence only after coming into this world, but God, who has existed from the beginning and created all things in the universe by His word. The Gospel of John testifies to this as follows.

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God" (John 1:1).

"All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made" (John 1:3).

The very God who created the heavens and the earth in the beginning and spoke to man is the One who came to this earth in the flesh, Jesus Christ. Therefore, these words do not stop at

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

merely meaning that Jesus Christ had been saying the same thing from the time He began His ministry. They mean that the Creator, who has existed and spoken from the beginning, is revealing Himself now as the same One.

But because the Jews judged Jesus Christ only by His outward appearance in the flesh, they did not realize that He is the Son of God who came from above and the Savior. Jesus Christ spoke to the world what He had heard from the Father who sent Him, and He said that only after He was lifted up on the Cross, died, and rose again would people come to know who He is.

Therefore, these words revealed the fact that Jesus Christ is God who is the Word, who has existed from the beginning, and the Savior who came in the flesh of a man in order to save sinners. They also contain the meaning that, since one dies in one's sins if one does not believe in Him, one must now hear that word, realize who He is, and believe.

[Question] 7. In John 8:28–30, what event is referred to by the words that only after the Son of Man is lifted up will people come to know that Jesus is *'He'*?

Here, to "lift up the Son of Man" refers to Jesus Christ being nailed to the Cross and hung up high. John chapter 12 makes the meaning of this expression clear.

"And I, if I am lifted up from the earth, will draw all peoples to Myself. This He said, signifying by what death He would die" (John 12:32–33).

Because Jesus Christ is God but came to this earth in human flesh, He called Himself *"the Son of Man."* After receiving

baptism from John the Baptist and bearing the sin of mankind, He was lifted up on the Cross and died in order to receive the judgment for that sin. Therefore, His being crucified was not an event in which He was helplessly defeated, but an event in which He accomplished the work of the salvation of mankind that God the Father had planned.

This 'lifting up' is also connected with the bronze serpent lifted up on a pole in the wilderness.

"And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life" (John 3:14–15).

Just as the people who were dying from the bites of the fiery serpents looked at the bronze serpent on the pole and lived, so people who are bound to die because of sin obtain eternal life by believing that Jesus Christ, who bore their sins and was crucified, is their Savior.

The words *"you will know that I am He"* mean that after Jesus Christ was crucified, died, and rose again, people would come to know that He is the Son sent by God and the only Savior of mankind. Because the Jews of that time judged Jesus Christ according to the flesh, they did not understand His words. But through the death of the Cross and the resurrection, who He is and what He came to accomplish are clearly revealed.

Jesus Christ also said that they would know *"that I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father taught Me, I speak these things."* This shows that His words and the salvation of the Cross did not come from the will of man, but were accomplished according to the will of God the Father. The Father was always with the Son, and the Son always did the things that please the Father.

In verse 30 it is recorded, *"As He spoke these words, many believed in Him."* Although the event of the Cross had not yet

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

taken place, many among those who heard those words began to believe in Jesus Christ. Afterward, the death of the Cross and the resurrection would reveal even more clearly the fact that He is God, who has existed from the beginning, and the Savior who came to save sinners.

[Question] 8. In John 8:31–33, what did Jesus Christ say to the Jews who believed in Him?

Jesus Christ said to the Jews who believed in Him as follows.

"If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free" (John 8:31–32).

Three things that follow one from another are contained here.

First, one must abide in the word of Jesus Christ. To 'abide' means not merely to hear the word for a moment or to agree with it emotionally, but to accept that word into one's heart, believe it, hold on to it, and keep following it. If a person says that he believes in Jesus Christ but does not know or accept His word, it cannot be called true faith.

Second, the person who abides in the word becomes a true disciple. A disciple is not simply a person who calls on the name of Jesus Christ, but a person who knows and believes who He is and how He saved him. One must believe the word that Jesus Christ bore the sin of mankind with His baptism, received the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and rose from the dead and became the Savior.

Third, if one knows the truth, one is set free from sin. The truth is Jesus Christ Himself, and all that He accomplished in order to save sinners. When one knows and believes this truth, one escapes the sin of the heart, judgment, and the curse, and

becomes a child of God. The freedom spoken of here does not mean that one may live according to one's own desires; it is the freedom of having escaped slavery to sin and having become able to serve God.

But the Jews did not realize the spiritual meaning of these words and answered as follows.

"We are Abraham's descendants, and have never been in bondage to anyone. How can You say, 'You will be made free'?" (John 8:33).

They thought that they were free people, putting forward the fact that they were the descendants of Abraham in the flesh. But Jesus Christ was speaking not of political or physical bondage, but of the state of having become a slave of sin. So in the words that follow He said, *"Whoever commits sin is a slave of sin,"* and made clear, *"If the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed."*

In the end, the core of the words Jesus Christ spoke is that the person who believes His word and remains in it becomes a true disciple, and that only when one knows and believes the truth of the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished does one come to be truly set free from sin.

[Question] 9. In John 8:37–44, why did Christ, even while acknowledging the Jews as the descendants of Abraham, say that their father was the devil?

The two statements do not contradict each other. The words *"I know that you are Abraham's descendants"* acknowledged the fact that the Jews were descendants born of Abraham by lineage in the flesh. On the other hand, the words *"You are of*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

your father the devil" pointed out their spiritual belonging, their hearts, and their deeds.

The Jews boasted of their lineage, that they were the descendants of Abraham. But Jesus Christ said as follows.

"If you were Abraham's children, you would do the works of Abraham. But now you seek to kill Me, a Man who has told you the truth which I heard from God. Abraham did not do this" (John 8:39–40).

If they were truly the descendants of Abraham, they should have believed and accepted the word of God as Abraham did. However, they did not accept the words of Jesus Christ, whom God had sent, but instead tried to kill Him. In the flesh they were the descendants of Abraham, but their faith and deeds did not follow Abraham.

Jesus Christ said, *"If God were your Father, you would love Me."* A person who truly has God as his Father loves the Son who was sent from God and believes His word. But the Jews hated Jesus Christ, who spoke the truth, and tried to kill Him. Therefore, He made clear that their deeds did not come from God, but were following the desires of the devil.

The devil is *"a murderer from the beginning"* and *"a liar and the father of it."* That the Jews rejected the truth and tried to kill Jesus Christ revealed that they were following the murderous nature and the falsehood of the devil. Therefore, the words *"of your father the devil"* do not mean that they were physically born of the devil; they mean that they believed the lies of the devil, followed his desires and deeds, and were under his rule.

The Bible clearly says that one does not become a child of God by lineage in the flesh alone.

"That is, those who are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God; but the children of the promise are counted as the seed" (Romans 9:8).

"Therefore know that only those who are of faith are sons of Abraham" (Galatians 3:7).

Therefore, the true descendants of Abraham are not merely people born of Abraham by lineage, but people who believe the word of God as Abraham did. A person who accepts and believes the word of the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished becomes one who is of God, but a person who rejects and opposes the truth, however much he boasts of his lineage in the flesh, spiritually becomes one who follows the will of the devil.

These words did not condemn all the Jews uniformly as the children of the devil. They revealed, according to their actual deeds, the spiritual state of those who rejected the truth Jesus Christ spoke and tried to kill Him.

[Question] 10. In John 8:46, what is revealed by the words in which Christ declared that no one could convict Him of sin?

The words *"Which of you convicts Me of sin?"* are words in which Jesus Christ publicly declared His perfect sinlessness and holiness. Here, to 'convict of sin' does not simply mean to find fault or to criticize; it means to prove the fact that Jesus committed sin and to judge Him guilty.

The Jews kept looking for grounds for accusation in the words and deeds of Jesus, and in the end they even tried to kill Him. But none of them could present any evidence that Jesus had committed sin. Jesus never acted apart from the will of God or spoke falsehood, and not even once did He commit sin while He lived on this earth. Later, even Pilate declared, *"I find no fault in Him at all."*

Therefore, these words do not merely reveal the moral

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

innocence of Jesus. They also contain the meaning that, since everything Jesus, who is without sin, says is the truth, the Jews had no legitimate reason to reject His words. Jesus immediately went on to ask, *"If I tell the truth, why do you not believe Me?"* The reason they did not believe in Jesus was not that there was sin or falsehood in Him, but that they themselves were unwilling to accept the truth.

Verse 46 must be understood together with the words before and after it. After saying, *"Because I tell the truth, you do not believe Me,"* Jesus told them to look for sin in Him. And He concluded, *"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God."* In the end, the sinlessness of Jesus testifies to the fact that His words are true, and the unbelief of those who rejected His words reveals their spiritual state.

The sinlessness of Jesus is also directly connected with the salvation of mankind. If Jesus had had sin of His own, He could not have borne the sins of others in their place. But Jesus came as the Son of God, who is without sin, bore the sin of the world by receiving baptism, and then received the judgment of that sin on the Cross. It is that God *"made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us."* That Christ was judged on the Cross was not because of His own sin, but because of the sin He had taken over from us.

Therefore, the words *"Which of you convicts Me of sin?"* are a declaration that only the sinless Son of God can make. Faced with these words, a person should not look for an excuse to reject Jesus, but should accept His words as the truth and believe in the salvation of the remission of sins that He accomplished with His baptism and the Cross. ✉

Sermon 1 by Paul C. Jong

The two laws that God has given us

< John 8:1-11 >

"But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. Now early in the morning He came again into the temple, and all the people came to Him; and He sat down and taught them. Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, 'Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?' This they said, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as though He did not hear. So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, 'He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.' And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground. Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, 'Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?' She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'"

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The teaching of the law and the teaching of Jesus

The weather is very hot. In today's word there is a scene in which the Lord teaches people on the spot. Coming to John chapter 8, Jesus meets a woman caught in adultery, in the very act. And the people test Jesus, using this woman's case as a pretext. In verses 3 to 5 it says, *"Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, 'Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?'"* When Jesus heard those words, He wrote on the ground, and said, *"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first,"* and stooped down again and wrote on the ground, and then looked up. But the people had all gone out. And it says that only Jesus and the woman were left there in the midst. Jesus asked the woman. It says, *"'Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?' She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'" (John 8:10–11).*

Today's text speaks of how the teaching of the law and the teaching of Jesus differ. In this hour let us look at how the teaching of the law and the teaching of Jesus differ. In John chapter 6, the Lord said that He is the bread that came down from heaven, and that one must eat His flesh and blood, and that then one obtains eternal life. And now we have come to chapter 8, and the scribes and the Pharisees who had been listening to the words of Jesus all that time, the so-called religious leaders of the nation of Israel and people of the rank of public officials, had all gathered. The scribes, to put it in today's terms, were of the rank of public officials and leaders, and the Pharisees were of the rank of religious leaders. These two kinds of people brought a woman

who had been caught in adultery, in the very act, made her kneel down before Jesus, and picked a quarrel, saying, what would you do with this woman who was caught in the very act; Moses commanded that such a woman should be stoned, but what do you, Teacher, say?

The law was given so that we might come to know sin

Even though Jesus had to say something, He did not speak, but wrote on the ground, and said, he who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first, and wrote on the ground again, and then looked up. Then the people slipped out one by one. It was the word that whoever among them thought that he himself had no sin with regard to this woman should pick up a stone first and throw it. It was the word to kill her. When He told them to go ahead and try it, the Pharisees and the scribes slipped away one after another. I do not know what words Jesus wrote. When He raised Himself up again and looked, they had all gone out and only Jesus and this woman were left. When Jesus said, *"Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?"* the woman said, *"No one, Lord,"* and Jesus said, *"Neither do I condemn you."* Here the word 'condemn' means to point out that one has sin. When He asked whether there was anyone who slandered her as a woman with sin, there was no one. Jesus says, I do not condemn you either; I do not say that you have sin. Here the teaching of Jesus and the teaching of the law part ways.

The teaching of the law is in the Book of Jeremiah and in the Epistle to the Romans. The law exposes people's sins, and it says to people who say they have no sin that they have sin. In Romans

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3:19–20 it says, *"Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God. Therefore by the deeds of the law no flesh will be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin."* People cannot realize their own sins by themselves. That is because they have no law in themselves. But God gave a law to all mankind. He gave the law. When we stand before that law, there come the Ten Commandments that God commanded: you shall have no other gods before Me; you shall not make an idol, nor bow down to them, nor serve them; you shall not take the name of God in vain; keep the Sabbath day holy; honor your parents; you shall not murder; you shall not commit adultery; you shall not steal; you shall not bear false witness against your neighbor; you shall not covet your neighbor's possessions. The dos and don'ts number 613, but if condensed they can be reduced to ten.

It said that we shall have no other gods before God, but how many things are there that people serve as gods? The people of our country served many things like Buddhism and Confucianism. What I am saying is, who is there that does not violate the law of God? All violate the law. So when a person realizes, ah, I have become a sinner who served other gods before God, I have sin, then sin is established and he becomes a sinner. He said that we should not profane the name of God, but are we not the ones who profane that name? He also said that we should not make any image of anything that is in heaven above or on the earth or in the water, nor bow down to it, nor serve it, but do we not look at the sun, the moon, and the stars in the sky, calling them the heavenly bodies, and bow down and offer sacrifices to them? People make images out of stones on the ground and bow down to them. It says that everyone who does such things is one who has sinned before God and is a sinner.

Seen in this way, there is no one who has not sinned before God. For a person to become a sinner, he must apply the law to himself. If he does not apply the law, he does not become a sinner, and when he applies the law, he becomes a sinner. *"By the law is the knowledge of sin"*—that is, it is the word that the law makes us realize and know sin.

And our Lord said, *"Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more."* Why did Jesus say that He did not condemn her? The Pharisees and the scribes caught her in the very act of adultery and brought her, but why did they not bring the man? Jewish society was a society in which men were superior. They did not seize the man, but seized only the woman, publicly disgraced her, and set her in the midst of the crowd before Jesus. When the Jews considered, by their own law, that someone had committed a great sin, everyone would strike him with large stones and kill him, and pile up a heap of stones there. Even so, it did not violate the law of the nation of Israel. So this woman was about to die. This woman, having sin in her heart, was thinking that today she was going to die, but the Lord said, "I do not condemn you either."

The two laws that God has given us

Dear fellow believers, we must know the fact that God has given us two laws. After God made Adam and Eve, He gave them the law not to eat the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. He gave a command. The word *"in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die" (Genesis 2:17)* is a command and a law. But they ate that fruit. So sin came, and death came. How did death come? They were cut off from God. The relationship that had been in smooth communication was

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

completely severed. Being driven out from before God and suffering, and being unable to have fellowship with God—that is the result of sin. It is not that God kills the body at once because we have sinned; rather, we are cut off from God and become unable to go before God. Even a person who ordinarily goes before God and prays well cannot go before God the moment he feels that he has committed sin. Why is that? It is because sin blocks the way. Then one might say, why not just ignore that sin? But because it is what God has spoken, there is nothing a person can do about it. Then that problem of sin must be solved.

So God let us know, through the law, through the command of God, what is right and what is wrong. If we break the law of God, sin is established and we become sinners. God gave such a law, and He gave another law as well; and what kind of law is it? It is the law by which God loves us and saves us, the law of the love of God. It is the law that says, I love you like this, and so I will bear your sins, I will receive the judgment of your sins, and I will come to death in your place and then rise again and become your Savior. It means that He gave the law that makes us realize sin, and He gave the law of salvation to those who have sinned. Because I love you, I will bear your sins in your place and receive the punishment for your sins and save you—this is the law of salvation and the law of mercy.

But even though God told the people of Israel not to serve idols, they thought that if they carved wood into images of gods such as Baal or Asherah, images with about twenty breasts, set them up at home, offered sacrifices, burned incense, and bowed down, their descendants would multiply. The Canaanites did so, and the people of Israel, too, made custom-made gods, and prayed to the god Baal for farming and to the god Asherah for the multiplying of children. To put it in the way of the people of

the world, it was like praying to the god of war when going to war and to the goddess Venus for love. Instead of entrusting everything to the one LORD, they made custom-made gods of their own, made statues, and prayed to them. That itself becomes sin. What I am saying is that God has given us human beings two laws.

The new covenant that He writes on the heart

That is why Jesus said to this woman, I do not condemn you either. Jesus came as the Savior in order to save us from sin. He came as the God of love. When the God of love came to this earth, would He beat us to death, saying that we have sin, that we are filthy, that we deserve to be beaten to death? Because He loves us, He bore our sins by receiving baptism from John, and by being judged and dying on the Cross, He paid the whole price of our sins and saved us. So it is the word that He gave the law of salvation. When did He give this law? It is Jeremiah 31:31–34. *"Behold, the days are coming, says the LORD, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah—not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, though I was a husband to them, says the LORD. But this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My law in their minds, and write it on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. No more shall every man teach his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' for they all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them, says the LORD. For I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more."*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Did not the people of Israel break and violate the law of God and receive discipline again and again and be taken away as captives, in a continuing vicious cycle? That is why God spoke this word to the prophet Jeremiah. To make a new covenant means to promise. Looking at verse 33, it says, *"I will put My law in their minds, and write it on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people."* What is it to put the law of God in our hearts? The Lord came to this earth as the Savior, bore the sin of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross, shed His blood and died, and rose again, and saved us. It is the promise that He would make us know and believe in that Savior, so that the law by which God saved us through that Jesus, His love, would always be in our hearts. And it is the promise that God would be their God and they would be the people of God.

Formerly He raised up Moses and gave him the two tablets of stone of the Ten Commandments, and taught the people of Israel, saying, this is the law of God handed down to you. But because this was not kept, God gives a new covenant. It means: I will give you one new law, and I will have My law be in your hearts; I promise to save you in this way, and I will accomplish it just so, and make you know it and believe it, and engrave it in your hearts. The Ten Commandments were engraved on tablets of stone, but this is engraved in our hearts. When we know and believe in Jesus, the law of the love of God is engraved in our hearts.

"Neither do I condemn you"

So He said to this woman, *"Neither do I condemn you" (John 8:11)*. It is the word in which Jesus said that this woman has no

sin. When Jesus received baptism from John the Baptist, He bore the sin of the world, including the sin of this woman. And a little later He would go to the Cross, shed His blood, and die. Although we are reading the text now, we are, so to speak, looking, two thousand years later, at something that happened about two thousand years ago. Seen within the eternal time of God, since He bore the sin of this world when He received baptism from John the Baptist, He bore the sin of this woman as well. He not only bore the sin of this woman, but also went to the Cross, was nailed to it, shed His blood, died, and rose again, and became the Savior of this woman.

Jesus came to this earth in order to save the people in this world who are dying because of their own sins. Would there not have been in the heart of this woman an earnest desire to be saved? This woman senses that stones will soon come flying. It is because she had often seen people being stoned to death in her country. In the nation of Israel, if someone does something that goes terribly against the law of God and it is exposed, they stone him to death. All the people of the village throw stones and pile up a heap of stones and kill him. So the heart of this woman is earnest. When Jesus said, "Woman, is there anyone who accused you, anyone who condemned you, anyone who said you are a sinner?" the woman said, "No one," and Jesus said, "I do not condemn you either."

The meaning of His saying, go and sin no more

And with that He said, *"Go and sin no more."* Although Jesus told her not to commit sin, would this woman not commit sin? When it becomes a habit, a person commits sin again. Jesus bore all the sins that this woman would commit throughout her

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

life when He received baptism from John. And He went to the Cross. In place of this woman He was nailed, shed His blood, and died, and in order to bring this woman to life the Lord Himself rose again. So if this woman believes that Jesus is her Savior, she is saved.

What is the difference between the teaching of the law and the teaching of Jesus? The law makes people sinners and makes them fall into hell, but Jesus removes the sin of sinners, bears that sin with the baptism He Himself received from John, removes even the judgment by being Himself judged on the Cross, saves them from death and makes them saved people, and makes them the children of God. It is completely different. Then did these come from two different sources? They came from the one God. Then why did He do so? Jesus did this in order to make you and me the people of God, so that we might live happily and well with God forever and ever in the Kingdom of God, and enjoy all the glory of heaven together with God.

In John chapter 6, Jesus said, "Eat My flesh and drink My blood; then you will obtain eternal life, you will receive the remission of sins." And coming to chapter 8, He said to this woman who had been caught in adultery, in the very act, and brought there, I do not condemn you either. Jesus took over the sin of this woman with the baptism He received from John the Baptist and bore it on His own body, and instead of this woman being stoned to death, He Himself was nailed to the Cross. It means that instead of this woman dying, He Himself died, and that He rose again in order to breathe new life into this woman, and became the Savior of this woman. So did Jesus become the Savior of this woman, or did He not? He became her Savior. He became the Lord of her salvation.

So it differs from the teaching of the law. In this world now, all those who do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit,

have not been born again, and are acting as religious leaders or teachers are people like the Pharisees or the scribes. When church members sin, they keep emphasizing, "You sinned, didn't you? Repent, pray, serve, give offerings." But Jesus was not like that. He says: I bore even all those sins and carried them to the Cross and died in place of your death, and I shed My blood and paid the price of sin in order to give you life, and I saved you.

The word in which Jesus here said, sin no more, is the word, "Do not live a life of committing sin, but live a life of preaching this, that I have rescued you." Jesus is the almighty God; does He know or not know that this woman will commit sin again tomorrow? He knows. How could He not know? He knows everything. So we, the born-again, preach the fact that Jesus came to this earth, received baptism from John the Baptist, bore all the sins of this world, went to the Cross, shed His blood and died in our place, and rose again, and became the Savior of you and me. When church members have come to church after living through a week, it is not for us to say, "You sinned, didn't you? You did wrong, didn't you? You have to go to prison, don't you?" The Lord says, I have removed all these sins, so do not become a slave of sin and do not live tamed to sin. He says, "Are you not thankful to Me, who saved you from sin? Live while spreading that work of Mine, that I saved mankind from sin." Then you will receive the fullness of the Holy Spirit in your hearts, and your hearts will be glad and joyful, and you will feel a sense of worth and gain self-esteem; and I will also supply everything you need on this earth—this is what the Lord says.

Just as the Pharisees and Jesus are different, the teaching of those who likewise do believe in Jesus but have not been born again because they do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is different from that of those who have been born

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This story of the woman caught in adultery, in the very act, is about all the people of the world, and there are two kinds of teaching for all these people; those who have not been born again are legalistic all the time. They teach things of works, saying, do not commit sin, you must live holy, you must be sanctified, you must offer prayers of repentance, you must do all-night prayer, you must do a lot of service.

But the born-again do not teach that way; they teach that the Lord has become our Savior. In Matthew chapter 3, when Jesus came to John the Baptist and sought to be baptized, Jesus said to John, who declined, saying, *"Are You coming to me?" (Matthew 3:14), "For thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15),* and John allowed it. Jesus bowed His head, and John the Baptist baptized Jesus in the form of the laying on of hands. And He was fully immersed in the water and came up. At that time the gate of heaven opened and a voice was heard, saying, *"This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" (Matthew 3:17)*. God says, now My Son has borne the sin of mankind and will die on the Cross in your place, and will pay the price of all sins and rise again. He made clear that the One who accomplishes the work of saving mankind is My Son, the Christ. The Lord, too, said in John 5:23, *"That all should honor the Son just as they honor the Father."* Then you will be blessed, and you too will come and live in this Kingdom where I am—this is what God the Father said. The teaching of the Lord was a completely different teaching. People must receive the teaching of the water and the Spirit and become those who give thanks to God, become those who praise God, and become those who are grateful before God. John chapter 8 tells us that we must become people who live receiving the blessings that God gives.

Prayers of repentance do not make sin disappear

Dear fellow believers, the teaching of Jesus is completely different from the word that the legalists preach. People are not glad while attending church; they are sad. Why is that? Because they have committed many sins—to put it frankly, sins have piled up in their consciences. Does sin disappear when one offers prayers of repentance? It does not disappear. It does not disappear, and yet who is it that keeps demanding that people offer prayers of repentance, and what is a person who does so? Dear fellow believers, did your sins disappear after you offered prayers of repentance for ten years? They did not disappear. That is because one does not know the teaching of God. Long ago God taught us the law and let us know that we are sinners before God, and a person who has sin must hear that Jesus Christ has made us righteous. He must know it. And if he believes completely in what Jesus did, he changes from a sinner into a righteous person. He moves from the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of light.

Living in this age, the IT age, is it not nonsense to say that if one offers prayers of repentance, sin disappears and one becomes sanctified? In the old days one had to move one's body to commit sin, but these days one can commit all kinds of sins with a single smartphone in one's hand. With one device worn over the eyes one can commit all kinds of sins, and with one device put in the ears one can commit all kinds of sins. If in the old days one committed one or two sins a day and thirty sins a month, now one can commit thirty sins, or perhaps even a hundred sins, in a single day. One can kill a person one dislikes on the spot in virtual reality, and one can commit all kinds of sins in virtual reality. Jesus did not say that only the sins committed in deed are sin; He said that the sins committed in the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

heart are also sin. It is the word that Jesus bore even all those sins committed in the heart with the baptism He received from John, bore the sin of the world and went to the Cross, shed His blood and died, and rose from the dead, and became the Savior who saved us.

The salvation received once and for all by faith

So He said, *"Though your sins are like scarlet, They shall be as white as snow; Though they are red like crimson, They shall be as wool" (Isaiah 1:18)*. Just as He promised to remove so many sins perfectly once and for all, He came to this earth, and He Himself received baptism, was crucified and died, and rose again, and saved us. As the Lord died on the Cross, He said, "It is finished; the work of removing your sins is all finished," and saved us. He removed even the sins committed in the heart, so would He not also have removed all the sins that you and I commit in the flesh? Did He remove them, or did He not? He removed them. Then may we commit sin as we please? What is the word Jesus said to this woman? "Go and sin no more." It means that Jesus is not One who said this without knowing that she would commit sin. We must know and believe that it means: now do not live a life of committing that sin, but live while preaching the gospel of the Savior who removed your sins. Right now the people of the world are dying of thirst. They are dying right now.

The Lord removed all the sins that you and I have committed in the heart and the sins we have committed in deed. Yet we do not think much of the sins committed in the heart, and even among the sins committed in deed, we say that those that seem somewhat all right in our own thinking are all right, and regard

only great sins as sin. But Jesus says that whether it is a sin committed in the heart or a sin committed in deed, whether great or small, the wages of sin is death just the same, and that if there is even a little, one goes to hell.

The Lord, who removed even all the sins committed in the heart, removed once and for all even the sins committed in deed. Jesus is One who, as He said, *"I am the Alpha and the Omega,"* has no limit of time or expiration date, from eternity to eternity. Because He is One who lives forever, He came to this world once and for all, bore the sin of the world, that is, the eternal sins, and ended and completed that work. And Jesus went up to heaven, and although our lives are still in progress and will go on being in progress in the future, it means that all these sins have been included in the work the Lord did. So we obtain salvation by faith. Faith is once and for all. The truth is once and for all. This truth is a tremendous thing.

It says, *"Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God" (Matthew 4:4)*. By hearing this word that unfolds and preaches the word in the Bible, and by your believing it with your hearts, your hearts and souls—that is, your thoughts, hearts, and bodies—come to life. You are saved from all sins and obtain salvation, and gain new strength. You obtain eternal life and go to the Kingdom of Heaven. You become instruments of righteousness. You can praise God and give thanks. You can live receiving the blessings that God gives, and in the future you can enter and live in the eternal Kingdom. I give thanks before the Lord who has given such blessings. I will close the word here. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 2 by Paul C. Jong

I do not condemn you

< John 8:1-11 >

"But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. Now early in the morning He came again into the temple, and all the people came to Him; and He sat down and taught them. Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, 'Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?' This they said, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as though He did not hear. So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, 'He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.' And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground. Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, 'Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?' She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'"

It has been a very long time since I read John chapter 8. Dear fellow believers, you know well what this text says, do you not?

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

It is the content of the gospel that we hear most often.

The word of John chapter 8 is the word that, through the word that our Lord said to the woman caught in adultery, in the very act, *"Neither do I condemn you" (John 8:11)*, the Lord did not make an unfavorable judgment on this woman but judged her rightly, so that this woman was able to be saved from sin and follow the Lord. This woman was still a lacking person, but she was able to serve the Lord. We read the word that she was able to follow the Lord, be saved from sin, do the work of the light, become a witness of the light, and, living that way, meet the Lord and live well forever.

As we know well, here in John chapter 8 there appears the event in which, while Jesus went into the temple again and was teaching the people, the scribes and Pharisees brought a woman caught in adultery, set her in the midst, and tested Jesus. They asked, *"Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?" (John 8:4–5)*. In chapter 6 Jesus spoke about the Son of Man, that the God who came to this earth clothed in the form of a man is Jesus Himself and the Savior, and about many truths. In chapter 8, when Jesus went into the temple and was teaching the people, just then the scribes and Pharisees together brought a woman who had been caught in adultery on the spot, in the very act. And they made her kneel down before the feet of Jesus and tried to test Jesus, saying, the law commanded that such a person be stoned, but what do you say? Go ahead and say it.

What does the name of Jesus mean? It means Savior. Jesus, that is, the One who *"will save His people from their sins" (Matthew 1:21)*. Jesus is the One who came to this earth clothed in human flesh to save His people from their sins, God Himself completing the work of saving human beings from sin. And

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

before meeting this woman, Jesus had already received baptism from John the Baptist and borne the sin of mankind. We know this event that took place in the Jordan River. Yet they try to accuse Jesus.

Jesus met the sick and the weak and healed the sicknesses of the body and healed the sicknesses of the heart, and He met those who were suffering, bound by their own weaknesses and sins. Apart from people like the Pharisees or the scribes, there were people called tax collectors who collected taxes, and such people, because they had done many wrong things, were those who beat their breasts and turned back and asked Him to have mercy on such a one as themselves. The one who recorded the Gospel of Matthew was this very tax collector. Since he was a person who collected taxes, how many sins would this person have committed? Jesus made such a person the Lord's disciple and removed all their sins as well. He became their Savior.

But they bring this woman and try to accuse Jesus. They argued, saying, you usually say that you have come as the Son of Man, that you have come to this earth as the Savior clothed in the form of a man, that you are the Son of God the Father, that you are God, and you cry out about love, so then what will you say about this woman? We can see that they tried to accuse Him, to find fault and disparage and criticize Him.

"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first"

So Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger. What would He have written? He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first—He wrote that. He wrote it and looked around. Since Jesus did not speak but wrote

on the ground, the people kept asking. Then Jesus looked around at the people around Him and said, he who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first. Let the one without sin try throwing a stone at this woman. And when He looked around, it says that the people, convicted by their conscience, slipped away stealthily. It is the word that beginning from the oldest—from the older ones who, having lived longer, would have committed more sins—down to the young ones, they all slipped away one by one. Jesus stooped down again and wrote on the ground. He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first. And when He looked around, the people had all gone out and no one was left.

And Jesus said to this woman who had been caught in adultery, in the very act, where are those who accused you? Open your eyes and look. This woman was now shutting her eyes tight for fear of being stoned to death, in a situation where she did not know when a stone would fly at her. Among the Jews there is a law that if someone is caught in adultery, in the very act, that person is dragged out to the gate of the city and stoned to death. The law never tolerates adultery. But this woman opened her eyes, saw that there was no one, and said, no one. When Jesus said, *"Has no one condemned you?" (John 8:10)* and she said, "No one," Jesus said to her, neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.

The meaning of the words 'do not condemn'

Then what does this word 'condemn' mean? To accuse is to bring someone to court and denounce his wrongdoing. Pointing out a wrong and bringing someone to court so that he receives the punishment for the sin is accusation. Being convicted is

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

realizing sin in one's own conscience. And to condemn is to point out that one has sin, and the words 'do not condemn' mean not to judge unreasonably. The words that Jesus said mean exactly that. He said, neither do I condemn you. It means, neither do I judge you unreasonably. To condemn is to point out that one has sin, and to put it the other way around, Jesus said that neither could He unreasonably say that she had sin.

So this woman finally met Jesus and was saved. The woman who had been caught in the act and could only die met Jesus and obtained salvation. It is truly an amazing thing. In reality there is no one in this world who does not commit sin. When one is young, one can criticize others, thinking and acting as if one would live like the morning dew without a single spot of shame toward heaven, but as one grows older, the sins inherited through one's parents rise up in the heart of one's flesh, and one's own weaknesses pour out. One comes to think, I am nothing special, so I cannot point a finger at others; when I point at someone with one finger, the rest of my fingers point back at me; I too am not a person who can judge others. When one is sunk in one's own weaknesses and one's shortcomings are exposed, one wants to hide from people and wants to hide from God, too, and is ashamed. But Jesus came to this woman and spoke to her like this and saved her.

Of course, there is a meaning in Jesus' saying this. He said that neither could He make the unreasonable judgment that she had sin and had to be judged. Why is that? People had now dragged a sinner before Jesus, made her kneel, and were about to stone her to death, but Jesus says that neither can He say anything unreasonable to her or judge her. It is the word that because Jesus, having come to this earth, as you and I know, bore all the sin of mankind through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, the servant of the Lord, in the Jordan

River, the one who was to be judged now was Jesus Himself. It is the word that because Jesus is the Savior who came to save mankind, that is, you and me, from sin, the one who was rather to be judged, that is, the one who was to be punished on the Cross, was Jesus Himself. So He said to this sinful woman who had been caught in adultery, in the very act, and brought there, neither can I judge you unreasonably; neither can I say that you have sin.

The Savior who came to human beings who cannot help committing sin

All of us human beings, whoever we are, commit sin because we are all lacking. Whenever human beings commit sin, there is something that accuses us, and that is the law of God. It is the word of the law, the command of God. It said to do what is right, to honor your parents, and not to do what is not right. But how are we in reality? Are our hearts not the exact opposite? We want to do all the more what we are told not to do, we do not want to do what we are told to do; it said to love our neighbors, but we do not want to love them, and we want to do all the more what we are told not to do. Why is that? It is because from birth we were born as the seed of sin, as the seed of evildoers. It means that because we were born having inherited sin, as a seed that cannot help doing evil, we cannot help acting that way. Because we are such people, we cannot help committing sin.

At such times, the command of God says that you have now done wrong. Another is that Satan the devil says that you have now done wrong. Still another is that the conscience in your heart and mine says that you have done wrong. Are those words wrong? It is the reality and the fact that the conscience, the law

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

of God, and Satan the devil say that you have committed sin. But Jesus does not speak that way. He says, neither can I say that you have sin; I cannot judge unreasonably. Why is that? It is because Jesus came to save you and me from sin. Because He did the work of salvation, He already bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John. Jesus, who came clothed in the form of a man, a little later was nailed to the Cross and hung on it, bore all the sin of mankind and received the judgment for sin in place of mankind, and died and rose again, and became the Savior who saves mankind from sin. That is why He said so to this woman as well.

So it is the word that this woman was able to serve the Lord with a very bright heart, not bound by the sins she had committed until then because of her weakness. Dear fellow believers, do you understand these words? Looking at what follows, Jesus said, sin no more. If Jesus says not to commit sin, will one not commit sin? The flesh commits sin. But what sin is there that one can refrain from committing? Jesus bore all our sins by receiving baptism from John, was judged on the Cross, removed them all, and became our Savior. Therefore those who believe the fact that we have received the remission of sins and have no sin, that those who believe have no sin, that our Lord has removed all our sins are the ones who are saved. It is the word not to commit the sin of unbelief that does not believe this and says that although He took away all the past sins, there is sin again in the sins newly committed. There are two kinds of sin. There are also two kinds of remission of sins, and if we speak of the latter of the two sins, the Lord says not to commit the sin of blaspheming the Holy Spirit.

The Lord has removed all our sins. He bore all the sins with the baptism He received from John, and, having come as our Savior, had already accomplished a considerable part of the

work of salvation. And a little later, dying on the Cross, He says, it is finished. So those who believe what our Savior, our Lord, did are unreasonably condemned and accused by Satan the devil, but they are not bound by it. At any time, by faith, they confess, I am weak like this, but since the Lord has removed even this sin, I can follow the Lord at any time; I have no sin; I have received the remission of sins; I am one of God's people; I am a child of light, and with that faith they have become able to follow the Lord.

That is why one can overcome all those things—the attacks of Satan the devil, the curse of the law, judgment, and the judgment of conscience—overcome the world, overcome oneself and one's weaknesses, and follow the Lord by faith. In this way the Lord has saved us from sin.

Dear fellow believers, why is the Lord our Savior? Since she was clearly a woman caught in the act of adultery, He should have judged her and said to stone this woman, to kill her. Originally, in the law, if one goes against the command of God, is not the price for going against the command of the King death? Is not the wages of sin death? And yet, because our God came as the Savior, because He came to this earth to save us from sin, Jesus is our Savior. Because the Lord bore our sins with the baptism He received from John and does the work of receiving the judgment Himself, He does not judge those who believe what Jesus did, but gives them true salvation. He makes them children of light. Therefore we are saved from sin by faith.

We too are like the woman caught in the act. How many things have we done wrong out of our lack while living through this one day today? How many things have we done wrong to one another? If you have lived thirty years, or twenty years, until now, how many sins have you committed? Can you record every one of them? You cannot. At first, believing in Jesus, one says,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

I did wrong, I did this wrong, and later, being utterly unable to do anything about it, one confesses like this: “Your word is right. I am the seed of evildoers, and what I think and what I do are all sin. Apart from serving the Lord, everything is wrong. I show off as if I were righteous and right in my own way, but in fact that too is sin.” It means that apart from doing the work of God and believing in God, everything is sin. How could such people escape judgment?

As the word here says, Jesus said to this woman, neither do I judge you; neither do I judge you unreasonably. Why is that? It is the word that it is because He bore her sins. This woman, having committed adultery, now had to die, but Jesus bore all the sins of this woman. When did He bear them? When He received baptism from John the Baptist. Where? In the Jordan River. How did He bear them? By taking over the sins through the baptism He received from John. He set up one person, John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, and the Savior came and received baptism one-to-one through the representative of mankind, and thus Jesus bore all the sin of mankind. So He became the true Savior. Now all that remained was the work of being nailed to the Cross as the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world and saying, *“It is finished!” (John 19:30)*. And having died and risen again, He gives true salvation to those who believe the fact that Jesus is the true Savior of mankind, the Savior of you and me, and seals the hearts of those who believe so that they never go to hell. He puts His stamp on them. He seals them, saying, you believe in Me; you believe what I have done; you are My child; you are one of My people.

We can follow the Lord by faith because the Lord has saved us

Therefore we have become able to follow the Lord by faith. The reason we can still follow and serve the Lord now is that we believe that the Lord has saved us. We can gain new strength at any time. Otherwise, you and I have so many shortcomings that we would have to quit midway. We would quit believing in God, too, and since our shortcomings keep being exposed, we would lose face and, as a result, be unable to follow the Lord. But the Lord, knowing that we would be like that, bore even our future sins.

Did it not say, *"Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" (John 1:29)*? What is called the sin of the world is the sin from the beginning of this universe until the day this universe ends, from eternity to eternity. It is the word that it is the eternal sins. The Lord bore all those sins from eternity to eternity with the baptism He received from John and was nailed to the Cross, and when He died He said, it is finished, and just as He had said, He rose again on the third day.

So Jesus became the true Savior of you and me. He became the Savior of sinners, the Savior of those who are lacking, the Savior of the weak, the true Savior. I believe in the Lord. I am exactly the same kind of person as this woman caught in the act, but the Lord saved me, and I obtained salvation by faith. I believe that not only I but you also are so. Because the Lord came to this earth as the Savior and did the work of salvation to save you and me, we were saved by faith in His merits. If He had not done the work of salvation, we could not obtain salvation even if we believed. But because He accomplished all the work of saving us justly, we have become those who obtain salvation by faith, only being grateful and giving thanks in our hearts. This

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

is because it is the law that God has established.

This is the law of the Spirit. It is the law that God established. God established two laws. As one, He established the law that points out our sins. And to the people who cannot keep all this law He gave the Savior; God Himself came as the Savior and did the work of saving us from sin, and He sealed with the Holy Spirit those who believe this fact. The law given first is the law that kills, the law that makes one a sinner, and the law of the Spirit that God gave next is the law of love. Since it is the law that gives salvation on the basis of His having saved us justly, He has made it so that whoever only believes obtains salvation and obtains eternal life. That is why we have received the remission of sins by the faith we believe with, now at this hour and also as we live from now on. It is already in the past tense. When we believe, the eternal sins disappear once and for all. And when our shortcomings are exposed as we live, we confirm it once in a while by faith in the Lord, like the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement, and acknowledge our sins by faith, and if we do so, all of that disappears. To speak precisely, I can tell you that it is confirming what has already disappeared.

The Lord is the light of the world. This earth was all dark. People's hearts were also dark because they had sin. When God says, let there be light, the moment the light shines all the darkness disappears. This is the gospel, and this is the work of salvation in which the God of salvation came to this earth and saved you and me. This chapel, too, becomes pitch dark if all the switches are turned off. Turn on the switch, and it becomes bright. This is light. Light overcomes darkness. Darkness cannot overcome light. We are weak, and Satan the devil attacks us, but God loves us and, in order to make us the Lord's people, to make us workers of righteousness and have us enter and live in the Kingdom of Heaven, He Himself came into the world as the light.

He came as the light of salvation. So those who have found that light obtain salvation by faith. Dear fellow believers, have you obtained salvation? I too have obtained salvation that way.

Since we read the Gospel of John today, you may think it is all something you know, but not condemning does not mean that although there is sin, He unconditionally overlooks it all. It means that He does not judge unreasonably. Because the Lord has become our Savior, if we believe in Jesus, although we are lacking, we can at any time do what is right in the light. We can at any time live a new life, a right life. But one who does not believe, because he does not believe, is bound by sin and killed. By whom is he killed? He is killed by Satan the devil. Satan the devil condemns. He accuses. He accuses your conscience and mine, saying, you committed sin; when did you commit sin; what did you do? Dear fellow believers, have you never been accused like that? Have you never suffered because of it? Out of that suffering, we can obtain salvation by the faith that believes in that Jesus—who came to this earth clothed in the form of a man and became the Savior of you and me—as the God of salvation of you and me, as the Savior.

Those who have believed now have already obtained salvation. Nevertheless, we do wrong every day. If, by the faith we believe with, we acknowledge even the wrong we did today and confess that the Lord has removed that too, the Lord says, neither will I judge you unreasonably. It is the word that because the Lord has become our Savior, the Lord Himself is the witness. He is the witness who saved you and me. There must be two or more witnesses. Jesus and the Holy Spirit are our witnesses. So the Holy Spirit puts a stamp on the hearts of those who believe. And though we are lacking, He makes us follow the will of God.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

We are pruned through unity in the Church

Only, on our side there are so many habitual things that it is hard to follow well. We try to resist with shallow tricks. So we must keep living the life of faith in the Church and live the life of faith in unity. Dear fellow believers, suppose there is a tree of sin standing. Suppose we cut this tree. If we cut off about nine tenths of it, new shoots sprout wildly from the stump. Once the top is cut off, small branches sprout wildly from below. Then the owner leaves only those that can become branches and cuts off the rest. Those often grow again and become big trees. Even after we are saved, the desires of the flesh still keep rising up. In the Church, in order to serve the Lord, we ourselves press them down, and those who have gone ahead press them down with rebuke, cut them off, and remove them by confirming the gospel to us again. When they have been cut to some extent in this way, of course they still come up, but they cannot work as strongly as at first. Later new shoots come up and good branches exert their strength. Being a country person, I talked about trees; if you cut off the top of a tree, cut off all the small branches that come up from the roots, and leave only the branches that are needed, they grow like the trunk of the original tree and play its role.

We come to that through unity in the Church. The life of faith comes about. Even though we are saved, if we are left alone, we become a mess. Did it not say, *"You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt loses its flavor, how shall it be seasoned? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot by men" (Matthew 5:13)*? If the righteous do not serve the Lord, they do many evil things. So the Church is needed and a goal is needed. To those who have received the remission of sins He has set one goal. It is the command to preach the gospel to the whole world. Has the work of serving this gospel ended? It does not

end. We must do it until the Lord comes. They say eight million books have been sent out; that is a great many. It is truly gratifying. Then is it over? When we open our eyes, the Lord tells us to do it again. Until when? Until the Antichrist appears. As we do this work, it turns out that we cannot do bad things because we have no time to do them. In fact, even after you and I have received the remission of sins, it is because we have no time to do bad things that we cannot do them; if only we were given time, we would do them well. Even at this age, these are people who, if told to dance, would dance well with delight. But He says, neither do I condemn you; neither do I judge and pass judgment on you unreasonably. Because the Lord came as the Savior and removed the sins of this woman, bore them, and would receive the judgment, He says to you and me also, neither do I condemn you. So it means that He has enabled us to live a new life, a life of light.

With that faith we can work. Preaching the Gospel of John, it would be good to do all of chapters 6 and 7, but for a long time I have not preached the Gospel of John. In the old days, whenever I opened the Bible, there was a regular menu: Mark chapter 7, John chapter 8, Romans chapters 3 and 8, Hebrews chapters 10 and 11. If I were to preach the word, starting from Leviticus chapter 4 and coming to the Gospel of Matthew so that it is easy to understand, and going again to the Gospel of John, to Romans, and on to Hebrews chapter 10, you would have to sit here until tomorrow morning. If you say that is fine even so, I can do it as much as you like. Dear fellow believers, do you believe?

Because the Lord bore all our sins and received the judgment and saved us, because He became the Savior, He says, neither do I make an unreasonable judgment about you. It is because the Lord is the witness of our salvation. The Lord is the Savior and the Lord Himself is the witness. And who else is the witness?

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The Holy Spirit is the witness. If we believe this fact, the Holy Spirit comes into our hearts and puts a stamp on them.

As for whether there is any sensation with that stamp, there is none. When I published Volume 3 of my English books, I made known to all the people in the whole world that everything that deceives people, saying that the work of the Holy Spirit is like this, is all false. So such claims decreased greatly. What is strange throughout the world is that although people used to talk that way about the pre-tribulation rapture theory, once we translate it into documents and publish books, amazingly the whole world goes cold and does not talk about that part. These days they do not talk about it at all. Have you heard anything like the pre-tribulation rapture theory lately? They do not even ask. It is because they know that if they do, they will be greatly disgraced. I say it clearly. I tell them that if there is anyone who wants to protest against this, he should do it in writing. That is because I will prove it clearly with the word.

When does the rapture take place?

Then exactly when does the rapture take place? The Antichrist appears and seizes and kills all of us, the righteous. At the moment they are killed, this earth meets its end. In a world that seems perfectly fine, thunderbolts strike with a roar, the powers of the heavens are shaken, stars fall, and it collapses completely. And the waters of the earth turn the color of blood. As for the bowl plagues, seven bowls are poured out, and since they are poured on the sources of the waters, the waters turn into blood. Since people cannot live without drinking water, they end up drinking bloody water.

At that time, looking at the Book of Revelation, in heaven

our righteous ones, having come back to life, praise God, saying, it is just; this is truly a righteous judgment; since they shed our blood, it is a just judgment that they have been made to drink blood. What happens when one drinks blood? It is sticky, so the throat gets blocked and one dies. When one has pulmonary tuberculosis and blood bursts up from inside, one has to spit it out, but if one breathes it in so as not to bring it up, the throat is blocked in an instant and one dies.

This is what happens after that day, that is, after there have been martyrs. The Antichrist, the one who made artificial intelligence, seizes all the righteous and says, if you do not listen to me and do not praise and believe in me as God, you cannot buy or sell; receive the mark; worship me. Then we stand against him, saying, not a chance; I will refuse. We hold out, saying, you wicked one, I am a person who has already entrusted my life to the Lord; what can you do? Then, since it would be noisy to kill these people one by one, they gather all the people of the same faith together and kill them all at once. After that day comes the end of this earth. After the death of the righteous, from then on the plagues strike without restraint.

In the seven-year Great Tribulation, up to about three and a half years the righteous do not yet die. Around the middle they are killed. From then on, seven plagues like the bowl plagues are poured out. They sweep this earth away completely. And that is when the rapture takes place. The Lord truly comes with the angels. And He lifts up the Lord's people, whether dead or alive. The word rapture means to lift up. If you bring a big magnet near a place where there is a piece of iron, does it not stick in an instant even if it is a little distance away? That is the rapture. All the Lord's people go up before the Lord.

This, rising again and going up, is the first resurrection. Sinners are not resurrected at that time. He lets the righteous live

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

in the Lord's Kingdom for a thousand years. After the thousand years are finished, He resurrects the sinners. And at the white throne judgment He sentences them to eternal punishment in the unquenchable fire, and to the righteous He gives at that time the eternal blessing of eternal life. Then why is there the Millennial Kingdom? Is there not a difference in how you and I have labored on this earth? At that time He sets the difference in rewards. It would make no sense if those who were saved and served and those who did not serve were all the same. If someone says, I do not want to become anything high; I just want to be saved somehow and go there on that day, that is not a right thing to say. The one whom the Lord regards as most detestable is the one who, even after being saved, lives only for his own flesh. He becomes like the one who received one talent. Dear fellow believers, the Lord is a just One. That is why He does such things. We must know well and believe. Dear fellow believers, never once in this world has the word been spread as clearly as in this age. How thankful we are, truly!

Because we are weak, can our faith be damaged by material things, and by people, by the opposite sex, by honor, or by power, or can it not? It can. But the Lord says, neither do I judge you unreasonably. It is because we believe in the Lord. If you and I believe in the Lord in our hearts, the Lord, even though we are lacking, does not judge us, saying, you are bound for hell; you are one to be cursed. When He judges rightly, He says, neither can I judge you; neither can I say that you have sin. It is because the Lord is our Savior, because He did the work of salvation, because He is the witness, and because we believe in the Lord. How thankful a thing it is! Dear fellow believers, do you believe? I believe. If you believe, you must confess often. It is not something that is done by doing it only once. This confirmation of the gospel, like the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement, is

needed often.

These days the situation of the country is also difficult. The whole nation is dizzy in the head and troubled in heart. I have never seen such a chilly winter, and I have never seen such a chilly economy. Go and see after the worship service. The shops have all closed their doors. Originally most shops do better at night, but these days business is bad. But how thankful it is that the Lord has saved us, so that even in such a difficult world we have received the grace of being able to do the work entrusted to us today as well and serve the Lord? By faith I am truly thankful before God. I believe that not only I but you also are so.

They say the weather will ease a little tomorrow. How thankful we are! This winter I have for the first time met a winter so cold that it is hard to breathe in. It seemed as if a dagger-like blade were hidden in the air, so we said, let us not go outside, and locked ourselves in tightly, and it was hard. But since they say it will get better again tomorrow, it is bearable. They say it will get cold again for about two days from Sunday evening, so we will huddle up then, and when it gets better again, we will have to go outside again. These days, just having good weather makes us feel good. In the old days, even when the weather was warm and the air was clear, I did not know it was so good, but these days, even if only the air is good, I feel, how good it is, how thankful I am, and even if the weather eases only a little, I feel truly thankful.

The salvation that God gave us was very good at first, but as we served the Lord, the heat has cooled a lot. Our passion has cooled a lot and our thanksgiving has cooled a lot. He told us to give thanks always, but we fail to give thanks always, and our hearts also become uneasy. So today we shared the word together like this in order to chew it over again. Dear fellow believers, you are thankful, are you not? I too am thankful. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 3 by Paul C. Jong

Can the doctrine of repentance remove the sin of the woman caught in adultery, in the very act?

< John 8:3-11 >

"Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, 'Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?' This they said, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as though He did not hear. So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, 'He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.' And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground. Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, 'Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?' She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'"

Can the sin of this woman be removed by prayers of repentance?

Today I would like to share the word about the woman caught in adultery, in the very act. The scribes and Pharisees questioned Jesus. In verses 4 and 5 it says, *"They said to Him, 'Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?'"* It is the word that they asked the question in this way in order to find grounds to accuse Him.

In today's text there appears a woman caught in adultery, and I pose the question of whether the sin of this woman can be solved by today's orthodox Christian doctrine. I am asking whether the sin of this woman caught in the very act can be removed by the doctrine of repentance that Christian believers believe in and rely on as orthodox doctrine.

They will say that it disappears if one offers prayers of repentance. But does sin disappear if one offers prayers of repentance? Does sin disappear from the heart? It does not disappear. Sin is something that only Jesus can remove; it does not disappear just because some religion in this world has made a doctrine and one believes that doctrine and offers prayers of repentance. Does sin disappear by praying, "Lord, I did wrong; if You forgive me just this once, I will never do so again from now on"? It never disappears.

Because sin does not disappear, one has to offer prayers of repentance until one dies, and even if one offers prayers of repentance until one dies, sin does not disappear. So Christian believers, when they come to church, pray because of their sins,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"Lord, please forgive me," and at other meeting times, too, as soon as they close their eyes they offer prayers of repentance and pray for their sins to be forgiven. But sin does not disappear.

Dear fellow believers, if sin disappeared through the prayers of repentance that Christian doctrine speaks of, that doctrine would be genuine. But because it is a doctrine made by man, sin does not disappear. All by oneself, one confesses, "Lord, please forgive me. The Lord shed His blood and died on the Cross in my place and rose again and removed my sins," and believes and is convinced and tries to shake it off. But it means that a little while after praying, sin is still in the heart.

At first it seems that sin disappears. When one first believes in Jesus, for about a year or two, or for those who last long, about five years, it is very good. It is as if one had entered and were living in the Kingdom of Heaven. When one first believes in Jesus, it is new, and just thinking that Jesus died for me on the Cross makes one thankful and brings tears and surging emotions, and one wants to be faithful. But as we live, we cannot help committing sin. So when one has committed sin, one prays in one's own way for that sin to be forgiven.

Here the scribes and Pharisees accused the woman caught in adultery, in the very act. But if you and I are like the woman caught in adultery in the very act, and if you and I believe the doctrine of prayers of repentance, which is a Christian doctrine, and try to receive the remission of sins by offering prayers of repentance according to the doctrine, can we receive the remission of sins? It means that we cannot.

Sin is engraved on the tablet of the heart

Dear fellow believers, that sin is never washed away for

eternity. When one believes in Jesus, one comes to know the law, and when one comes to know the law, one comes to know whether one has done right or wrong. Before believing in God, there is no sin. That is because there is no standard. But when the word of God has said to do this and not to do that and we fail to keep that command, that is, when we have committed sin, that sin is engraved on the tablet of our heart. It is engraved on the tablet of our heart as letters are engraved on a stone monument. So it does not disappear.

So as for how long those who believe in Jesus offer prayers of repentance, they do so until the moment of death; even at the moment their life is cut off, they pray, "God, please forgive this sin," right up to that moment. So it means that by Christian doctrine sin does not disappear. It means that man-made Christian doctrine is not the truth. Why is that? It is because it was made by man. They say they took parts from the Bible and made a doctrine, but in reality it amounts to man having made a religion.

Man makes an object himself, makes a doctrine himself, lives bound by that doctrine himself, and thinks that sin can be removed gradually. The Christian doctrine of sanctification is also gradual. The doctrine of repentance is also gradual. By the doctrine of predestination one does not know. One does not know whether one is among the people chosen by God or among the people not chosen. One says, "Since I believe in Jesus, I seem to have been chosen," and then at times, since one cannot believe well, one says, "I seem not to have been chosen," going back and forth, so to speak. It goes back and forth because it is not the word of God; the word of God is not like that.

Do you now believe that the sin of adultery can be washed away by the prayers of repentance you believe in? It means that it is not so. The sins we have committed after believing in Jesus

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

are recorded. So that we, too, cannot forget, and so that God, too, does not forget, there is the book of works in the Kingdom of God. In that great book He records the names and all the sins that each person has committed. And He also records sins on the tablet of a person's heart.

Jeremiah 17:1 says, *"The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron; With the point of a diamond it is engraved On the tablet of their heart, And on the horns of your altars."* He said the sin of Judah, but God speaks by the principle of representation. It is the word that the sin of man is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond it is engraved on the tablet of their heart and on the horns of their altars. That it is written with a pen of iron with the point of a diamond means that He recorded our sins on the tablet of our heart with the point of a diamond and also recorded them in the book of works before God. It is the word that when the people of Israel offered the burnt offering, He recorded them on the horns of the altar of burnt offering. A person commits sin secretly where no one is, but when one has committed sin after believing in Jesus, whether one has received the remission of sins or not, it is first recorded in the heart.

Sin ends only when its price is paid

Then can sin be removed by prayers of repentance? Sin ends only when its price is paid; it does not disappear just because one says only in words, without paying the price, please forgive me. For example, suppose a person has killed someone by mistake. Would that matter be settled by going to the family and saying in words, "I am sorry; somehow it happened that I killed your family member; I apologize"? If one has killed a person, one must be tried and receive the punishment that fits it for it to end;

it means that after committing a sin, it does not end by saying one is sorry.

Even if we have done wrong after being saved, it does not end just because we say before people that we are sorry and apologize. We must go to the Lord and see how the Lord bore this sin. Jesus bore this sin by receiving baptism from John the Baptist in the Jordan River. Then how did He deal with it? It means that He bore the sin of the world by receiving the baptism John gave, washed away our sins, went to the Cross and received the punishment for sin in our place, and when He died, said, *"It is finished!" (John 19:30)* and died, and rose from the dead and settled our sins for us. He settled them that way.

In reality, every time we commit sin, it does not end by saying that we are sorry. To end it before God, the price of sin must have been paid. As for the price of that sin, it is not something that is done by just anyone receiving punishment. Only Jesus was able to bear our sins, and only Jesus received the judgment for our sins as well, died in our place, rose again from the dead, and became our Savior.

So we must go before that Jesus and solve the problem of our sins by faith. It does not end only in words, by saying that we are sorry. Because the wages of sin is death, it never ends in words. Those who have not fully believed this gospel think that it ends if they say in words that they are sorry. But the right thing is to end it before God first, and before people to acknowledge one's wrong and say that one will do better from now on; no matter how much one asks people for forgiveness, it is of no use.

If sin were not recorded on the tablet of our heart, we would not know what sin is. Before believing in Jesus, no matter how much sin one commits, it is not recorded well on the tablet of the heart. But when one commits sin after believing in Jesus, it is recorded on the tablet of the heart. So one says, "Ah, I have done

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

wrong." By what do we come to know our wrongdoing? The law makes people realize their sins. Looking at the word of the law of God, if one has violated this statute and has not done it and has not kept it, it becomes sin.

The price of sin is death. So after we believe in Jesus, we come to know sin through the law and come to know that we have sin. Then we need Jesus in order to receive the remission of our sins, and for that we must pass our sins on to Jesus by faith. It means that we must believe that John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, passed our sins on, and we must believe that Jesus bore those sins and went and received the judgment for our sins on the Cross, died in our place, and rose again and became our Savior. Only then are we saved. A person's sins do not disappear by being smoothed over halfway.

Let us read Revelation 20:12–15 together. *"And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire."*

Before God there is the Book of Life and there is the book of works; it is the word that there are two kinds of books. It is the word that as for a person who did not believe in Jesus on this earth, the sins he committed are recorded in the book of works, and a person who has received the remission of sins is recorded in the Book of Life. On this earth it is recorded on the tablet of our heart. So whether one has received the remission of sins or not is a matter of the heart.

Can the doctrine of repentance remove
the sin of the woman caught in adultery, in the very act?

How can we know whether we have truly acknowledged Jesus as the Son of God and as our Savior, and whether our sins passed on to the body of Jesus when Jesus received baptism from John the Baptist? It is that John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, passed our sins on. We must believe this fact and check it one by one and confirm it cleanly. Thus we receive the remission of sins.

"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first"

When the people came and asked, "But what do you say?" Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground. But *"So when they continued asking Him" (John 8:7),* these words mean that they kept asking. The people asked Jesus, "Moses said that if a woman is caught in adultery in the very act, she should be stoned to death, but what do you say? Just say something. Moses clearly said that if someone is caught while committing sin in the very act, he should be stoned to death. What will you say?" Staring at Jesus, they pressed Him to speak quickly, saying that He usually put on airs, so why was He silent today? *"Continued asking Him"* means that they asked again repeatedly. While they were saying, "What do you think? Moses said to stone her to death, but what will you do? Say something," Jesus did not say anything and wrote on the ground with His finger.

In verses 7 to 9 of the text it says, *"So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, 'He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first.' And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground. Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

left alone, and the woman standing in the midst." It is the word that He wrote on the ground twice. Dear fellow believers, what does it mean that Jesus wrote on the ground? It means that He wrote these words. He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first. When He wrote the first time, the people kept asking, and Jesus rose up and said, he who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at this woman first, and when they still kept asking, He said it to their faces. If there is anyone among you who has no sin, let him throw a stone at this woman. When Jesus said so, the people all slipped away.

And Jesus spoke to the woman. Let us read verses 10 and 11. *"When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, 'Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?' She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'"* That He does not condemn her either means that He will not say that she has sin. And then He speaks in verse 12. *"Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying, 'I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life.'"* It is the word that Jesus Himself is the light. Then what is sin? It is darkness.

"It is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness"

Jesus came to save His people from their sins, and when He turned thirty, before meeting this woman, He went to John the Baptist, who was baptizing in the Jordan River, and wanted to be baptized. And He received baptism. He received baptism because it is fitting to fulfill all righteousness. He said, "It is fitting to fulfill all righteousness by My receiving baptism from you; it is right to make all people sinless; so you baptize Me."

John the Baptist baptized Jesus in the same manner as the laying on of hands in the Old Testament, and Jesus went into the water and came up again, and at that time God said by a voice from heaven, *"This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" (Matthew 3:17)*. It is the word that the One who has now received baptism is My Son, the One in whom I am well pleased, the One who has now borne the sin of the world, the One who has borne the sin of mankind, and so the One who has borne and washed away the sin of all people.

It is the word of Matthew 3:13–17. *"Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. And John tried to prevent Him, saying, 'I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?' But Jesus answered and said to him, 'Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.' Then he allowed Him. When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, 'This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.'"*

God the Father said these two things: that Jesus' receiving baptism is a thing in which God the Father is well pleased, and that the One who has now received baptism from John the Baptist is My Son; and Jesus, too, said, *"Thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15)*. When Jesus received baptism, He spoke to John. Saying, you baptize Me; I will receive baptism from you, He said, *"Thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness"; "thus"* is, in Greek, 'houtos (οὕτως) dikaiosyne (δικαιοσύνη),' that is, a word meaning in this manner. It is the word that it will not do unless it is this method, and that it is right that, by this method without fail, I receive baptism from you and bear all the sin of mankind once and for all and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

save them from sin and wash them. ‘Houtos dikaiosyne’ is a word meaning the most just, right, and righteous.

All righteousness that Jesus fulfills by receiving baptism in this manner from John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, means all rightness. What is all the right work that Jesus does by receiving baptism? Removing the sin of mankind by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, the greatest among those born of women, is fulfilling all righteousness. It is the word that that is why He received baptism. That was the will of God the Father. It is just as the word says, *“This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased” (Matthew 3:17)*. It means that Jesus bore the sin of us human beings at this time by receiving baptism from John the Baptist.

So Jesus bore our sins with the baptism He received from John, and in John 19:28–30 He was hung on the Cross and shed all His blood, said, *“I thirst!”* and received the sour wine, said, *“It is finished!”* and breathed His last. And after being in the tomb for three days, He rose again. Jesus had said in advance that He would rise again in three days, saying, *“Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up” (John 2:19)*. People had Roman soldiers guard the tomb. An angel came down from heaven and rolled away the stone from the entrance of the tomb, and inside the tomb the clothes were folded neatly. Jesus rose again three days after His death and appeared to His disciples several times. While the disciples were trembling with fear inside the house, with the door shut, Jesus suddenly appeared and said, have you been well? Receive the Holy Spirit. It was after Jesus had accomplished all our salvation that He said to receive the Holy Spirit. That is why the Holy Spirit comes when we believe in Jesus and receive the remission of sins in our hearts.

The one eternal sacrifice offered once for all

I will read Hebrews 10:10–18. *"By that will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God, from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool. For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified. But the Holy Spirit also witnesses to us; for after He had said before, 'This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them,' then He adds, 'Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.' Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin."*

Dear fellow believers, the people of Israel in the Old Testament, when they had committed sin, brought a sacrificial offering every day, laid hands on it to pass their sins on, cut its throat, took its blood and gave it to the priest, and the priest cut the offering into pieces, laid it on the altar of burnt offering, and burned it to offer it. The Christian doctrine of prayers of repentance is like such sacrifices offered repeatedly. But after Jesus Christ came to this earth, it says, *"By that will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all" (Hebrews 10:10).*

Because Jesus is the God who lives forever, He is the One who came to this earth to put on human flesh for a while, bear the sin of mankind, wash away the sin of mankind, receive all the judgment, save us from judgment, and give new life. He was born in the presence of God the Father, received baptism from John the Baptist at the age of thirty, and at the age of thirty-three,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

bearing the sin of the world, was nailed to the Cross and said, *"It is finished!" (John 19:30)* and died, and rose again and became our Savior. Therefore it is the word that those who believe in Jesus as their Savior have received the remission of sins. It means that He says, *"We have been sanctified."*

Jesus said, *"I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life" (John 8:12)*. It is the word that one does not suffer because of having sin, nor offer prayers of repentance and beg every day. Why is that? It is because Jesus is one's own Savior. Jesus came to this earth once and for all and, through His life of thirty-three years, bore our sins with the baptism He received from John at the age of thirty and received all the judgment for our sins at the age of thirty-three. Because He has saved us from sin like that, it is that the Lord has made us holy. He has made us sinless. We have become children of God by believing in that Jesus.

"I am the light of the world" (John 8:12), it is that we who believe in Jesus have become a sinless light. This house, too, is pitch dark as soon as the switch is turned down. But when the switch is turned up and the light comes in, the darkness all retreats. Jesus came and bore the darkness Himself, was judged, and paid the debt of sin in full, and thus saved us perfectly. By receiving that Jesus as our Savior, we become perfectly righteous.

So it could not be done by the Old Testament sacrifices, but in verses 12 to 14 it says, *"But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God, from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool. For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified."* It is the word that Jesus came to this earth and offered one eternal sacrifice with His own body in order to remove the sin of this world. In the past they laid hands on the

sacrificial offering and offered it, but now it is not done with an animal offering. The Son of God came to this earth clothed in flesh by being born of Mary. He bore sin in His own body through the baptism He received from John, gave Himself over to the cross, died once and for all, and rose again. It means that because He is One who can live forever and One who can die and rise again, He offered the eternal sacrifice and saved us from sin.

So this fact is very important. We do not believe Christian doctrine. Man-made doctrine is of no use at all. No matter how long one believes it, it is of no use. What must we believe? We must believe this word of the Bible as the word of God. What is written in the word is the truth. It is the word that Jesus has now removed all our sins and is seated at the right hand of the throne of God, and from that time is waiting till His enemies are made His footstool. And it says, *"For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified" (Hebrews 10:14)*. Who is the One who became the one offering for us? Who is the One who shed His blood? Who is the One who bore our sins, shed His blood, and paid the price of sin? It is Jesus.

It is that Jesus became our Savior. It is the word that by meeting and believing in that Jesus and receiving Him in our hearts, since the sins committed in the past all passed on to Jesus, they have vanished completely, and we have become God's sinless people. *"As many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name" (John 1:12)*, it means that we have become children of God. It means that we have become sinless people, that we have become righteous.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them"

In verses 16 to 18 it says, *"'This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them,' then He adds, 'Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.' Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin."* In Jeremiah chapter 31, since God cannot save by the law, He said, "I will write My law, the law of love, in your hearts; I have removed your sins." So after believing in Jesus, we must believe that Jesus is my Savior, that Jesus bore all my sins by receiving baptism from John, and that Jesus shed His blood and died on the Cross for me. And this fact is recorded in the heart of the one who believes that He became the sacrificial offering for me and received the punishment in my place, and that He died and rose again and became my Savior.

"Jesus is my Savior. He bore my sins. He washed away my sins. He received the judgment for my sins. He gave me new life." This confession is engraved in the heart. It is Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit who engrave it.

So when we are lacking and weak as we live on this earth, and our wrongs are exposed and our hearts feel somewhat uneasy and troubled, we look to the Lord. And we give thanks once again, saying that the Lord bore this sin too, and that although I did wrong like this, I am so thankful that He bore this sin too. It is the word that the Lord has guided us to become people who, having our hearts cleansed in that way and purifying our hearts once again by faith, can then run toward the Lord.

And in verse 17 it says, *"Then He adds, 'Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.'"* It is the word that He does not remember. Why is that? God is eternal, and since the

eternal One came to this earth once and for all, received baptism from John, died and rose again and became our Savior, and removed all our sins, it is the word that there is no need to remember the sins we commit while we live and all the sins of the people who will live after we die. It is because the Lord has removed sin forever. We were born as sinners through our parents and could only go to hell. But it is the word that the person who knows who Jesus is, knows the baptism Jesus received from John, knows that Jesus was hung on the Cross and received the punishment and shed His blood, knows that He died and rose again, and believes that all of that was the love of God for me has no sin.

So *"passed over the sins that were previously committed" (Romans 3:25),* passing over means looking past. If it were us, being narrow-minded, we would say, "I remember everything you did to me at that time," but it means that Jesus does not even remember the sins of those who believe, because He has removed them all. We need to check again, but Jesus has no need to. It is because He is such a perfect One. Dear fellow believers, I believe you understand. It is the word that the prayers of repentance spoken of in present-day Christian doctrine cannot solve the problem of the sin of this woman caught in adultery, in the very act. It is that it cannot be done by the prayers of repentance they speak of.

Because this woman committed sin and the wages of sin is death, the price of sin must be paid. So because the Savior, the Son of God, came to this earth and, for this woman, took over her sin by receiving baptism from John and bore it, and died on the Cross and rose again, if this woman believes in that Savior, the sin of this woman is perfectly removed. You, too, will all believe so.

Dear fellow believers, this is the perfect truth that the Bible

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

speaks of. Although we cannot obtain salvation by keeping the law, because the law is the standard that always makes us realize and know our sins and teaches us what is right and wrong, the law is not unnecessary but absolutely necessary. The law is absolutely necessary, too, but because the One who saves us—we who cannot help stumbling over the law—is Jesus, we must know and believe that Jesus has saved us with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. What we must know and believe is the fact that that Jesus was the God of love, that because He loves us He gave His own body, received baptism in His own body through John the Baptist, received the punishment of the Cross in His own body, shed the blood of life that was in His own body, and rose again from the dead and became our Savior.

By believing this fact we become the eternal people of God. Dear fellow believers, this is the true gospel. What I am telling you is that it cannot be done by Christian doctrine, nor by the doctrine spoken of in Catholicism, nor by the doctrine spoken of in Buddhism. Then who can do it? Only Jesus was able to do it, and only Jesus became the true Savior of you and me. I want to tell you that fact.

We must return to the word of the Bible

When we look at the Bible, we are looking at the word of God. God is not One who is visible to our eyes, but we have become people who can have fellowship with God through this word. That is why God has given us the Bible like this. This Bible has dozens of authors and was written over a period of more than fifteen hundred years. Yet from Genesis 1:1 to the end of Revelation, of whom does it all testify? It testifies of Jesus.

Dear fellow believers, if a novelist writes one book in his

thirties and later writes one at the age of sixty, the contents of the two books must be consistent with each other, but it is not easy to write the contents consistently. The word of God recorded what He said to someone long ago, and recorded what He said to someone else, and thus recorded it all. And it is recorded in two parts. It consists of the word of prophecy and the word of the fulfillment of prophecy.

But today people believe Christian doctrine, offer prayers of repentance, and strive to be sanctified and become sinless people and clean people; does that make sense? Who made that Christian doctrine? It is nothing more than one book of doctrine, and man made it. Religious leaders gathered and made it. Among the Reformers there is a man named John Calvin, a Frenchman. He wrote a book called Institutes of the Christian Religion, and that book is Christian doctrine. It took twenty-five years to write that one book. Looking at the Bible, he wrote, saying, "Ah, this word must mean this," and as time passed he looked again and said, "Ah, I wrote this part wrong," and erased it and wrote again, and for twenty-five years he repeatedly wrote and erased and completed one book. When he published this book, did he put it out saying, "Ah, now it is perfect"? It seems likely that he published the book thinking, "The more I do it, the more tangled it seems to get, so let me stop now."

Whenever I preach and publish a collection of sermons, I could go deeper if I wanted to go deeper and could change to another subject if I wanted to change, but what man does is not perfect. But was there anything to correct in the Bible that Jesus gave us? Was there anything to correct in the text? The Old Testament is written in two languages, Hebrew and Aramaic, and the New Testament was written in Greek. The grammar of their languages is different from the grammar of our language. It is extremely precise. We have only the active voice and the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

passive voice, but their languages have the middle voice as well. You cannot imagine how elaborate that grammar is. So there are no errors. When one translates, their languages are extremely accurate. Our language expresses things well, but its precision is weak. Our country's language can be stretched if one wants to stretch it and greatly shortened if one wants to shorten it. But their languages can never be like that. It means that there is nothing to correct. Because it is the word of God, what was written over more than fifteen hundred years is now held in our hands.

As for whom this whole Bible testifies of, it testifies of Jesus Christ. It speaks of Jesus who was to come to this earth to save sinful mankind. The Old Testament is like that. The New Testament speaks of Jesus who came, Jesus who fulfilled the word of prophecy, and then speaks of what will be fulfilled in the future. The Bible is divided into three stages like that.

Dear fellow believers, the scribes and Pharisees who appear in this word are exactly the same kind of people as those who believe in modern Christianity. These people are not people who do not believe in God. But these people grabbed this woman caught in adultery, in the very act, by the hair, dragged her mercilessly, flung her down before Jesus, and each hid a stone. Thinking, "However much Jesus usually cries out about love, He will probably say to stone her to death," they pressed Him, saying, "Moses said to stone such a person to death, but what do you say? Do not say anything else; just speak quickly." Jesus did not say anything, but wrote on the ground with His finger, he who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone, and raised His head and said, *"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first" (John 8:7),* and stooped down again and wrote again.

I said that when a person commits sin, it is recorded in the

heart, did I not? It was a word that struck the very core of their hearts. Do not all have sin? So, thinking, "If I stay here, I will be disgraced; that man knows all the sins I have committed; if I stay in this place, I will be disgraced," they quietly dropped their stones on the ground and slipped away from Jesus one by one.

Is Jesus our Savior, or is He not? He is the true Savior. Those people who tried to stone this woman to death while trying to find a weak point in Jesus are, to speak in today's terms, Christian believers and religious leaders. When someone has done wrong, they say, "Why did you do that? Offer prayers of repentance; if that does not work, go and pray on a mountain," but if sin disappeared by doing so, then man would be the truth and man would be the Savior. Man-made Christian doctrine, Catholic doctrine, and Buddhist doctrine are all nothing more than regulations made by man.

Dear fellow believers, Siddhartha is the founder of Buddhism, but when Siddhartha was alive, was all of that recorded? Siddhartha only spoke to his disciples. But after Siddhartha, who had cultivated the way under the Bodhi tree, died, his disciples thought, "Among his words there are such excellent things; some we remember and some we do not remember, so what shall we do?" and from then on they wrote them down as they came to mind. As many disciples each wrote them down, it became the vast Buddhist scriptures, the Tripitaka. Who wrote all of that book? Did Siddhartha write it all? Could there be accuracy in it?

Dear fellow believers, the Reformers came out of Catholicism and made Christian doctrine. They wrote one book over twenty-five years. Was it written by man, or written by Jesus? It was written by man. Matthew and John, the disciples of Jesus, and Mark and Luke recorded the word of God in the four Gospels. Besides those there are the Epistles of Paul, the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Epistles of Peter, and the Epistles of John. What is written as Christian doctrine is the word of man, and the Bible is the word of God. So it is the word that if we return to the word of the Bible and look at the word of the Bible, and learn, confirm, and believe as it is written, we have fellowship with God, receive the remission of sins, become children of God, and become workers of God. Dear fellow believers, this age is being ruined because of man-made doctrine, because of doctrine made by the Catholic Church.

Why am I telling you this word now? People do say, let us return to the word again. But it is very hard to return. Why is that? Because they have memorized Christian doctrine so much and believed it as it is, even while looking at the Bible they say, "This word here, if interpreted according to the Christian doctrine I learned, must mean this." John the Baptist testified, *"Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" (John 1:29)*. John the Baptist said this because he had baptized Jesus. But a person who has learned Christian doctrine, looking at this word, reads it as, "Jesus took away only original sin and has not yet taken away actual sins." The Bible is not like that. It said the sin of the world, and the sin of the world means all the sins from the time mankind began until the day mankind ends. Then why do they see it that way? It means that it is too difficult to return to the word of God.

Because it is difficult, they cannot return. So we preach and tell them clearly. This woman committed the sin of adultery, and according to Christian doctrine she must offer prayers of repentance, but can the sin of this woman disappear by her offering prayers of repentance? It cannot be removed. It is because sin is recorded in a person's heart. It is the word that only when one meets the Lord and believes in the baptism the Lord received from John and the Cross is the law of God, the

law of love, recorded in the heart.

It means that one becomes a saved person only when the new law of love is recorded in the heart—that Jesus came to this earth and bore my sins with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, was judged on the Cross and died shedding His blood, and rose again from the dead and saved me, and that He became my God. That is why I preach this sermon. I am not doing it only to you. I do it to the people of the whole world, and publish books. Is doing this wrong? Even if it is wrong, it cannot be helped. The books must be put out. Then when people read them, they come to think, "Ah, according to the word of God, this woman, too, has no sin." Did this woman receive the remission of sins, or did she not? She received the remission of sins. Did Jesus not say at the end? He said, *"Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more" (John 8:11)*.

Then does it mean that since we have received the remission of sins, it is all right to keep committing sin? Do we commit sin because we want to, or because we are weak? Which is closer? There are sins committed because one wants to, but mainly human beings commit sin because they are weak, even though they know it is not right. That is why Jesus had to bear all those sins with the baptism He received from John, and because it ends only when He died hanging on the Cross and paid the price of sin, Jesus accomplished it so and became our Savior, and we are saved if we believe. We are not beings who can commit sin when told to and refrain from committing sin when told not to. When the circumstances are set, we commit sin, and when the circumstances are not set, we do not. Is that not so with everyone?

So it means that it cannot be done by Christian doctrine. So I say this word repeatedly. People read the book once and say, "It cannot be done by Christian doctrine? This man is really bold. How big the present denominations are; would it work just

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

because someone like you says so?" As they keep reading, the words "It cannot be done by Christian doctrine?" come up again a little later. Since it says it cannot be done by Christian doctrine, they close the book. But after a while it keeps ringing in their hearts. It rings, "It cannot be done by Christian doctrine; it cannot be done," and even in their dreams when they sleep it rings, "It cannot be done; it cannot be done." So they come to think. When they finally believe, thinking it is really so, and receive the remission of sins, they come to know, "Ah, because of Christian doctrine, one would perish while believing in Jesus; people have gone into destruction." That person, too, receives the remission of sins and becomes an evangelist and a person who preaches the gospel.

It means that there is no one who tells them this fact. Dear fellow believers, a dog that cannot bark is useless. A dog is a dog only when it barks. When useless people come, it must bark loudly. The Old Testament, too, said of shepherds who lie and swindle, *"Dumb dogs, They cannot bark" (Isaiah 56:10)*. I am not a dog that cannot bark. I am a dog that barks. I will tell everything. I have told much even now, and I will continue in the future.

Although there is a difference in whether the intensity is raised or lowered, if in the old days I preached the gospel purely, now I do it with the intensity raised a little. Only when we point out their wrongdoings so they realize them can they choose whether to believe or not; if we leave them as they are, will they believe? If we only preach the gospel, they say, "Our Christian doctrine is not like that," and do not believe. Truly Jesus is the God of love and has become our Savior. I give thanks. I have finished the word. ✉

Can the doctrine of repentance remove
the sin of the woman caught in adultery, in the very act?

Sermon 4 by Paul C. Jong

You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free

< John 8:21-47 >

"Then Jesus said to them again, 'I am going away, and you will seek Me, and will die in your sin. Where I go you cannot come.' So the Jews said, 'Will He kill Himself, because He says, "Where I go you cannot come"?' And He said to them, 'You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world. Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for if you do not believe that I am He, you will die in your sins.' Then they said to Him, 'Who are You?' And Jesus said to them, 'Just what I have been saying to you from the beginning. I have many things to say and to judge concerning you, but He who sent Me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I heard from Him.' They did not understand that He spoke to them of the Father. Then Jesus said to them, 'When you lift up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am He, and that I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father taught Me, I speak these things. And He who sent Me is with Me. The Father has not left Me alone, for I always do those things that please Him.' As He spoke these words, many believed in Him. Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

They answered Him, ‘We are Abraham’s descendants, and have never been in bondage to anyone. How can You say, “You will be made free”?’ Jesus answered them, ‘Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin. And a slave does not abide in the house forever, but a son abides forever. Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed. I know that you are Abraham’s descendants, but you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you. I speak what I have seen with My Father, and you do what you have seen with your father.’ They answered and said to Him, ‘Abraham is our father.’ Jesus said to them, ‘If you were Abraham’s children, you would do the works of Abraham. But now you seek to kill Me, a Man who has told you the truth which I heard from God. Abraham did not do this. You do the deeds of your father.’ Then they said to Him, ‘We were not born of fornication; we have one Father—God.’ Jesus said to them, ‘If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I proceeded forth and came from God; nor have I come of Myself, but He sent Me. Why do you not understand My speech? Because you are not able to listen to My word. You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it. But because I tell the truth, you do not believe Me. Which of you convicts Me of sin? And if I tell the truth, why do you not believe Me? He who is of God hears God’s words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God.’”

"If you do not believe that I am He, you will die in your sins"

If we divide the word here into paragraphs, there are several parts. First, looking from verse 21, it says, *"Then Jesus said to them again, 'I am going away, and you will seek Me, and will die in your sin. Where I go you cannot come.'"* When the Lord said this, the Jews said, *"Will He kill Himself, because He says, 'Where I go you cannot come'?" (John 8:22)*. Jesus said, *"You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world. Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins; for if you do not believe that I am He, you will die in your sins."*

What the Lord is saying as a whole is this. Through the miracle of the five loaves and two fish in John chapter 6, and walking on the water of the sea, and all these things, it is that the Lord Himself came from heaven, that He is not only the Son of God but the Lord Himself is God and the Savior of this world. But at that time, among the Jews there were many who could not understand at all, even though Jesus gathered all the people, whether learned or not, and spoke to them. I am from above and you are from beneath; you are of the earth and I have come from heaven; *"before Abraham was, I AM" (John 8:58)*, they could not understand it at all. So our Lord said that if they did not know and believe that Jesus Himself is that very Savior, *"You will die in your sins."*

And Jesus said, *"When you lift up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am He, and that I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father taught Me, I speak these things. And He who sent Me is with Me. The Father has not left Me alone, for I always do those things that please Him" (John 8:28–29)*. It says, *"As He spoke these words, many believed in Him" (John 8:30)*. It is the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

word that when our Lord bore the sin of the world through the baptism He received from John and died hanging on the Cross and rose again, people would come to know the fact, "He really was the Savior; He truly was God." It was very frustrating at that time, too, and in this age, too, there is this kind of difficulty when we try to preach Jesus.

"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free"

So I would like to share the word on the theme of this word that we know well here. It is verses 31 and 32. He said, *"Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'"* He said that if you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed, and went on to say, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."* This word is extremely important. Other words are also very important, but this word, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free,"* is important.

Dear fellow believers, what is the truth? The word truth speaks of what is true. It speaks of a very true and genuine reality. The truth is revealed by not hiding. To be true means that there is nothing hidden. It means telling the facts exactly as they are. To make free means literally to be liberated, and the truth speaks of what is true, and it means that when we know the truth, we are made free.

Then what is the truth the Lord speaks of here? That is the question. Looking in the middle of the words we read from verses 21 to 24, it says, *"You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world" (John 8:23)*. The

Lord said, I am the bread that came down from heaven, the living bread, and it is the word that since the Lord was born from above, the Lord Himself is God. And He said, you are from beneath; you are of this world; but I am not of this world. What is true, what is the truth, is that Jesus is the One born from above and so Jesus Himself is God.

As for the first truth we must know in believing in Jesus, it is the fact that Jesus is God who came down from above. It means that if Jesus is the true God and we do not know that fact, our believing in Jesus has no meaning at all. Jesus is God, and it means this: if we do not know that He is God, can we believe the work that that Jesus does? It means that we cannot know what the meaning is of the things Jesus did, His performing miracles, His raising the dead, and also His saying, *"I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me" (John 14:6)*.

"You shall know the truth" (John 8:32), we must know that Jesus is God, we must know that He was born from above, and we must know it truly and properly. To be true means to speak without hiding anything at all. When we say the true God, the word true means genuine, and the word genuine means that not a single falsehood is contained in it.

So when we believe that Jesus is God, we can also believe the work He did, and we can also believe that He bore our sins and received the judgment of all sins and rose again from the dead and became our Savior. By knowing that truth, we obtain freedom from being bound by all sins. It is just as the word says, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free" (John 8:32)*. We must know and believe that He is the One born from above. He came to this earth and, in order to bear our sins, received baptism from John the Baptist and bore our sins, was hung on the Cross and removed the sin of the world, said, it is

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

finished, and died and rose again. When we know that He is the true God and our Savior, we are set free from sin, from bondage, from weakness, from death, from the law, and from the curse. We are liberated. That is the meaning of this word.

You shall know the truth—it is the word that when we know that Jesus is the One born from above, that He is God, that He is the true Savior, that He truly removed our sins with the water and the blood, that He was God Himself in essence, we obtain freedom. Dear fellow believers, do you understand what this means? As for what belongs within the truth, the fact that Jesus is God who came down from above belongs within it. If one does not know that Jesus is God, one's believing in Jesus is all void. Such faith is nothing more than a doctrine that man has made up. I have made this into documents and put them out. It is the same as the original text of the Bible. People say that one obtains salvation if one just believes unconditionally, but if Jesus were One without worth, no matter how much one believed, there would be no salvation. Let alone salvation, one could obtain nothing at all.

We discover the truth when we properly know the worth of Jesus

In the Bible there is the word honor. We are told to honor our parents, and as for what honor means, it means to esteem highly. Honor your parents—so it means to esteem the worth of your parents highly. When we honor our parents, if in our own eyes our parents have little worth and there is nothing to esteem highly, and they are rather esteemed low, we cannot honor them. Just as it said to honor your parents, our Lord is One who reveals His own glory, an extremely glorious One. It is the word that He

is God, One who has honor and renown, One who is holy, One who has majesty, One whom we must very clearly honor, One whom we must esteem very highly. We must not appraise Jesus only to the extent of one who put on the same human flesh as ours on this earth. It means that we must not appraise Him as some being on a par with us. The person who can properly know His worth and esteem Him highly is the person who knows the truth.

I preached earlier about Jesus' calling Himself the Son of Man on this earth. The Son of Man means the One who is God and came to this earth clothed in the form of a man. He said, the Son of Man must be lifted up from the earth, and the Son of Man is the One who gives you the bread of life. He is God and our Savior, and since He came to this earth clothed in the form of a man in order to do the work of salvation for us and saved us from sin, how high His worth is—that is what I am saying.

A little while ago we sang the hymn "Nothing is more precious than the Lord Jesus," and seen as a whole, it is a hymn composed with the meaning that Jesus is more precious than anything in the world. Truly there is nothing more precious than the Lord Jesus. Compared with Him, the things of this world are not precious. What about Jesus? He is more precious than all mankind, more precious than any material thing in this world, more precious than anything precious in this world—One whose worth is beyond human expression. It means that He is One whose worth must be esteemed highly. Why is that? It is because He is the Creator, the Master, the One who is to be worshiped, God who is to be glorified, and an extremely glorious One who lacks nothing at all. If we know Him so and believe in Him so, and if we believe that He came and saved us with the water and the blood, we obtain freedom, just as He said, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."* If we believe that

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Jesus has made us free, we obtain freedom.

The word that Jesus is equal to God the Father and that God the Father gives glory to His own Son appears in the latter part of John chapter 8, which follows. I will continue the sermon from that part.

We discover the truth when we properly know the worth of Jesus. *"You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world" (John 8:23),* if one just reads this word, it all sounds the same and one ends up thinking, I suppose so, but if one properly knows His worth, it is not so. Dear fellow believers, there are many people on this earth, and when I go out and meet many people, do the people know my worth? Because those people do not know my worth, they treat me carelessly, act curtly, and ask strange questions. At such times, in my heart there rises the thought, "Hey, if you had properly recognized me, you could be saved from sin and go to the Kingdom of Heaven, too." I cannot tell you how often there rises the thought, "If you had properly known who I am and properly known my worth, you could be blessed in this world, too; you could become a blessed person, too." But if I were to say with my own mouth, I am one who can send you to the Kingdom of Heaven, would that person believe? Yet I am actually a person who can remove that person's sins through Jesus, send that person to the Kingdom of Heaven, and enable him to live happily and well on this earth. These people do not know my worth.

How much more, then, how high is the worth of Jesus? Would you compare Him with me? He is the One who is the essence of essences. The One whose worth is the highest, the One who has the supreme worth, is God the Father, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit. That God has the highest worth. If you and I properly appraise the worth of Jesus, we come to know the fact that He is One whose worth is extremely high. Is He not the

Creator? He is the One who made all things in this universe, the world of the galaxies, and made this earth float in the air and revolve without falling. Can we do that? Can you make life? We imitate, but we cannot create. We combine what exists, but can we make a universe? Can we become holy ones without a single sin at all? Do we have the power to rule over everything? If you and I compare ourselves with Him, we cannot even be compared, and His worth is so high. You shall know the truth—if we know the worth of Jesus, that is the truth. "Ah, this One is truly the truth." Did the Bible not say, *"All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made" (John 1:3)*?

To be frank, let us weigh this worth once against a person who made a religion and is called its founder, the person called Shakyamuni of Buddhism. This person was born from beneath, born of the earth, and is one who belongs to the earth. To where does Jesus belong? He was born from heaven and is One who belongs to heaven. Is the worth comparable? It is not worth comparing them. You and I, once we have received the remission of sins, are people who have worth. But although we are people who have worth, we can give up that worth ourselves. If we do not serve the gospel and live only for ourselves, we become worthless people. A person who originally had no worth at all, a person who is useless even to the world, is fit to go to the bottom of hell.

We must properly know the worth of Jesus and believe in Jesus. You shall know the truth—we must know. How can one believe without knowing? If one believes without knowing, it turns into, you and I are all saviors; since we too have been saved, we are sons of God and you too are a son of God. It is not that kind of worth, is it? Jesus is One who has a worth that cannot be fully expressed no matter how highly He is appraised, no matter

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

how high a price is put on Him. It is Him that we believe in. It is He who came to save us and saved us. When we believe in Him, we obtain freedom. We have been saved from sin, become children of God, obtained eternal life, and come to do precious work.

To whom do you belong?

So let us look at verses 46 and 47. *"Which of you convicts Me of sin? And if I tell the truth, why do you not believe Me? He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God."* He said, if there is anyone among you who can convict Me because I was lacking and committed sin or made a mistake, go ahead and try. No one could. Jesus lived a life of thirty-three years on this earth, and if we write down a list of our wrongs even for a single day, dozens come out. But in His life of thirty-three years He never once made a mistake. He is perfect. And He said, *"If I tell the truth, why do you not believe Me?"* He said, I have come from above; I have come to become the bread of life for you; I have come to remove your sins and to give you eternal life—I have said so, yet why do you not believe? What happens if one does not believe? As a result, He wrapped up the conclusion. He said, *"He who is of God hears God's words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God."* He concludes like this in verse 47.

To whom do you and I belong? Do we belong to God, or do we belong to the earth and belong to the devil? To put these words plainly, it is a question of whose side one takes. We are all lacking, but there are people who take God's side and people who take the devil's side. He who is of God believes all the words that that Jesus, who is God, spoke. He said, *"If I tell the*

truth, why do you not believe Me?" It means that they do not believe the words God spoke because they are not of God, because they do not take God's side. On the other hand, it means that a person who is of God, even though his deeds are lacking and weak, stands on God's side and believes the words God spoke. So believing or not believing is a matter of whether one takes God's side or not; your weakness is not the problem. My heart is like this, but I believe because the Bible said so.

If one were told to measure the worth of Jesus, Jesus is One so high that His worth cannot be fully measured by the worth of this world. So there is none but God. Then what about the others, such as Shakyamuni or Confucius? They were born of the earth. If we were to put a worth on them as those born of the earth, speaking of Confucius, he can be appraised to about the level of a person who taught us to value etiquette, better than an ordinary person, one who could pass for a teacher of morals. What worth can be given to Shakyamuni? He can be appraised as a seeker of the way. A person who went on struggling to know the truth until he died, until his life was spent—up to this level he can be esteemed highly. But he could not give us salvation, could not remove our sins, could not give eternal life, and could not give freedom. He said to human beings, attain Buddhahood yourself. Dear fellow believers, can you attain Buddhahood by yourselves? Can you be changed into holy beings? You cannot be changed. That is truly a terrible lie. Because Shakyamuni was born from beneath, because he belonged to the devil, he tells human beings to attain Buddhahood by themselves, to be changed into holy beings.

God made Adam and Eve, made everything, and said, do not eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil; in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die, but the serpent came and spoke. Eat it; if you eat it, you will be like God. The

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

devil incited man. So man listened to the words of the serpent, was deceived, and sinned. And we were born as descendants of that one who sinned. Nevertheless, there are two kinds of people on this earth. There are people who, if God has said so, unconditionally take God's side, and there are people who take not God's side but their own side, the side of man, the side of their own heart, the side of their own desires. To such people He says, "You are not of God; therefore you do not believe Me; you do not believe the truth." But he who is of God knows that Jesus is God, knows that He is the One who came from above, and knows that He is One who has high worth. And it is that by believing in Him, he is saved from sin and obtains freedom, obtains glory, and receives blessings before God. He obtains true freedom.

Dear fellow believers, to where do you and I belong? To whom do you want to belong? Do you want to belong to Jesus, or do you want to belong to the devil? If you want to belong to Jesus, you must believe the words Jesus spoke, what is in the word of the Bible. Jesus, though He is God, came to this earth as our Savior clothed in human flesh. If it says that He turned thirty and bore the sin of mankind, that is, the sin of the world, with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, and died hanging on the Cross and rose again, then we must believe so. We must believe that He did truly worthy work, that He made us, whose worthless lives could only go to hell, into beings of great worth. Then why do you not believe? If there is anyone who does not believe, the question is, what is so great about you that you do not believe? We must become believers. We must become those who are of God.

It says that God the Father gives glory to His Son Jesus Christ. It is the word that God the Father wants His Son Jesus Christ to receive glory from all the people of the world. He wants Him to

be lifted up high and to be respected. Is it not good when one's own son does well? Are we not the same? Parents are upset to lose to another person, but are not upset to lose to their own children. They are pleased, saying, "Oh my, my son does better than I; my son is taller than I; my daughter is better-looking than I." It is that God the Father, too, wanted His Son Jesus Christ to be respected by all the people in this universe, by all the creatures. He wanted Him to be loved. Why is that? It is because He is the true Son of God, because He is His own Son, because He is God who has true worth. So concerning praying in the name of Jesus and believing in Jesus, we must know the fact that the Father has given all glory to the Son. Our calling on Jesus, praying before Jesus, and believing the words Jesus spoke is precisely believing the truth. It is knowing the truth. I believe that you will believe so. I believe so, too.

The authority to remit sins is with Jesus

If we are those who are of God, do not go by your own thoughts; since the words in this Bible are all the words of Jesus, we believe this word. Thus we obtain true freedom. Dear fellow believers, freedom is truly tremendous. How could I tell all of it? Dear fellow believers, have you ever obtained true freedom? After a person commits the crime of murder and runs away and hides at home, his heart is constantly hounded. He is afraid and trembles at the thought that tonight the detective will come to catch him, a neighbor will report him, he will be caught and tried and go to prison and be put to death on the scaffold. For such a person, obtaining freedom is being exempted from his crime.

In this country, the power to grant amnesty for a person's crime lies only with the president. Rome was the same. In Rome

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

there was a law by which, when a festival came, the Roman governor exempted one criminal from his crime. When that system was being carried out, Jesus and Barabbas were set before the people, and did the people not release Barabbas? He was a very terrible criminal at that. In our country, too, there is the president's authority, called special amnesty, to release prisoners. But when we are about to go to hell, the president of this country cannot release us.

But our Lord Jesus Christ, whose worth is the highest, He who is equal to God the Father, exempts you and me from sin. He says, "You cannot but go to hell because of your sins, but for you I came to this earth as the Son of Man clothed in human flesh, bore your sins in My body with the baptism I received from John, was judged in your place, and bore the sin of the world and received the judgment." And it is that He says, I died and rose again; if you believe in Me, I remit your sins. So Jesus said to the paralytic, I remit your sins, and made it known that the authority to remit sins is with Jesus. It is Jesus who remits sins. Because the One who has worth is the King of kings, because He is the true God, because He is the One above whom there is nowhere higher to go, because He is the One who has such power and authority, He has remitted the sins of you and me. We must know and believe so.

Worthy people who believe in the worthy One

And when we believe in Jesus, whether our faith has worth or not is decided by whether He has worth or not. If Jesus has no worth, our faith is worth nothing either. But if Jesus is One who has worth, since we believe in Him and believe the words He spoke, we too are people of high worth. I am a person of high

worth. You, too, are people of high worth. So I do not mix with the people of the world. When I listen to what the people of the world say, they cling to a few coins and boast of having read a few books and gotten a doctorate, but do they know the truth by that? They do not even know that they do not know what they do not know. Because I am a person of worth, I want to do worthy work, and I am doing worthy work together with you. The people of the world do worthless work. At most, they earn a lot of money and buy and eat good things, but these are things that are over once eaten, so they have little worth. It means that I do not put worth on such things, but put worth on the work that has the worth of God. Because I believe in the One who has worth, and because that worthy One came to save you and me and saved us and we believe, we too have become high in worth together.

So it is the word that this Jesus in whom you and I believe is One who has very great worth. While believing in Jesus, we must not live as if doing it reluctantly. Dear fellow believers, are you really doing this work of God reluctantly? You are doing the work of a person of worth. We are those who do worthy work.

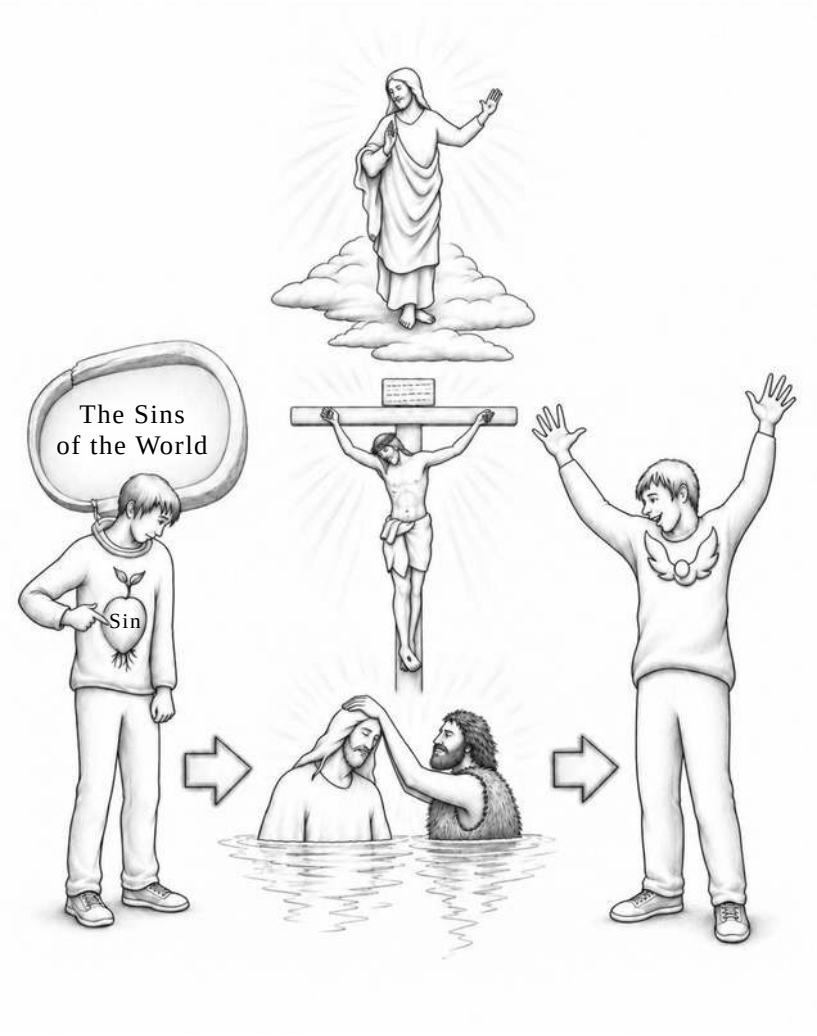
Today we were able to learn what the word *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free"* means. It is that the One who truly has worth came to save us, and the work He did is the truth, so it is not a lie; it is true; it is so clear and certain. Is it unclear that the Lord Jesus has saved you and me? Is it not certain? It is certain. Dear fellow believers, I truly give thanks. I have finished the word. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

CHAPTER

9

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.



You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 9 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit

In John 9:1–12, is it not that the reason we are sinners from birth is so that we may reveal the glory of God by receiving and enjoying the salvation of the remission of sins from Jesus?

Yes, it is. To speak precisely, it is not that sin itself becomes the glory of God; rather, what reveals His glory is that Jesus washes a person clean from sin—one who was born under sin through Adam's transgression and unable to save himself—and makes him a child of God.

The man who was blind from birth in John chapter 9 is a figure who shows this salvation. He could not see from the time he was born, and he could not open his eyes by his own strength. This shows the figure of a spiritual sinner who was born as a descendant of Adam and does not know God or the truth of salvation.

1. The disciples asked about the cause of sin, but Jesus spoke of the purpose of salvation

"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?' Jesus answered,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him.'" (John 9:1–3).

The disciples asked, "Who sinned, that this man was born blind?" But Jesus did not attribute the man's condition to anyone's fault, and said that He would reveal the works of God in him.

These words apply to all people. Because we were born as descendants of Adam, we are under sin from birth.

"Therefore, just as through one man sin entered the world, and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men, because all sinned—" (Romans 5:12).

It is not because a person committed some personal sin before he was born that he was born a sinner. Through the transgression of the one man Adam, sin entered mankind, and all people came to be born under sin and death.

But God did not leave us, who had become sinners, as we were. From before the foundation of the world He had the will to save us from sin in Jesus Christ and make us children of God. Therefore the center of John chapter 9 does not end with "Why did such misfortune occur?" but moves on to "What work of salvation does Jesus do for this man?"

2. The figure of one blind from birth shows the state of a spiritual sinner

The man who was blind from birth had no experience of seeing light. Even if someone explained it to him, he could not know by himself what light was, and he could not open his eyes by his own strength.

In the same way, because people are born with sin, they cannot see God spiritually. Even when they read the Bible, they

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

do not know the meaning of the remission of sins revealed in it, and though they say they believe in Jesus, they do not realize when, where, and by what method Jesus bore their sins.

A spiritually blind man is in the following state.

— He does not know that he is a fundamental sinner born as a descendant of Adam.

— He does not deeply realize the fact that the wages of sin is death and judgment.

— He tries to wash away his sins with his own good deeds, prayers of repentance, and religious efforts.

— He does not see the perfect work of the remission of sins that Jesus accomplished.

— While having sin in his heart, he thinks that he believes in God well.

Just as the man who was blind from birth could not open his eyes by his own strength, a sinner cannot wash away his own sins by his own deeds. The only One who can come to the sinner, open his eyes, and wash away his sins is Jesus.

3. Jesus is the light of the world who came to the spiritually blind

"I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world" (John 9:4–5).

It was not that the blind man first recognized Jesus and came to Him. Jesus saw him as He passed by. This shows the fact that it was not the sinner who first discovered God, but God who first saw the sinner and came to him.

Jesus is the light of the world who was sent by God the Father and came to this earth. He makes the sinner who is in darkness

see his own true self, and shows him clearly how he must have his sins washed away.

The work that Jesus does is not finished merely with pointing out sin. He actually washes the person who must be judged because of sin clean from sin, and opens his spiritual eyes so that he knows and believes in God.

4. Siloam makes us look to Jesus, whom God sent

"When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing" (John 9:6–7).

"Siloam" means *"Sent."* The One whom God the Father sent to save sinners is Jesus Christ. Therefore the word to go and wash in Siloam shows the fact that the sinner must go to Jesus, whom God sent, and receive the grace of the washing away of sins.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. On the Cross He shed His blood, paid the price of our sins and received the judgment, and died, and He rose again from the dead and became our eternal Savior.

In the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the 'water' signifies the work in which Jesus bore all the sin of mankind through the baptism He received from John. The blood of the Cross signifies that Jesus received in our place the judgment of the sin He had borne. The Spirit testifies that this salvation is the righteous will of God, and that Jesus is the Son of God and the Savior.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Just as the man who was blind from birth heard the word of Jesus, went and washed in Siloam, and came back seeing, a sinner, too, has all his sins washed away and his spiritual eyes opened when he hears the gospel of the water and the Spirit and believes it with his heart.

5. The glory of God is revealed where a sinner becomes righteous and becomes a child of God

The glory of God is not revealed where a sinner becomes righteous by himself. It is revealed where Jesus comes to a person who can see nothing and cannot save himself, and saves him perfectly.

Through the disobedience of the one man Adam many became sinners, but through the obedience of Jesus Christ those who believe become righteous.

"For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so also by one Man's obedience many will be made righteous" (Romans 5:19).

By believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, a sinner comes to enjoy the following blessings of salvation.

— He has all the sins that were in his heart washed away.

— He is freed from the fear of sin and judgment.

— He is born again from a sinner into a righteous person.

— He receives the Holy Spirit as a gift and comes to call God Father.

— He becomes a child of God and comes to have the hope of the Kingdom of God.

— His spiritual eyes are opened and he comes to know the Bible and the will of God.

— He becomes a person who testifies of Jesus, who saved him.

These are *"the works of God"* that were revealed in the blind man. Through the sign of opening the eyes of the flesh, God revealed that Jesus is the Savior who opens the spiritual eyes of sinners, washes away the sins of the heart, and makes them children of God.

6. The change in a saved person testifies to the glory of God

The neighbors who saw the man whose eyes had been opened argued over whether he was really the man who used to sit and beg. Some said that he was the man, and others said that he was someone who looked like him. But he said clearly, *"I am he"*.

When the people asked how his eyes had been opened, he answered like this.

"He answered and said, 'A Man called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes and said to me, "Go to the pool of Siloam and wash." So I went and washed, and I received sight.'" (John 9:11).

He did not boast of himself. Nor did he say that he had opened his eyes by making some effort of his own. He testified to what Jesus had done and that he had washed according to that word and received sight.

The confession of a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is also like this.

"I was a person born under sin, but Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John, paid the price of those sins on the Cross, and rose again from the dead and saved me. I believed this word and had all my sins washed away and became a child of God."

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

This confession is precisely the testimony that gives glory to God.

Conclusion

The fact itself that we were born as sinners is not the glory of God. God's saving us, who were born under sin, in Jesus Christ, and washing away all our sins and making us righteous people and children of God is the glory of God.

Just as the works of God were revealed in the man who was blind from birth, it is the works of God that we, who were sinners and spiritually blind from birth, have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and have come to see God.

Therefore John 9:1–12 says this.

A sinner cannot open his spiritual eyes or wash away his own sins by his own strength, but if he meets Jesus Christ, the light of the world whom God sent, and believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He accomplished, he has all his sins washed away and is born again as a child of God. That a sinner becomes righteous and testifies to this salvation is the glory that God wanted to reveal.

In John 9:1–12, it is said that the fundamental nature of man is that of one who can only be cursed because of sin; if we truly admit that we are sinners before God from birth and are those who can only go to hell because of that sin, would it not be fitting to accept the remission of sins by believing in the baptism received by Jesus Christ, the Savior of mankind

whom God the Father sent, and in the blood of the Cross?

Yes, it is. If one admits the fact that one is a sinner from birth before God and a being who can only go to judgment and hell because of that sin, it is fitting to believe with the heart and accept the remission of sins that Jesus Christ, the Savior sent by God the Father, accomplished with the baptism He received from John and the blood of the Cross.

John 9:1–12 shows precisely this process of faith through the man who was blind from birth.

1. Man is spiritually blind and a sinner from birth

"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?'" (John 9:1–2).

The man who was blind from birth had never once seen light. He could not open his eyes by his own strength, nor could he confirm for himself what light was.

This shows the spiritual state of all people born as descendants of Adam. It is not that a person becomes a sinner by learning sin; rather, he commits sin because he is born with a sinful nature. From his heart come evil thoughts, greed, pride, falsehood, and hatred, and he lives committing sin all his life.

God clearly spoke of the end of such human beings.

"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord" (Romans 6:23).

To admit that one is a sinner is not merely to confess, "I am a somewhat lacking person." It is to admit that one is a being who would have nothing to say even if one received the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

judgment of God and entered eternal destruction because of one's sins.

Only when one admits this fact does one come to know why Jesus absolutely had to come as the Savior.

2. Jesus came to sinners not to condemn them but to save them

The disciples asked whose sin was the cause of the man's blindness, but Jesus spoke of the work of God that would be accomplished in that man.

"Jesus answered, 'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him.'" (John 9:3).

The work that God wanted to reveal was not the work of condemning the blind man but the work of opening his eyes. Likewise, the work that God wants to reveal in sinners is not to leave them in destruction but to wash away all their sins through Jesus Christ and make them children of God.

The man who was blind from birth could not come to Jesus first. Jesus saw him first and came to him. We, too, were spiritually blind, but God the Father sent Jesus Christ to this earth to save us.

3. Jesus is the light of the world sent by God the Father

"I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world" (John 9:4–5).

Jesus is not One who carried out a method of salvation He made up by Himself. He is the Savior who was sent to fulfill the

will and the promise that God the Father established.

Jesus shines light on the sinner and makes him see two facts.

First, He makes him see how evil a sinner he is and how deserving of judgment he is.

Second, He makes him see how Jesus bore and removed all those sins.

Having one's spiritual eyes opened does not stop at seeing only one's own sins. It is to see clearly even the work of salvation of Jesus, who bore all one's sins and was judged.

4. Jesus bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John

When Jesus came to John to be baptized, He said this.

"But Jesus answered and said to him, 'Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.' Then he allowed Him" (Matthew 3:15).

The *"all righteousness"* that Jesus spoke of refers to the righteous work of God that saves sinners from sin. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

The sin transferred to Jesus at this time includes all the following sins.

— The fundamental sin inherited from Adam

— The sins committed from birth until now

— All the sins that will be committed while living from now on

— The sins committed in the heart and the sins committed in deed

— The sins committed knowingly and the sins committed unknowingly

— All the sins that all mankind commits until the end of the world

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. Therefore the baptism of Jesus cannot be separated from the Cross.

5. The blood of the Cross is the evidence that Jesus paid the price of our sins in our place

The wages of sin is death. Because sin had been transferred to Jesus, Jesus bore that sin and was hung on the Cross.

The blood of the Cross is not the event in which Jesus first bore our sins, but the event in which He received the punishment of the sin of the world that He had borne with the baptism He received from John.

The order of salvation is clear.

1. Jesus was sent by God the Father and came in the flesh.

2. Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John.

3. Jesus bore that sin and was hung on the Cross and shed His blood.

4. Jesus received our sins, curse, and judgment in our place and died.

5. Jesus rose again from the dead and became the eternal Savior of those who believe.

The Bible says:

"Who was delivered up because of our offenses, and was raised because of our justification" (Romans 4:25).

The baptism of Jesus accomplished the transfer of sin, the blood of the Cross accomplished the judgment of that sin, and the resurrection reveals that Jesus completely overcame sin and death. These three are one connected, perfect work of salvation.

6. To accept by faith is to acknowledge the salvation that has already been accomplished

The work of salvation of Jesus has already been completed. What the sinner now needs is not to add his own deeds and complete salvation, but to believe and accept what Jesus accomplished just as the word of God says.

To accept by faith is the following confession.

"I was born as a descendant of Adam and lived with sin, and I am a person who deserves to be judged because of my sins. But Jesus, whom God the Father sent, bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John. Jesus bore those sins and shed His blood on the Cross and received all my judgment, and He rose again from the dead and became my Savior. Therefore in Jesus all my sins have been washed away."

This is not forcibly persuading one's own heart. It is acknowledging as fact the word of salvation that God has recorded.

7. Washing in Siloam and coming back seeing shows faith in the remission of sins

"When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing" (John 9:6–7).

"Siloam" means *"Sent."* The One whom God the Father sent is Jesus Christ. Just as the blind man heard the word of Jesus and went and washed in Siloam, the sinner must believe with his heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus, whom

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

God sent, accomplished.

That man did not heal his own eyes by himself. He accepted what Jesus had done and followed the word, and he washed and came back seeing.

In this way, the remission of sins is not accomplished by a person's good deeds or religious efforts.

"For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus" (Romans 3:23–24).

God completed salvation in Jesus Christ, and we receive that salvation freely by faith.

8. Admitting that one is a sinner while not accepting salvation is not complete faith

Admitting only the fact that one is a sinner and continuing to remain a sinner is not the conclusion that God wants. The purpose for which He made us realize that we are sinners is so that we may come to Jesus and receive the remission of sins.

— The confession "I am a sinner" is an admission that one needs the Savior.

— The faith "Jesus bore my sins" is accepting the fact of salvation.

— The confession "All my sins have been washed away" is the conclusion of faith in the word of God.

If one admits that one is a sinner bound for hell yet does not believe the word that Jesus bore our sins with the baptism He received from John, one still remains in the state of a spiritually blind man who sees only his own sins and does not see the Savior.

In contrast, the person who admits his sins and believes in the baptism of Jesus, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection

receives the remission of sins and has his spiritual eyes opened. He is no longer a sinner under judgment, but becomes a child of God who has been justified by the grace of God.

Conclusion

If we admit the fact that we are sinners before God from birth and beings who can only go to hell because of that sin, it is right to accept by faith the salvation that Jesus Christ, whom God the Father sent, accomplished.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. On the Cross He shed His blood and received all the judgment of sin, and He rose again from the dead and became our perfect Savior.

Just as the man who was blind from birth washed according to the word of Jesus and came back seeing, we, too, have all our sins washed away, become righteous, and become children of God when we believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with our hearts. This is the grace that God has bestowed on sinners, and the fitting salvation that we must receive and enjoy by faith.

In John 9:13–34, if we have received the remission of sins by believing in the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit and have become those who are of God, Satan the devil seeks to oppose and hinder our faith. Today, those who believe in Jesus as the Savior but

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

have not been saved because they do not believe in the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit are people who always have sin in their hearts, and they are opposing those who have been born again. Is this right before God?

Looking through John 9:13–34, condemning and hindering, out of religious prejudice, the faith of a person who has received the remission of sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit is not a right thing before God. That is because it is rejecting the work of salvation that Jesus did, and trying to drag back into darkness a person whose spiritual eyes have been opened by the gospel.

1. The Pharisees who did not accept the evidence of salvation even though they saw it

The man who had been blind from birth went and washed in the pool of Siloam according to the word of Jesus, and his eyes were opened. This was a clear fact that no one could deny. Yet the Pharisees did not join in rejoicing that this man's eyes had been opened. They concluded that Jesus was a sinner on the grounds that Jesus had done that work on the Sabbath.

"So they again called the man who was blind, and said to him, 'Give God the glory! We know that this Man is a sinner.' He answered and said, 'Whether He is a sinner or not I do not know. One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see.'" (John 9:24–25).

The Pharisees did not ask in order to find out the truth. Having already defined Jesus as a sinner, they forced the man whose eyes had been opened, too, to acknowledge their

judgment. This was not the attitude of seeking the truth but the attitude of protecting their own doctrine and religious authority.

2. Satan hinders the gospel with fear and religious authority

The Jews had agreed to put out of the synagogue anyone who confessed Jesus as the Christ. Because of this, even the parents of the man whose eyes had been opened could not state the facts clearly. That was because if they were put out of the synagogue, they could suffer great disadvantages not only in the religious community but also in social life.

Here we can see the way Satan hinders the gospel.

— He keeps people from acknowledging the clear evidence of salvation.

— He makes people afraid so that they cannot confess Jesus.

— He makes people put religious authority and tradition ahead of the word of God.

— He makes the one who has received the remission of sins out to be a strange person or a person in the wrong.

— He rejects and drives out from the community the person who testifies of the gospel.

But the man whose eyes had been opened held on to the grace he had received more firmly than to the threats of the people. He did not know all the doctrines, but he testified boldly, *"One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see"*.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. The work of salvation of Jesus opens the spiritual eyes of sinners

The event in which Jesus opened the eyes of the man who had been blind from birth shows the power of Jesus to save sinners, who are spiritually blind. People are born with sin, and by the law and their own deeds alone they cannot remove their sins. Jesus came to this earth to save such sinners.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. On the Cross He shed His blood and received the judgment of sin, and by rising again from the dead He completed the salvation of those who believe.

Therefore the person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with his heart receives the remission of sins not by his own deeds but by the work of salvation that Jesus completed. That person is no longer a sinner before God but a righteous person, and, receiving the Holy Spirit, becomes a person who is of God.

4. The reason people oppose the gospel while sin remains in their hearts

Even today there are people who call Jesus the Savior but do not accept the meaning of the baptism He received from John and try to believe only in the blood of the Cross. Then when and how Jesus bore the sin of the world is left out, and sin still remains in their hearts.

In this state, when they see a person who testifies that he has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the

water and the Spirit, they may not understand and may oppose him. That is because they think, "How can a person say that he has no sin?" But the ground on which a person who has received the remission of sins says that he has no sin is not his own good deeds or perfect life. It is the word of God that Jesus removed all sins with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Therefore, if one hears the gospel and yet condemns a saved person in order to protect one's own doctrine and judgment, one is committing the same error as the Pharisees of John chapter 9. One falls into the contradiction of saying with one's mouth that one gives glory to God while opposing Jesus, whom God sent, and His work of salvation.

5. The error of those who said, *"We are Moses' disciples"*

The Pharisees said to the man whose eyes had been opened, *"You are His disciple, but we are Moses' disciples."* They prided themselves on knowing Moses and the law best. But they did not recognize Jesus, of whom the law of Moses was testifying.

On the other hand, the man whose eyes had been opened spoke to the Pharisees on the basis of what Jesus had done.

"If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing. They answered and said to him, 'You were completely born in sins, and are you teaching us?' And they cast him out" (John 9:33–34).

The Pharisees could not answer his words with the word. Instead they insulted him and cast him out. Because they could not overcome the truth, they tried to remove the witness by

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

authority and force.

The man whose eyes were opened	The Pharisees
He testified to the fact of the salvation that had happened to him	They rejected the clear fact even though they saw it
He acknowledged that Jesus had come from God	They concluded that Jesus was a sinner
He boldly confessed the grace he had received	They tried to silence him by putting him out of the synagogue and by threatening him
He went forward on the way of becoming a disciple of Jesus	They tried to protect their religious authority and their own righteousness

6. The right attitude of a person who is of God

A person who is of God is not one who opposes the gospel and those who believe in the gospel, but one who hears the word of God and submits himself to that word. The standard of judgment must be not the size of a denomination or the position of a person, but the following facts of the gospel.

— Is Jesus the Son of God and the true God?

— Did Jesus bear all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John?

— Did Jesus bear those sins and receive the judgment on the Cross?

— Did Jesus rise again from the dead and become the eternal Savior?

— Have I received the remission of sins by believing this gospel with my heart?

Hating and rejecting a person who has received the remission of sins by believing this word is not a right thing before God. What pleases God is to rejoice together over that person's salvation, to confirm by the word of the Bible whether the gospel is true, and to receive the remission of sins oneself by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The person who has received the remission of sins, too, must not retaliate in a fleshly way against the one who opposes him. Just as the man whose eyes had been opened boldly testified to what had happened to him, he must preach clearly and with longsuffering the fact of the salvation that Jesus accomplished. That is because the purpose is not to fight with people, but for that person, too, to believe in the gospel and be saved from sin and judgment.

In conclusion, it is not a right thing before God for a person who does not know the gospel to oppose the gospel of the water and the Spirit and the saints who have been born again. That is going against the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished. The right attitude before God is to lay down religious authority and one's own thoughts and to receive the remission of sins by believing with the heart in the salvation that Jesus accomplished with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 9:13–34, it seems only natural that those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are persecuted when they come out of false religion and give glory to God. In what state are you now?

John 9:13–34 contrasts the figure of the man whose eyes had been opened with that of the Pharisees, showing what persecution a person who has believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit comes to receive. At the same time, this word asks us today, too, "On which side are you standing now?"

1. The man whose eyes had been opened could not deny what Jesus had done

The man who had been blind from birth went and washed in the pool of Siloam according to the word of Jesus and came back seeing. He did not know much about Jesus, but he clearly knew the work of salvation that had happened to him.

"He answered and said, 'Whether He is a sinner or not I do not know. One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see.'" (John 9:25).

However much the Pharisees pressed him, saying that Jesus was a sinner, he could not deny the fact that his eyes had been opened. This is like the faith of a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

A person who has received the remission of sins can confess like this.

"I was originally a sinner who had sin in my heart. But Jesus bore all my sins once and for all with the baptism He received

from John. Having my sins transferred to Him, Jesus bore those sins and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin, and by rising again from the dead He saved me. I believed this gospel of the water and the Spirit and received the remission of all my sins."

This faith comes not from the recognition of people or from religious authority, but from the word of God.

2. The Pharisees kept their own religion even though they saw the work of salvation

The Pharisees saw the fact that the blind man's eyes had been opened. But they did not acknowledge Jesus as One who had come from God, on the grounds that Jesus had done that work on the Sabbath.

Their problem was not a lack of evidence. The problem was that they put the religious standard they had made themselves ahead of the work of God. If they accepted Jesus, they would have to admit that their judgment was wrong, and they would have to lay down the religious authority they had been enjoying.

So instead of acknowledging what Jesus had done, they forced the man whose eyes had been opened to follow their judgment. They said, *"Give God the glory!"* but in reality they condemned Jesus, whom God sent, as a sinner.

Truly giving glory to God is not saying with the mouth that one exalts God. Believing in Jesus Christ, whom God sent, and in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He accomplished is giving glory to God.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. Persecution arises when one is separated from false religion

The Jews had agreed to put out of the synagogue anyone who confessed Jesus as the Christ. Because of this, the parents of the man whose eyes had been opened feared the Jews and avoided giving a clear answer.

"His parents said these things because they feared the Jews, for the Jews had agreed already that if anyone confessed that He was Christ, he would be put out of the synagogue" (John 9:22).

But the man whose eyes had been opened did not deny what had happened to him even before the threat of being put out of the synagogue. He did not act as if he were blind again in order to be recognized by people. Nor did he deny Jesus, who had opened his eyes.

It is the same when a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is separated from his former false faith. True separation happens first in the heart and in faith.

— He leaves the faith that tried to wash away sin by his own deeds.

— He leaves the doctrine that sin is washed away only if one offers prayers of repentance every day.

— He leaves the faith that believed only in the Cross, leaving out the baptism Jesus received from John.

— He leaves the faith that put the authority of denominations and people ahead of the word of God.

— He is moved to the faith by which he has received the perfect remission of sins through believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

When one's faith changes in this way, conflicts may arise with the people with whom one used to lead a religious life. They

may not understand the confession that one has received the remission of sins and criticize it, pressure one to return to the former church, or attack it as a wrong faith.

Therefore it is not a strange thing to be persecuted when one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and stands on God's side. That is because Jesus was rejected, and the man whose eyes had been opened through Jesus was also cast out.

4. Persecution reveals on which side we are standing

The Pharisees said to the man whose eyes had been opened:

"Then they reviled him and said, 'You are His disciple, but we are Moses' disciples.'" (John 9:28).

Their words, as a result, clearly divided the two sides.

— On one side was the man who had received grace from Jesus and become a disciple of Jesus.

— On the other side were the people who, while saying that they believed in Moses, opposed Jesus, of whom Moses testified.

The man whose eyes had been opened stood on the side of Jesus even if he was abandoned by people. In contrast, the Pharisees, while saying that they believed in God, opposed the salvation that Jesus had carried out.

Even today the same division takes place before the gospel of the water and the Spirit. There are people who reject the gospel in order to keep the traditions and doctrines of men, and there are people who believe in the salvation that Jesus completed even though they receive the criticism and persecution of people.

Persecution does not end merely as an event that makes a person's life hard. It reveals which of the two I value more: the approval of people or the word of God.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

5. Are you hiding the gospel out of fear of people?

The parents of the man whose eyes had been opened knew the fact that their son had been born blind and now could see. But for fear of being put out of the synagogue, they did not say who had opened his eyes.

We, too, may conceal the gospel because of how people view us, even while knowing that the gospel of the water and the Spirit is true.

— Are you unable to speak of the gospel for fear of being criticized by your family?

— Are you hiding the fact that you have received the remission of sins for fear of being rejected by your former church?

— Are you speaking as if you were a person with sin in your heart in order to be recognized by people?

— Are you holding on to your former false teachings even while believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

If so, you are in a state in which your eyes have been opened but you are still afraid of people. God does not want us to hide the truth of salvation in order to gain the recognition of people. He wants us to believe in the grace of the remission of sins that God has given and to testify to it clearly.

6. Are you trying to go back to the past in order to avoid persecution?

If the man whose eyes had been opened was to keep being recognized within Judaism, he had to deny Jesus. He could not become blind again, but he would have had to conceal the fact that Jesus had opened his eyes, or to lie.

It is the same when a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit returns to his former false faith. If, while believing in his heart that he has received the remission of sins, he says before people that he is still a sinner, he is covering up the truth of the gospel in order to gain the recognition of people.

If God has removed all our sins through the work of salvation of Jesus, we must acknowledge that fact by faith. It is not that we say we have no sin because our lives are perfect. Because Jesus bore all sins with the baptism He received from John and received the judgment of those sins on the Cross, we who believe in that work of salvation confess that there is no sin in our hearts.

7. Are you testifying to the gospel even in the midst of persecution?

The man whose eyes had been opened did not change his testimony even under repeated questioning and insults. Rather, he stated even more clearly the fact that Jesus is One who came from God.

"The man answered and said to them, 'Why, this is a marvelous thing, that you do not know where He is from; yet He has opened my eyes!'" (John 9:30).

He was not cowed by the learning or position of the people. He testified of Jesus, who had bestowed salvation on him. Finally the Jews insulted him and cast him out.

"They answered and said to him, 'You were completely born in sins, and are you teaching us?' And they cast him out" (John 9:34).

Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit must also have this kind of faith. We must not change the gospel

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

out of fear of being persecuted, but must testify to the salvation that Jesus accomplished just as it is. We must not quarrel with people or retaliate in a fleshly way, but must preach the gospel clearly and boldly with the word.

8. A person who is of God keeps the faith within the Church of God

Being separated from a false faith is not a wandering without a destination. A person who has received the remission of sins must hear the word within the Church of God, where the gospel of the water and the Spirit is preached, be united with brothers and sisters in faith, and preach the gospel to other souls.

Living alone according to one's own thoughts after coming out of the religions of the world is not a complete life of faith. God has the saved saints hold one another up within the Church, serve the gospel, and give glory to God.

Therefore we must now examine our own state.

1. Are you still trying to solve the problem of sin with religious deeds while having sin in your heart?

2. Are you hiding your faith for fear of the persecution of people even though you know the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

3. Are you hesitating between your former false teachings and the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

4. Are you holding on to the salvation that Jesus accomplished even if you are driven out by people?

5. Are you united with the saints who have received the remission of sins and serving the gospel?

Conclusion

The man whose eyes had been opened in John chapter 9, after receiving grace from Jesus, did not deny the salvation he had received despite the threats of the people. He was reviled by the Jews and put out of the synagogue, but he stood clearly as a disciple of Jesus.

It can naturally happen that a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is separated from a false faith and is persecuted while testifying to the salvation of Jesus. What is more fearful than being abandoned by people is denying the truth in order to gain the recognition of people while knowing the salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Therefore we must examine ourselves before the question, "In what state are you now?" If you are still leading a religious life with sin in your heart, you must receive the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If you have believed in the gospel but are afraid of people, you must hold on to the word of God more firmly. If you are testifying to the gospel even in the midst of persecution, you must keep the faith standing on the side of Jesus, like the man whose eyes had been opened.

Jesus bore all our sins once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin, and by rising again from the dead He completed our salvation. We must believe this gospel of the water and the Spirit with our hearts and live by the faith that gives glory to God, not by the recognition of people.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

In John 9:35–41, do you not think it is right that those who believe in the work of salvation of Jesus Christ should come out of the religions of the world and grow spiritually and lead the life of faith by hearing the word of God within the Church of God?

Yes, it is. John 9:35–41 shows the fact that a person whose spiritual eyes have been opened by believing in the work of salvation of Jesus Christ must come out of the false religion that binds him as a sinner again, and must grow by hearing the word within the Church of God, where the saints who have received the remission of sins gather.

1. He was cast out of religion, but Jesus came to him

The man who had been blind from birth obeyed the word of Jesus, went and washed in the pool of Siloam, and had his eyes opened. But the Jewish religious leaders did not rejoice over the grace he had received. When he testified that Jesus is One who came from God, they cast him out of Judaism.

Jesus came to the man who had been abandoned by people.

"Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, 'Do you believe in the Son of God?'" (John 9:35).

It was not that the man whose eyes had been opened went looking for Jesus; Jesus came to him first. Judaism abandoned him, but Jesus did not abandon him. He was cast out of the religion of men, but he met Jesus and was accepted as one of the people of God.

This applies also to a person who has received the remission

of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Being rejected by false religion is not a matter of losing everything. Rather, it is the beginning of a new life of faith in which one belongs to Jesus and belongs to the Church of God.

2. Jesus clearly established his faith

The man whose eyes had been opened did not know everything about Jesus from the beginning. At first he called Jesus *"A Man called Jesus,"* next *"a prophet,"* and finally he testified that Jesus is One who came from God.

After he had been cast out by the Jews, Jesus asked him, *"Do you believe in the Son of God?"*

"He answered and said, 'Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?' And Jesus said to him, 'You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you.' Then he said, 'Lord, I believe!' And he worshiped Him" (John 9:36–38).

Jesus clearly made known to that man who He is. Jesus is not merely a man of power who healed the eyes of the body. He is the Son of God, whom God sent, and the Savior of mankind, who came to this earth in the flesh.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Having the sin of the world transferred to Him, Jesus bore that sin and went on to the Cross. He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin, and by rising again from the dead He completed our salvation.

The words *"Do you believe in the Son of God?"* are the question of whether one believes in this very Jesus. It is not whether one knows only the name of Jesus, but whether one believes with the heart the fact that Jesus, who is God, removed

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

all one's sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

3. Coming out of the religions of the world is changing the direction of one's faith

After being put out of the synagogue by Judaism, the man whose eyes had been opened did not go back to being the blind man of the past. Nor did he deny the fact that Jesus had opened his eyes in order to be recognized by people.

A person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, too, cannot return to his former false faith. True separation is not merely moving to another place, but changing the ground and direction of one's faith.

— He comes out of the faith that tried to wash away sin by his own deeds and efforts.

— He comes out of the teaching that sin is washed away only if one offers prayers of repentance every day.

— He comes out of the faith that believed only in the Cross of Jesus and did not accept the baptism He received from John.

— He comes out of the faith that exalted the doctrines of men and religious authority above the word of God.

— He stands in the faith that believes with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed.

If the gospel of the water and the Spirit is true salvation, one cannot keep holding on to teachings that are contrary to that gospel. A person who has seen the light cannot call darkness light again, and a person who has received the remission of sins cannot say that he is still a person with sin in his heart in order to be recognized by people.

4. The Church of God is the gathering of the saints who have received the remission of sins

The man whose eyes had been opened was abandoned by the Jewish religion, but by believing in Jesus he came to belong to a new community. The disciples of Jesus and those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit gather to form the Church of God.

The Church of God does not mean merely a building or the name of a denomination. It is the place where those gather who have received the remission of sins by believing the fact that Jesus, who is God, completed the salvation of mankind with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. In it the Holy Spirit dwells, the gospel of salvation is preached, and the word of God is taught rightly.

Therefore a person who has received the remission of sins must not lead the life of faith alone, apart from others, according to his own thoughts, but must come into the Church of God. There he must be united with the saints who believe in the same gospel as he does, hear the word, and learn the will of God.

5. The remission of sins is the beginning, and one must keep growing through the word

Just as a new life began for the man whose bodily eyes had been opened, a new spiritual life begins also for the person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Having received the remission of sins does not mean that one knows all the will of God. The thoughts of the flesh and weaknesses also remain. Therefore one must keep hearing the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

word within the Church of God.

When one hears the word of God, the following growth takes place.

1. One comes to know more clearly who Jesus is.

2. One's faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit becomes firm.

3. One comes to discern one's own fleshly thoughts from the will of God.

4. One learns how to overcome by faith when persecution and trials come.

5. One comes to take part in the work of preaching the gospel to other souls and serving.

6. One comes to accomplish the will of God in unity with brothers and sisters in faith.

Just as the man whose eyes had been opened met Jesus again and confessed, *"Lord, I believe!"* a saved person's faith in Jesus, too, must deepen the more he hears the word in the Church of God.

6. In the Church of God one receives spiritual protection and nurture

If a person who has come out of the religions of the world is alone, he may be shaken again by the wrong doctrines he learned before and by the thoughts of the flesh. While being persecuted by his family or religious leaders, he may also suffer confusion as to whether he is going the wrong way.

God does not leave such a saint alone. Through the Church, where the saints who have received the remission of sins gather, He has such saints hear the word, confirm their faith, and hold one another up.

Within the Church of God, a saint who is going through difficulty is not condemned but held up with the word of the gospel. The weak person is reminded of the fact that all sins were transferred to Jesus with the baptism He received from John, and is made to believe that the judgment of sin has ended with the blood of the Cross and that Jesus, who rose again from the dead, is the living Savior.

When one keeps hearing the word in this way, the heart of the saint comes to stand firm on the assurance of salvation.

7. Those who "say they see" do not know their own spiritual state

Jesus said to the Pharisees:

"And Jesus said, 'For judgment I have come into this world, that those who do not see may see, and that those who see may be made blind.'" (John 9:39).

The Pharisees thought that they knew God and the law well. But they did not recognize Jesus, whom God had sent. They were seeing with the flesh, but spiritually they were blind.

"Jesus said to them, 'If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, "We see." Therefore your sin remains.'" (John 9:41).

The words *"now you say, 'We see.'"* refer to the heart that prides itself on already knowing everything without even knowing its own spiritual state. If one insists that one's own doctrine and religious life are right while having sin in one's heart, one cannot accept the remission of sins that Jesus gives.

A person who admits the fact that he is spiritually blind and a person with sin in his heart can hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit and be saved. But a person who relies on his own

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

religious knowledge and deeds does not recognize the Savior even when He is right before his eyes.

8. The life of faith within the Church of God is a life of serving the gospel

The purpose of hearing the word within the Church of God does not lie in living peacefully by oneself alone. A person who has received the remission of sins from Jesus must serve the gospel so that other souls may also be saved.

The man whose eyes had been opened did not hide what had happened to him. Even under the threats of the Pharisees he testified that Jesus had opened his eyes. A person who has received the remission of sins, too, must testify to how Jesus saved him.

— We must preach that Jesus is the true God.

— We must preach that Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John.

— We must preach that Jesus shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin.

— We must preach that Jesus rose again from the dead and became the eternal Savior.

— We must preach the fact that the person who believes this gospel receives the remission of all sins and receives the Holy Spirit.

The Church of God is the place that preserves and preaches this gospel and nurtures the saved saints and raises them up as workers of the gospel.

Conclusion

John 9:35–41 is the word in which Jesus came to a man who had been cast out of the religions of the world and made him one of His own people. He not only had the eyes of his body opened, but also had his spiritual eyes opened by believing in Jesus as the Son of God and as his Savior.

Therefore a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the work of salvation of Jesus Christ must come out of the false religion that binds him as a sinner again. And he must hear the word within the Church of God, where the gospel of the water and the Spirit is preached, be united with the saints, and grow spiritually.

The remission of sins is not the end of the life of faith but the beginning of a new life. A saved person must receive the nurture of the word within the Church of God, cast off his own fleshly thoughts, and build up his faith firmly. He must also testify of Jesus, who saved him, and take part in the work of saving other souls.

It is not enough only to come out of the religions of the world; one must come into the Church of God. It does not end with merely being separated from wrong teachings; one must be united with the true gospel. Living together with the saints who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, hearing the word of God and serving the gospel, is the right life of faith before God. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Questions and Answers on John Chapter 9

[Question] 1. Explain the important significance that John chapter 9 has.

John chapter 9 is the chapter that testifies, through the sign of a man who was blind from birth having his eyes opened, that Jesus Christ is the light of the world who gives light to the spiritual eyes of sinners, and the Savior whom God sent. Therefore the core of this event does not lie merely in the fact that one person's bodily disability was healed.

The disciples tried to find the cause of this man's being born blind in his own sin or in his parents' sin. But Jesus said, *"That the works of God should be revealed in him."* All people are born sinners through the transgression of the one man Adam, and live as spiritual blind men who do not know the salvation of God. But God reveals His own works by giving such sinners the remission of sins and new life through the gospel of the water and the Spirit and making them His children.

Jesus anointed his eyes with clay and told him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam. Siloam means *"Sent."* Contained in this sign is the fact that Jesus Christ, who was sent from God the Father, saves sinners by bearing the sin of the world with His baptism, receiving its judgment on the Cross, and then rising again. That the blind man obeyed the word, washed, and came back seeing shows that a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of sins and has his spiritual eyes opened.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The testimony of the man whose eyes were opened becomes even clearer under repeated questioning. At first he spoke of the One who had healed him as *"A Man called Jesus,"* but later he acknowledged Him as a prophet and testified that He is One who came from God. Even under the threats of the Pharisees and their repeated questioning, he testified boldly, *"One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see."* When Jesus came again to him after he had finally been put out of the synagogue, he confessed, *"Lord, I believe!"* and worshiped Jesus. He not only had the eyes of his body opened, but also had his spiritual eyes opened to believe that Jesus Christ, who came clothed in human flesh, is the Son of God and is God, the Creator and the Savior.

The man whose eyes were opened was put out of the synagogue by the religious leaders, but he was not abandoned by Jesus. Rather, Jesus came again to him after he had been cast out and led him to faith. A person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit does not become one of the people of God through human systems or religious recognition. By believing in Jesus Christ as God, the Creator, and the Savior, he becomes a saint who belongs to the invisible Church of God. The true Church must preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to the spiritually blind so that they obtain the remission of sins and new life.

On the other hand, the Pharisees, while priding themselves on knowing the Bible and the law, condemned Jesus as a sinner on the grounds that He had healed on the Sabbath. Even though they saw the clear fact that the blind man's eyes had been opened, they put their own knowledge and religious tradition first and rejected Jesus. They did not believe that Jesus is God, the Creator, and the Savior, nor did they accept the remission of sins that He accomplished through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Since they saw with the eyes of the flesh but did not

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

recognize who Jesus Christ is, it was rather they who were spiritually blind.

Therefore this chapter shows clearly how salvation and judgment are divided. The person who admits that he is a sinner who cannot see and believes in Jesus Christ receives the light of the gospel and comes to see, but the sin of the person who prides himself on seeing and rejects the Savior remains as it is. The question of whether one believes in and worships Jesus Christ as God, the Creator, and the Savior, or rejects Him even after seeing the clear work of salvation, is the central significance of this chapter.

[Question] 2. In John 9:1–3, how did the disciples understand the situation of the man who was blind from birth, and what did Jesus say?

When the disciples saw the man who was blind from birth, they tried to find the cause of his being born that way in his own sin or in his parents' sin. They asked, *"Who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?"*

The disciples' question asked whether this man's situation was because of his own sin or because of his parents' sin. But Jesus did not answer by choosing one of those two possibilities. He said, *"Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him."* Jesus did not stop at determining whose sin was the cause, but spoke of the work that God would reveal in this man.

The situation of the man who was blind from birth shows the figure of all human beings, who are born sinners and have not had their spiritual eyes opened. All people are under sin from the time they are born as descendants of Adam, and by their own

strength and wisdom they cannot recognize God and His salvation. But God wanted to give sinners the gospel of the water and the Spirit, wash away their sins, open their spiritual eyes, and make them His children. This is the work of God that He wants to reveal in sinners.

Jesus then anointed his eyes with clay and told him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam. Siloam means *"Sent."* Jesus Christ, who was sent from God the Father, saved sinners by bearing the sin of the world with His baptism, receiving the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and then rising again. That the blind man went and washed in the pool of Siloam according to the word of Jesus and came back seeing shows the grace of salvation in which a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of sins and has his spiritual eyes opened.

On the other hand, the Pharisees, even though they saw the clear fact that the blind man had come to have his eyes opened, judged Jesus to be a sinner on the grounds that He had done this work on the Sabbath. They did not accept the testimony of the man who had been healed, and finally put him out of the synagogue. Although they saw the sign with the eyes of the flesh, they did not recognize that Jesus is the Savior who came from God, and so it was rather they who remained spiritually blind.

This man was blind from birth, but his life did not end with the situation of having been born blind. When Jesus Christ met him and opened his eyes, the salvation and glory of God were revealed. All human beings are spiritual blind men born under sin, but if they believe in the gospel of salvation, that Jesus Christ bore sin with His baptism and was judged on the Cross and rose again, they can receive the remission of sins and become children of God. Therefore this text teaches that making a person who was born a sinner and has not had his spiritual eyes opened believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

giving him the remission of sins and new life, is the work of salvation that God wants to reveal.

[Question] 3. In John 9:4, what lesson is contained in His saying, "*We must work the works of him that sent me –ASV*"?

"Him that sent me" refers to God the Father. Jesus Christ did not work for His own will or honor; He came into the world, sent by God the Father, in order to accomplish the work of saving sinners. The work of opening the eyes of the man who was blind from birth does not stop at healing a bodily disease, but reveals the work of God that gives light to the eyes of those who have become spiritually blind through sin and saves them.

Jesus also called this work His food. His saying, *"My food is to do the will of Him who sent Me, and to finish His work" (John 4:34)*, means that accomplishing the will of the Father and giving people life was the greatest joy and mission of Jesus. Jesus Christ accomplished this work of salvation by bearing the sin of the world with His baptism, receiving the judgment on the Cross, and rising again from the dead.

Yet Jesus did not say only, "I must work," but said, "*We must work*"; this means that the disciples and all believers, too, must take part in this work. Even after He rose again, He said, *"As the Father has sent Me, I also send you" (John 20:21)*. Therefore a saved person must not stop at enjoying the grace of salvation by himself alone, but must preach to the spiritually blind the gospel that Jesus Christ accomplished, so that they, too, obtain the remission of sins and new life.

The words *"while it is day"* also teach the fact that the opportunity to do this work does not continue forever. Day is the

time God has allowed for doing the work of preaching the gospel and saving souls, and night is the time when that opportunity is closed and one can no longer work. Therefore the work of God is not something to put off until circumstances become better, or to wait for someone else to do in one's place. It must be carried out now, while there are people who can hear the gospel and the way to preach it is open.

In the end, this word is a teaching to realize one's mission as a person sent by God, to make the most of the time given, and to take part in the work of the gospel that saves lives, rather than leaving it for others to do.

[Question] 4. In John 9:6–7, why did Christ anoint the eyes of the blind man with clay and have him go and wash in the pool of Siloam?

Jesus Christ is the Creator, who could have opened the eyes of the blind man by His word alone. Yet His spitting on the ground, making clay, and anointing his eyes with it was not because His power was lacking, but in order to show through this event the spiritual state of man and the truth of the washing away of sins.

God made man out of the dust of the ground. Therefore dust signifies man. His spitting on it revealed the figure of man, who must receive the curse and judgment because of sin. The man who was blind from birth shows that all people are spiritually blind men who came into the world with sin from the time they were born. His anointing the eyes with clay was first to show in what situation this man was placed. That is, man is a being who by himself can neither see God nor realize the truth, nor solve the problem of his own sin.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Then Jesus said, *"Go, wash in the pool of Siloam."* The Bible itself makes clear that Siloam *"is translated, Sent."* The One who was sent by God the Father is Jesus Christ. Therefore going and washing in the pool of Siloam does not simply mean that the water of some pool had a special healing power; it means that the sinner must go to the Savior whom God sent and have his sins washed away.

Jesus Christ bore the sin of the world by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, bore that sin and was hung on the Cross and received the judgment, and rose again from the dead and became the Savior of sinners. That the blind man washed his eyes in the pool of Siloam and came back seeing signifies that a sinner hears and believes the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ accomplished, receives the remission of sins, and has his spiritual eyes opened.

The obedience of the blind man also appears in this process. He did not refuse, saying that having clay put on his face was unpleasant or did not fit his own thinking. He accepted the word of Jesus just as it was and went and washed in the pool of Siloam. But that obedience did not become the merit that healed his eyes. The power of healing was with Jesus, and the blind man laid aside his own thoughts and believed and accepted that word. The words *"So he went and washed, and came back seeing"* show that salvation is not accomplished by human effort, but is accepting by faith the word of salvation that God has ordained.

Therefore the clay signifies the reality of man placed under sin and the curse, Siloam signifies Jesus Christ, sent by God, and washing signifies accepting by faith the remission of sins that Christ accomplished. This event is at once a miracle that opened the eyes of the body and a sign of salvation in which a spiritual blind man believes in the gospel, receives the remission of sins, and comes to see God.

[Question] 5. In John 9:16, what dispute arose among the Pharisees over the healing of the blind man?

The day on which Jesus Christ opened the eyes of the blind man was a Sabbath. Because of this, a dispute arose among the Pharisees over whether Jesus could be acknowledged as One who had come from God.

On one side they insisted, *"This Man is not from God, because He does not keep the Sabbath."* They judged that what Jesus had done—making clay, anointing the blind man's eyes with it, and having him go and wash in the pool of Siloam—was something that must not be done on the Sabbath. They set up the standard that a person who violated the Sabbath regulations could not be a person who had come from God, and defined Jesus as a sinner.

But on the other side they countered, *"How can a man who is a sinner do such signs?"* Opening the eyes of a man who had been blind from birth was a work of God that a man could not do at will. Then, they asked, could Jesus, who had performed such a clear sign, be concluded to be a sinner merely on the grounds that He had healed on the Sabbath? These people could not ignore the sign Jesus had performed and its result.

Therefore, although the dispute on the surface was about whether Jesus had kept or broken the Sabbath, the real core was the question of whether Jesus is One who came from God, or a sinner. So the Pharisees asked the man whose eyes were opened, too, *"What do you say about Him because He opened your eyes?"* He testified of Jesus, *"He is a prophet,"* and later testified even to the point of saying, *"If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing" (John 9:33)*.

The Pharisees should have examined who Jesus is through the sign that had taken place before their eyes. But the majority

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

of them had already concluded, according to their own regulations, that Jesus was a sinner, and by repeatedly questioning the blind man and his parents they tried to obtain a testimony that fit their own judgment. In the end, this dispute went beyond a difference of views about the Sabbath and was an event that exposed the spiritual blindness of the Pharisees, who did not recognize Jesus Christ even though they saw the work of God.

[Question] 6. In John 9:26–28, when the Jews repeated the same question, how did the man who had been blind ask them back?

The Jews asked the man who had been blind again, *"What did He do to you? How did He open your eyes?"* But he had already clearly testified that Jesus had anointed his eyes with clay and had him go and wash in the pool of Siloam, and so his eyes had been opened.

He perceived that the Jews were not asking because they did not know the facts. Having already defined Jesus as a sinner, they were trying, through repeated questions, to make him retract the testimony he had given earlier or to make him deny Jesus. So he asked back, *"I told you already, and you did not listen. Why do you want to hear it again? Do you also want to become His disciples?" (John 9:27).*

These words do not simply mean that the same question was bothersome. They are a sharp counter-question containing the meaning, "I have already told you, yet you do not believe; why do you ask again? Could it be that you want to hear about Him again and again and become His disciples?" While exposing the evil intent of the Jews' questioning, he asked them back whether

it was rather they who wanted to become disciples of Jesus.

When the Jews heard this counter-question, they became angry and reviled him, and answered, *"You are His disciple, but we are Moses' disciples."* With this their inner hearts were clearly revealed. They were not trying to recognize the sign that had taken place before their eyes, but had been rejecting Jesus from the beginning. They drew a line, saying that they were disciples of Moses and not disciples of Jesus.

In contrast, the man who had been blind, though he did not yet know everything about Jesus, did not deny what had happened to him. Standing on the clear fact, *"Though I was blind, now I see,"* he did not yield even to the threats of the religious leaders. His counter-question shows that the man whose bodily eyes had been opened had come to obtain spiritual discernment and boldness as well. The Jews prided themselves on seeing but rejected the work of God, while the man who had been blind testified of Jesus, who had bestowed grace on him, and gradually came to stand as His disciple.

[Question] 7. In John 9:29, what meaning is contained in the Jews' words that they acknowledged the authority of Moses but did not know where Jesus came from?

These words were the Jews' assertion that they acknowledged the authority of Moses but could not acknowledge Jesus as One who had come from God. They said that they knew for certain the fact that God had spoken to Moses and given the law, and put themselves forward as *"Moses' disciples."* On the other hand, as for Jesus, they denied His authority, saying that they did not know whether He was One

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

whom God had sent.

But this does not mean that they had encountered no evidence concerning Jesus. The fact that a man who had been blind from birth had had his eyes opened was right before them. Since they had repeatedly called and examined that man and his parents, they had also confirmed that the healing had actually taken place. Nevertheless, they first concluded that Jesus was a sinner on the grounds that He had done that work on the Sabbath, and did not accept the evidence that He is One who came from God. Therefore the words *"we do not know where He is from"* are not so much a confession that they simply lacked information as a declaration that they would not acknowledge Jesus as One whom God had sent.

The man who had been blind immediately pointed out the contradiction in these words. He countered, *"Why, this is a marvelous thing, that you do not know where He is from; yet He has opened my eyes!" (John 9:30)*. He went on to say that God does not hear sinners, and that since the world began it had been unheard of that anyone opened the eyes of one who was born blind. Therefore he concluded, *"If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing" (John 9:33)*. This means that the work Jesus did clearly testifies to His origin.

Moreover, the Jews' words also contradict their claim that they truly believed Moses. Jesus had earlier said, *"If you believed Moses, you would believe Me; for he wrote about Me" (John 5:46)*. The law and the sacrificial system that Moses recorded were pointing to the Savior who was to come and the remission of sins that He would accomplish. Therefore, if they had truly believed the writings of Moses, they would have had to accept Jesus Christ, too, of whom those writings testify.

In the end, these words show that the Jews, while putting forward the name of Moses and the authority of the law, were in

fact rejecting Jesus Christ, the Savior of whom Moses testified. They said that they knew Moses, but they did not realize the meaning toward which the writings of Moses pointed, and while saying that they did not know Jesus, they denied even the work of God that had appeared before their eyes. The man whose bodily eyes had been opened recognized that Jesus is One who came from God, but the Jews, who prided themselves on seeing, did not recognize Him spiritually.

[Question] 8. In John 9:32, what is shown by the fact that since the world began no one had opened the eyes of one who was born blind?

What is particularly emphasized here is not the healing of an ordinary eye disease, but the opening of the eyes of a man who had been blind from birth. He had lived without ever once seeing, and he testified, *"Since the world began it has been unheard of that anyone opened the eyes of one who was born blind."* This was an amazing sign, never heard of before.

This sign proves the fact that Jesus Christ is One who came from God. The man who had been blind also concluded, *"If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing."* He was not a person of complex learning or religious position, but through what had actually happened to him he knew clearly that Jesus could not be a sinner and is One who came from God.

Isaiah prophesied that when God comes to save His people, *"Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, And the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped."* Jesus, too, when the disciples of John the Baptist asked who the Messiah who was to come was, answered, *"The blind see."* Therefore the opening of the eyes of a man who was blind from birth is evidence that reveals that

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Jesus Christ is the promised Messiah, and that He is God and the Savior.

But the Pharisees did not acknowledge Jesus as the Son of God even though they saw the plain sign that had taken place before their eyes. On the grounds that He had done that work on the Sabbath, they rather made Jesus out to be a sinner. The man whose bodily eyes had been opened recognized who Jesus is, but the religious leaders, who prided themselves on seeing, remained spiritually blind.

This event also shows the fact that all people are originally spiritual blind men who cannot see God because of sin. Jesus Christ is not One who only opens the eyes of the body, but One who cleanses sinners with the gospel of the water and the Spirit and opens their spiritual eyes so that they see God and His salvation. Therefore, in view of this sign, one must not put forward human position or fixed ideas, but must acknowledge and believe that Jesus Christ is the Savior who came from God.

[Question] 9. In John 9:35–38, through what process did the man who had been blind come to receive Christ?

The faith of the man who had been blind was not completed in the single moment when the eyes of his body were opened; it gradually became clear as he experienced the grace Jesus bestowed and boldly testified to that work.

When his eyes were first opened, he spoke of the One who had healed him only as *"A Man called Jesus."* He had obeyed the word of Jesus, gone and washed in the pool of Siloam, and he had come to see, but he did not yet even know where Jesus was, nor did he fully know who He is. He first testified to what

had actually happened to him, just as it had happened.

When the Pharisees asked him what kind of person he thought Jesus was, he answered, *"He is a prophet."* After that, although the Jews questioned him repeatedly while making Jesus out to be a sinner, he did not change his testimony to suit their demands. He said, *"One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see,"* and finally testified, *"If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing."* At first he had known Jesus only as a man, but now he came to acknowledge Him as One who came from God.

Because of this testimony he was cast out of Judaism. Even his parents avoided responsibility for fear of being put out of the synagogue, but he did not deny the grace he had received. Along with the joy of having his eyes opened, he came to suffer even the hardship of being abandoned by the community. But when the people cast him out, Jesus did not leave him alone. Hearing that he had been cast out, Jesus went Himself to find and meet him. This meeting became the decisive turning point that led him to complete faith.

When Jesus asked, *"Do you believe in the Son of God?"* he answered, *"Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?"* He already had a heart to believe, but he wanted to know clearly whom he must believe in. Then Jesus revealed Himself, saying, *"You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you."* Only then did he come to know that the One who had opened his eyes was not merely a healer of diseases or a prophet, but the Son of God and the Savior, who came clothed in a human body.

The *"Son of Man"* in this text (the reading of the Korean Bible, following several early Greek manuscripts; the NKJV reads "the Son of God") does not mean merely an ordinary man. It contains the meaning that God, who made all things by His word, came clothed in a human body in order to save sinners.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

When He received baptism from John the Baptist, He took over our sins onto His own body, bore those sins and was hung on the Cross and received the judgment, and rose again from the dead and became our eternal Savior. The One in whom the man who had been blind believed and whom he worshiped was precisely this Jesus Christ, the Creator and the Savior.

So he confessed, *"Lord, I believe!"* and bowed down before Jesus. This bowing down was not simply an act of expressing thanks to someone who had healed him. It was accepting and worshiping Jesus as his Lord and as God. He not only had the eyes of his body opened, but also had his spiritual eyes opened to recognize who Jesus is.

Therefore the process by which he received Jesus Christ is clear. He obeyed the word of Jesus and had his eyes opened, he did not deny the grace he had received but testified to it, and even amid persecution and being put out of the synagogue he acknowledged Jesus as One who came from God. And hearing the words of Jesus, who came again to him, he believed that He is the Son of God and his Savior, and confessed and worshiped Him. The people cast him out, but Jesus found him and received him as one of the people of God.

[Question] 10. In John 9:39–41, what is the nature of the judgment of which Jesus Christ spoke, saying that He causes those who do not see to see and those who see to become blind?

The words of Jesus Christ, *"For judgment I have come into this world,"* do not mean that He would take away people's bodily eyesight or give them a disability. Here 'seeing' and 'being blind' refer to the spiritual state of recognizing Jesus and

the truth of salvation. This judgment is a judgment in which salvation and condemnation are divided according to how a person knows himself before Jesus and how he receives Him.

The primary purpose for which Jesus came into the world was to save sinners. But when Jesus, the light of salvation, appears, the hearts of people are revealed at the same time. The person who admits the fact that he is a sinner and a blind man who cannot see the truth comes to seek the Savior, but the person who prides himself on already seeing and knowing God well rejects Jesus. Therefore the same Jesus becomes, on the one side, the light of salvation, and, on the other side, the standard of judgment that exposes that unbelief.

The words *"that those who do not see may see"* mean that a person who admits his own ignorance and sin meets Jesus, receives the remission of sins, and has his spiritual eyes opened. The man who was blind from birth could not hide his situation, and he went and washed in the pool of Siloam according to the word of Jesus. He finally believed in Jesus as the Son of God and the Savior, and confessed, *"Lord, I believe!"* and worshiped Him. Not only were the eyes of his body opened, but the eyes of his heart, which recognize who it was that saved him, were also opened.

For a person to have his spiritual eyes opened, he must first admit before the word of God that he is a being who cannot help committing sin and who must be judged. For such sinners Jesus came clothed in a human body, and when He received baptism from John the Baptist, He took over all the sins of the world onto His own body. And bearing those sins, He shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment of sin and death in our place, and rose again from the dead and became the eternal Savior. When one believes this fact with the heart, one's sins are washed away and one receives the Holy Spirit, and comes to see clearly

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the salvation of God that one could not see before.

In contrast, the words *"that those who see may be made blind"* do not mean that Jesus forcibly makes a person who sees perfectly well ignorant. They refer to people who, like the Pharisees, pride themselves on knowing the law, serving God, and being spiritually bright, yet reject the work of salvation that Jesus did. Even though they saw the plain fact that a man who was blind from birth had had his eyes opened, they concluded that Jesus was a sinner. Because they believed that their own judgment was right, they felt no need to learn from Jesus or to accept His salvation.

So Jesus said, *"If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, 'We see.' Therefore your sin remains."* This does not mean that ignorance itself removes sin. It means that if they had admitted that they were spiritually blind, they could have come to Jesus and received the remission of sins, but because they claimed to see and rejected the Savior, their sin remains as it is. Even if a person has knowledge or religious position, if he does not believe in the salvation that Jesus accomplished with His baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection, that person is still a spiritual blind man under his own sin.

Therefore this judgment is not a judgment that divides people by appearance or social position, but a judgment that reveals each person's faith and heart before the word of Jesus Christ. The person who admits his own sin and inability and believes in the salvation that Jesus accomplished receives the remission of sins and comes to see, but the sin of the person who claims that he himself is righteous and knows, and who rejects Jesus, remains as it is. Jesus came to save sinners, but to the person who rejects that salvation to the end He becomes the Judge. This division between salvation and judgment is the distinctive nature of the judgment that appears in John chapter 9. ✉

Sermon 1 by Paul C. Jong

The light of the gospel that opens the eyes of the blind

< John 9:1-34 >

"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?' Jesus answered, 'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him. I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.' When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing. Therefore the neighbors and those who previously had seen that he was blind said, 'Is not this he who sat and begged?' Some said, 'This is he.' Others said, 'He is like him.' He said, 'I am he.' Therefore they said to him, 'How were your eyes opened?' He answered and said, 'A Man called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes and said to me, "Go to the pool of Siloam and wash." So I went and washed, and I received sight.' Then they said to him, 'Where is He?' He said, 'I do not know.' They brought him who formerly was blind to the Pharisees. Now it was a Sabbath when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes. Then the Pharisees also asked him again how he had received his sight. He said to them, 'He put

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

clay on my eyes, and I washed, and I see.' Therefore some of the Pharisees said, 'This Man is not from God, because He does not keep the Sabbath.' Others said, 'How can a man who is a sinner do such signs?' And there was a division among them. They said to the blind man again, 'What do you say about Him because He opened your eyes?' He said, 'He is a prophet.' But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind and received his sight, until they called the parents of him who had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, 'Is this your son, who you say was born blind? How then does he now see?' His parents answered them and said, 'We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind; but by what means he now sees we do not know, or who opened his eyes we do not know. He is of age; ask him. He will speak for himself.' His parents said these things because they feared the Jews, for the Jews had agreed already that if anyone confessed that He was Christ, he would be put out of the synagogue. Therefore his parents said, 'He is of age; ask him.' So they again called the man who was blind, and said to him, 'Give God the glory! We know that this Man is a sinner.' He answered and said, 'Whether He is a sinner or not I do not know. One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see.' Then they said to him again, 'What did He do to you? How did He open your eyes?' He answered them, 'I told you already, and you did not listen. Why do you want to hear it again? Do you also want to become His disciples?' Then they reviled him and said, 'You are His disciple, but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spoke to Moses; as for this fellow, we do not know where He is from.' The man answered and said to them, 'Why, this is a marvelous thing, that you do not know where He is from; yet He has opened my eyes! Now we know

that God does not hear sinners; but if anyone is a worshiper of God and does His will, He hears him. Since the world began it has been unheard of that anyone opened the eyes of one who was born blind. If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing.' They answered and said to him, 'You were completely born in sins, and are you teaching us?' And they cast him out."

"Lord, I believe!"—the faith of the blind man whose spiritual eyes were opened

The word we read today is the word of John chapter 9. *"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?' Jesus answered, 'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him.'" (John 9:1–3).* The Lord said that He wanted to reveal the works of God in this blind man. A blind man of the body refers to a person who cannot see, who has no sight, and a spiritual blind man refers to a person who does not recognize those who have received the remission of sins. The Lord spat on the ground, made clay, anointed the eyes of this blind man with it, and told him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam. So he went and washed and came back seeing. But because of this, a controversy arose. Looking from verse 8, it says, *"Therefore the neighbors and those who previously had seen that he was blind said, 'Is not this he who sat and begged?' Some said, 'This is he.' Others said, 'He is like him.' He said, 'I am he.' Therefore they said to him, 'How were your eyes opened?' He answered and said, 'A Man called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes and said to me, "Go to the pool of Siloam*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

and wash." So I went and washed, and I received sight.' Then they said to him, 'Where is He?' He said, 'I do not know.'" (John 9:8–12).

It means that a commotion arose because of this work of opening the eyes of the blind man. Jesus did not have a single peaceful day. Even when He healed the sick, even when He opened the eyes of the blind, it became a problem. Because this day was a Sabbath, His having opened the eyes on the Sabbath became a big problem and a bone of contention among the Pharisees, the religious people, and the people of Israel. When the people asked the man who had been blind whether he was really that man and how his eyes had been opened, he answered that Jesus had made clay, anointed his eyes with it, and told him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam, and when he obeyed just as he was told, he was healed. Then some of the Pharisees said that this man did not keep the Sabbath and so was not from God, and others said, how can a man who is a sinner do such signs, and there was a division. To the question of what kind of man he said Jesus was, the man who had been blind answered that He was a prophet, One like the prophets of the Old Testament. Whether it was the disciples plucking and eating heads of grain on the Sabbath, or His healing the sick on the Sabbath, it seems that to the Jews, violating the Sabbath was a sin greater than anything else.

So the Jews called his parents and asked them. *"His parents answered them and said, 'We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind; but by what means he now sees we do not know, or who opened his eyes we do not know. He is of age; ask him. He will speak for himself.' His parents said these things because they feared the Jews, for the Jews had agreed already that if anyone confessed that He was Christ, he would be put out of the synagogue" (John 9:20–22).* And a second time they

called the man and said, *"Give God the glory! We know that this Man is a sinner."* It was an indirect threat. It seems that they were trying to make him say that it was not Jesus who had opened his eyes. But that man answers like this. *"Whether He is a sinner or not I do not know. One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see" (John 9:25)*. *"Since the world began it has been unheard of that anyone opened the eyes of one who was born blind. If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing" (John 9:32–33)*.

When this man confessed his faith like this, the Jews cast him out. Jesus met this man who had been cast out by the Pharisees. *"Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, 'Do you believe in the Son of God?' He answered and said, 'Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?'" (John 9:35–36)*. He was asking whether he believed that God had come to this earth clothed in human flesh. *"And Jesus said to him, 'You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you.'" (John 9:37)*. And then, *"Then he said, 'Lord, I believe!' And he worshiped Him" (John 9:38)*. And Jesus spoke. *"And Jesus said, 'For judgment I have come into this world, that those who do not see may see, and that those who see may be made blind.' Then some of the Pharisees who were with Him heard these words, and said to Him, 'Are we blind also?' Jesus said to them, 'If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, "We see." Therefore your sin remains.'" (John 9:39–41)*. This word is speaking to us through this blind man.

The spiritually blind of this age, full of theories

Who are the spiritually blind? A person who does not recognize a person who has received the remission of sins is

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

blind. A person who does not recognize a man of God is blind. The Jews and the Pharisees repeatedly brought this man and asked, were you not blind? How did your eyes open? And he testified directly, I am that man; I was blind from birth, but Jesus healed me.

In this world there are many people who say that they believe in Jesus and perform miracles. But there is no one who has opened the eyes of a person who was blind from birth. Among false pastors there are many who deceive people, saying things like, my eyes were dim, but after receiving the laying on of hands they became bright; my ears were dull, but after receiving prayer they became clear; but there is no one who makes a person who was blind from birth see. Of course, these days there are cases where hospitals heal by surgery, but we must clearly know the difference. It is that the One who opened the eyes of a person who was really blind from birth is Jesus Christ. It is that there is no one other than Jesus Christ.

The blind do not recognize those who have received the remission of sins, and do not recognize the people of God. Still less do they recognize Jesus. Even among the Christian believers of today there are many who are blind. These people regard days like the Sabbath and rituals as extremely important, and regard their denominations and their own traditions as extremely important. Such are the characteristics of the blind. Looking at Christians throughout the world, each says that his own denomination is orthodox. This denomination in its own way and that denomination in its own way, they each say that they are orthodox. But they do not recognize the people of God. Even when they talk with them, they do not recognize that this person is different. And they slander a great deal and persecute.

Of course, this age is not an age in which one can do something to people by force. But around the sixteenth century

in Europe there was what was called witch hunts: if someone did not please them, they made that person out to be a witch, held an inquisition, burned that person at the stake, and took away all his property. In those days, once a person was driven that way, it was over. Even in the twenty-first century, such things still happen from time to time. They reject those who preach the truth for no reason. A certain person, too, who had heard the gospel from us and received grace, went to another church and then stopped coming. If one knows the gospel only as theory, that can easily happen. If one only knows and does not believe, that can happen. There are many Christian denominations throughout the world, but they are all alike in this. It is that they are blind people who see nothing but outward things, persecuting people for violating the Sabbath and questioning what denomination they belong to.

People ought to be honest, but Jesus said that because they say they know something and say they see, they are still blind. What do they know? What they see is at most Christian doctrine and outward rituals; can they see the state of a person's heart? Can they see faith? They have nothing by which to recognize whether that person is a man of God or a servant of God. They have their eyes open and have ears, too, but they do not know. Because they themselves do not know, they cannot help slandering people in the same way. Yet we can fully understand them. It is that they should believe if they want to believe, or not if they do not, but at least receive a book and at least read it. If they do not like it, they can give it to someone else. But even if one reads a book and throws that book away, the word one read in one's heart never disappears. If one is pricked in one's heart and yet does not turn back, one receives the judgment of God.

Many people now within Christianity do not recognize a born-again person. The famous pastors who appear on broadcasts each

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

speak well, but when one listens to what they say, it is all fleshly talk. They talk about doctrine, about human love, about becoming rich, about becoming happy, about the doctrine of their own denomination. What is a blind man? Not seeing is being blind. Not seeing what will become of one's own life or where one's own soul will go is because one's heart is dark.

The clay made with saliva and the pool of Siloam

Jesus opened the eyes of the blind man, but how did He do it? He spat on the ground, made clay, anointed the eyes with it, and told him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam. A clear truth is contained in this.

Spit is what one spits at a person who is to be cursed, at a person one regards as a filthy human being one should not associate with. Then what does it mean that Jesus spat on the dust, made clay with it, anointed the eyes, and opened them? It means that He made you and me realize and know in our hearts that we are sinners from birth, that we commit sin throughout our lives, and that because of that sin we can only go to hell, and so He made us meet the servants of God and the people of God and hear the gospel of the water and the Spirit and receive the remission of sins. Siloam means Sent.

You and I are those who have been sent into this earth. Jesus said that as long as He is in the world, He is the light of the world, and now you and I are the light of this world. If you and I were not in this world, it would be a dark age. You and I are the light of the world, and through you and me people hear the gospel and receive the remission of sins. But it is that people do not recognize you and me. They do not recognize well those who have received the remission of sins, and when they meet them

they regard them as strange and persecute them, and if they do not know, they reject them unconditionally.

The grace of God, who saved the man who was blind from birth

You and I have received the remission of sins before the Lord by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Within the gospel of the water and the Spirit everything is told about how great sinners we are and how we are bound for hell. And it also tells us everything about how the Lord came to this earth, received baptism from John and had the sins of you and me transferred to Him, bore those sins and was hung on the Cross and shed His blood and died, and rose again from the dead and saved us.

That He saved the man who was blind from birth is a word spoken about you and me. He said that it was so that the works of God should be revealed in him, and that is truly so. It is that you and I were born as sinners from birth, as people who cannot help committing sin, as people who can only go to hell, so that God might bestow love and salvation on you and me and make us children of God and take us into the Kingdom of God to live forever. That is because only then can God make us children of God.

People sometimes misunderstand, asking why God made the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and let man eat it and made man commit sin, and whether man is a toy of God. But we must know and believe that the reason you and I could only be born as descendants of Adam, as sinners, as those who can only go to hell, is that God wanted to bestow on you and me His utmost love of compassion and blessing, and to reveal what kind of God He is—how benevolent He is and how

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

much He is the God of love, how just and true and perfect a God He is. This was what God wanted to do for us.

Do we not agonize, after being born, over why I was born and why I must live? Because they do not know where we came from, why we were born, and where we are going, religious people are still, to this day, pondering it while beating the wooden gong. The Lord taught this to us. He opened our spiritual eyes. His making you and me be born as sinners from birth was in order to wash away our sins through Jesus Christ, the Son of God the Father, make us children of God, have us enter the Kingdom of God and be clothed in glory, and give us all His love, eternal life, power, and blessing—in order to make us such blessed people. And now we have met the Lord. Having met Him, we have become people who give thanks before God.

Let us preach the light to the spiritually blind

In this world there are still many who are blind. There are many people who do not know that they are blind. There are a great many people who say they know something but do not know. I, too, have gone directly to people and preached the gospel a great deal. I went to a certain hospital and was preaching the gospel to the patients when the director told me to leave. I did not back down, asking, you seem to be a person who believes in Jesus too, so can you take responsibility for the souls of these patients? Should these people not be saved, too? When I asked a certain man who was an elder of a large church whether he had sin, he said that he had received the remission of sins, and then in the course of our conversation his heart was turned upside down and he even got angry. Those people said to me that they would acknowledge my faith, so I should acknowledge

their faith too. I said to them with a serious look on the spot: you say you acknowledge my faith, but I cannot acknowledge your faith; are you not still a sinner?

I went through many such humiliations. How embarrassing is it to go into a hospital ward and preach the gospel? Even so, I would go in, meet a patient, ask where it hurt, comfort him, ask whether it would be all right if I prayed for him, then pray earnestly for him, talk about this and that, and in the end come to preach the whole gospel. A certain person received the gospel well and received the remission of sins on the spot and was beside himself with joy. A certain sister who wept every day because her heart was troubled received the remission of sins in two or three meetings, as I preached the gospel to her step by step, and stopped weeping. That sister said an amazing thing. When she read the books we had delivered, her head felt refreshed, but when she read other books, her head hurt as if it would split. But when that sister gave our book to the pastor of the church she attended, that pastor examined the book and said that she must not attend that church, and even took the book away from her.

When one meets people directly and preaches the gospel, there are many clashes with people like this. If it is like this even in our own country, how could we preach the gospel to foreigners? That is why we are doing this work together with you, in order to do the literature ministry. Since the problems of wrong perceptions, religious views, and faith that cannot be taught one by one in words can be delivered through documents, I cannot tell you how fortunate it is that we spread the gospel through documents. I earnestly hope that the eyes of those who are spiritually blind will be opened through the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I give thanks that our Lord has saved us. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 2 by Paul C. Jong

The mission of the Church is to have people obtain new life

< John 9:1-11 >

"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?' Jesus answered, 'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him. I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.' When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing. Therefore the neighbors and those who previously had seen that he was blind said, 'Is not this he who sat and begged?' Some said, 'This is he.' Others said, 'He is like him.' He said, 'I am he.' Therefore they said to him, 'How were your eyes opened?' He answered and said, 'A Man called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes and said to me, "Go to the pool of Siloam and wash." So I went and washed, and I received sight.'"

The age in which it is still day, but night is coming

When the blind man went and washed as the Lord had told

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam, his eyes were opened. I would like to share grace with this word. The mission of the Church is to have people obtain new life.

The Lord said, *"I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work" (John 9:4).* This age now is a time when the sun is setting, like evening. Jesus said that the night is coming, when no one can work. A little while ago there was news that a large united rally would be held in our country, where some ten thousand Christians from all over the world would gather to worship together and hold fellowship meetings. Then why do they do such things? In the end they will come to say that there is salvation in other religions, too. It is that Christianity acknowledges other religions and other religions acknowledge Christianity, and that they should not interfere with one another but be in harmony. There have been signs of this movement from long ago, and even now there is the world church unity movement called the ecumenical movement.

There, too, they do the same thing. All religions should become one and not fight but unite, should not touch one another, and there is salvation in every religion, they say. Catholicism becomes the head, and Christianity and the religions of the world all unite. In conclusion, it amounts to saying that whichever religion one believes in, its leader is the savior. If they say that there is salvation in this religion and salvation in that religion too, then although Jesus is the Savior of mankind, the logic is established that not only Jesus is the Savior but other people also become saviors. As for when such a movement began, as you know well, in A.D. 325 at the Council of Nicaea they made a creed and doctrines, and it did not end there; at the Council of Ephesus, too, they went on inserting doctrines.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The baptism He received from John, left out of the Apostles' Creed

It was especially in this current that the Apostles' Creed was made, and the Apostles' Creed should have been arranged to say that Jesus was born of the virgin Mary, had the sin of the world transferred to Him by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, was crucified and died, and rose again and saved mankind; but it is that they left out the baptism Jesus received from John. It is that they put in only His being born of Mary, suffering under Pilate, and being crucified, and left out the fact that Jesus had the sin of mankind transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John and washed away our sins. And around that time, even as Rome officially recognized Christianity through the Edict of Milan (A.D. 313), it did not forbid the worship of all the various gods that the citizens of Rome had been believing in, but tolerated it as it was. They officially recognized Christianity, but told people to go on believing in all the religions they were believing in and to acknowledge this one too, so the religious unification movement had already arisen from that time. Beginning from that time until now, through films and media they have kept saying that there is salvation in other religions too, and that therefore religions must unite. What they gain as the result of doing so is becoming the leader of the whole world.

A little while ago there was news that the Pope of Rome called together world leaders and artificial intelligence engineers and held discussions. It is that artificial intelligence, while processing other content as it is, is to be kept from doing anything that could cause conflict between religions. In our books, we say that since Jesus ended the problem of sin with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, it is salvation if one believes

and destruction if one does not believe. But when this was tested by having artificial intelligence translate it, they say it said that one must not use the word destruction, and must speak euphemistically. When one hears it, it sounds like nice words, but if a document speaks only euphemistically like that, it subtly encourages the idea that one may believe in Jesus, or believe in something else and still be saved. That must not be. So when one asks it to translate literally and directly, they say it does it, but tries to translate it strangely.

The word of the Bible says this. When one believes in Jesus, one is to know that one is a sinner and turn back, and believe what Jesus Christ did—that Jesus was born, had our sins transferred to Him by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, bore the sin of the world and went to the Cross and was crucified and died, and rose again on the third day and became our Savior. The Lord has done perfectly the work of removing our sins. Because the Lord had even the sins we commit after believing in Jesus transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, He has ended our sins. The death on the Cross was once and the baptism Jesus received was once, but because with that baptism He had the sin of all mankind transferred to Him, He has washed away even the sins of shortcoming that we commit after we believe in Jesus. And He died and rose again and became our Savior. But Christian doctrine does not speak that way.

It says that the fundamental sin one has from birth is remitted when one believes in Jesus, and the sins one commits after that are remitted from time to time by offering prayers of repentance every day, and as time goes on the number of times one sins gradually decreases and one is sanctified, and just before death one is completely sanctified and goes before the Lord. That is the logic of the Christian prayers of repentance. So people ask

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

back: if sin is washed away by offering prayers of repentance, what happens to the sins one has not yet had time to repent of if one suddenly dies in an accident? Would one not go to hell then? Man-made doctrine is a mass of contradictions like this.

In Romans chapter 3, the Apostle Paul says that Jesus, in obedience to the will of God the Father, received baptism from John and had all the sin of mankind transferred to Him, and once and for all shed His blood on the Cross and died and rose again and became our Savior, and so revealed the righteousness of God, and that we believe in that Jesus Christ as the Savior and become sinless people and are saved. Therefore there is no one who can boast before God that he is right. Because Jesus came to this earth to save me, received baptism from John and had my sins transferred to Him, died once and for all on the Cross, and rose again from the dead and saved me perfectly, my being saved was not helped in the least by my own rightness or my own good deeds, but came about entirely by faith. So he concluded with the word, *"Where is boasting then? It is excluded" (Romans 3:27).*

People who know nothing may think that the religious leaders surely knew what they were doing when they made it, but it is not so. The creed made in that age has been engraved in people until now, and they confess it as the Apostles' Creed at every worship service. "I believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth; and in Jesus Christ His only Son our Lord, who was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the virgin Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead, and buried; the third day He rose again from the dead; He ascended into heaven, and sits at the right hand of God the Father Almighty; from thence He shall come to judge the living and the dead. I believe in the Holy Spirit, the holy catholic Church, the communion of saints, the remission of sins, the resurrection of the body, and the life everlasting. Amen."

A letter from which the words “I love you” are missing

Something important is missing here. A man and a woman love each other, and the man, writing a letter to the woman, heaps up praise—your eyes are like a lake, the ridge of your nose is like a high mountain range—and ends the letter. When the woman who received the letter finished reading it, something was missing. At the end he should have said that he loves her, but he only heaped up praise and never actually said that he loves her. There is even a song with such lyrics.

If Jesus loved us and removed our sins, then the fact that He received baptism from John the Baptist and had our sins transferred to Him must be conveyed to our hearts. “I loved you so much that I had your sins transferred to Me with the baptism I received from John; because I love you, I received in your place the judgment for your sins by being crucified; and to deliver you from death I died in your place and rose again and became your Savior; if you believe in Me, you receive the remission of sins, and by the merit of what I did for you, you will rise from the dead”—it is that this is missing. Because they believe with this left out, worship becomes a formality every day.

Do people not say that man is weak and makes slips of the tongue? Besides what a person expresses in words, everything is piled up in the subconscious. What one felt hurt about and what one felt good about are all gathered there. So even when one says something logically and says nothing greatly harmful to the other person, what is in one’s own subconscious is conveyed to the other person. I said it this way, but the other person takes it as hurtful. A person cannot conceal what is in his own heart. So people sometimes hurt one another. For example, suppose you did the work you were in charge of in each department with all

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

your strength, and someone came and gave off the nuance that what you are doing is nothing and the other department's work is a hundred times harder. Would that not hurt your heart? But for the person in charge of some work, since he himself has to do that work, his own work is the hardest. Therefore we have no need to pass on what others say, nor any need to have such a heart. Everyone's labor is all precious. We should say that they have really worked hard and end it there. We must neither disregard them nor flatter them with empty words that are not in our hearts. It is that everyone feels it. All the people who do every kind of work are all precious people, and it is not that anyone can disregard anyone else.

We are preaching this gospel of the water and the Spirit, but it is that Christianity now is leaving something out as it preaches. God sent us a letter this thick, saying that He loves us. The Bible is God's letter. It is a letter sent to each one of you and me, but it is that they have left out what Jesus did when He came to this earth. Christian doctrine says that Jesus was born of the virgin Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified and shed His blood and died, and rose again on the third day and became our Savior. When one hears it, it does not even seem wrong, and since He shed His blood on the Cross it seems tremendous, but it is that something is missing. It is that they left out the cause of His dying on the Cross and put in only the conclusion that He died. Why did He die on the Cross for me, that is the question. Only when it is said that because You loved me, You had my sins transferred to You with the baptism You received from John and bore them and were crucified and died, is that love conveyed to our hearts and does it move us.

The baptism that becomes the food by which we confirm the love of the Lord

Once that is left out, it seems as if the love has cooled, so to confirm the love again one has to confirm again His shedding of blood on the Cross. Because on the Cross He received terrible suffering and died for us, just thinking of it makes us grateful, but because it is such a horrible thing, one cannot keep calling it to mind. It would be good if there were some evidence other than this that You loved me, and it is that that evidence is precisely the baptism Jesus received from John.

When we think of the baptism Jesus received from John, are we not always grateful, both when we have done wrong and when we are weak as we live? Are we not grateful that through that baptism He had the sins of you and me transferred to Him? Although it was a love done only once, and although the Cross, too, was a sacrifice in which He was crucified and died only once, the baptism becomes food in our lives. It becomes the food of love. When the love with which the Lord loved me is doubted and my assurance weakens, if I think of that baptism again—yes, at that time the Lord had all the sin of the world transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John; He had all the sins I commit until I die transferred to Him; the sins of my parents, the sins of my ancestors, even the sins of my descendants, the sins of all those people until the day mankind ends, He had them all transferred to Him—and so when my love toward the Lord cools, and when I want to confirm the Lord's love again, if I think of the baptism the Lord received, it is that my heart comes alive again.

"Yes, the Lord really loved me; He really had my sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John; that is why I am living like this today." Though I am a person who,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

being a little lacking, unintentionally hurts others, because He has removed all those sins too, I can say that I am sorry, I can be reconciled, and I can become a person who resolves never again to say words that hurt. So it is that we achieve harmony in love and become one family, and that we can also confirm the assurance that we have been saved from all sins by the faith that believes in the baptism Jesus received from John and the blood of the Cross. When people marry, they wear a wedding ring. But when people's relationship goes wrong as they live, they pull off the ring and throw it away. It is that that love was not true. But the promise and assurance that Jesus loved us lie in the baptism Jesus received and in the blood of the Cross.

But it is that Christianity does not preach this. People are exerting themselves, saying, let us believe in Jesus, let us preach the gospel to every people. While saying that, it is that they themselves are not moved by the love of the Lord. The one who preaches the word aims only at preaching, and has no heart that is moved and touched at that part—that Jesus received baptism from John for me and had my sins transferred to Him, made me sinless, was judged on the Cross in my place, and died and rose again and became my Savior. Without such a heart, they say to others, let us preach Jesus. This is precisely how it has become the age of spiritual night. Does not that preaching without love have another purpose?

Is it not because we love that we do this and that for others, and tell them when they have done wrong, and forgive? If one does so without love, it is false. It is because one has another purpose that one does so. If one really loves, because of that love one can bear even this, wait, and cover over. So the Apostle Paul said that the fruit of the Spirit is such things as love, gentleness, and self-control, and said, *"And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love" (1 Corinthians*

13:13). Because God loved us, we are preaching Jesus and doing the work of serving for Jesus. Without love, one may be able to do it in a religious way, but it does not last long. If one does not love, one's heart changes according to circumstances. Love suffers long and is kind and is not provoked.

That people who do not have the love of the Lord in their hearts are preaching Jesus—that is how the night of Christianity has come. It is that the light of love does not shine on this earth. We must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. It means that we must preach this gospel now, while we can preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Together with you I have published sixty-eight books. I did not write them because I wanted to write. Because the Bible tells everything Jesus did, what I preached about it later came out as books. But there is no one who has spoken as we have. No denomination preaches this way. Even if they occasionally mention the baptism, they never speak of it this way, but speak only of the blood of the Cross. So there is a desire to testify to this gospel of the water and the Spirit quickly.

Jesus, who became the bread of life

Jesus said, *"And Jesus said to them, 'I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.'" (John 6:35)*. A person who has received the love of the Lord, a person who believes and confirms the love of the Lord, does not thirst for love. That He is the bread of life speaks of the body of Jesus. It speaks of the fact that Jesus had our sins transferred to His own body with the baptism He received from John. As long as it is a fact that Jesus came to this earth and had our sins transferred to Him and washed them away

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

with the baptism He received from John, and as long as it is recorded in the Bible, we never thirst. It is that we do not thirst for love.

Do you feel thirsty because the love of God is lacking? Are you feeling that God does not seem to love you very much? That is the evidence that you are neither holding on to nor believing that Jesus, who became the bread of life, put on flesh and came to this earth and had our sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John—that our sins passed on to Jesus.

He said that unless one eats the flesh and blood of Jesus, one does not obtain eternal life. What is the flesh of Jesus? It is the baptism Jesus received from John. The question is whether our sins could have passed on to the body of Jesus if there had been no baptism received from John in the body of Jesus. The question is whether He could have been crucified and died if He had not had our sins transferred to Him and taken them away with that baptism. The baptism He received from John is the medium by which He had our sins transferred to Him and took them away and shed His blood on the Cross. If Jesus had not been born on this earth clothed in human flesh, could He have had our sins transferred to Him and taken them away with baptism? What the Lord did with His body is precisely the work of having our sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John.

"I am the bread of life" (John 6:35). Bread is something one eats. When bread is eaten, it is digested and becomes flesh and blood. Since Jesus received baptism from John and had our sins transferred to Him, our sins have been washed away; by receiving the judgment on the Cross in our place, our judgment has disappeared; and since He died and rose again, He is the One who raises us again from death. It is that without this faith one is blind.

So in John chapter 9 it says, *"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?' Jesus answered, 'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him.'" (John 9:1–3)* and goes on to say, *"When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing" (John 9:6–7)*. Siloam means Sent. Jesus is One who was sent from God the Father. It is that He was sent to this earth and was born, borrowing the body of Mary, received baptism from John the Baptist at the age of thirty and had our sins transferred to Him, and was crucified and died and rose again and became our Savior.

It is that Jesus became the bread of life for us. Jesus gave His own body for us; He received baptism from John, died on the Cross for us, and rose again from the dead and became our Savior. The person who has eaten the bread of life does not lose life for all eternity. The person who has eaten the bread of life enjoys eternal life and does not die. How grateful we are!

Go and wash in the pool of Siloam at any time

It is by believing with the heart and confessing with the mouth what Jesus Christ did that one obtains salvation. Salvation is not a cheap thing. Jesus is God and the One who created heaven and earth. Yet in order to save human beings, He was born, borrowing the body of Mary, so as to come to this earth clothed in flesh like that of human beings. And He received

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

baptism. Why did He receive baptism from John? He received baptism in order to wash the sins of our hearts clean, in order to have our sins transferred to Him and be judged on the Cross and rise again. God's becoming a human being is no small thing. Yet people preach with this left out. They have preached with this left out for about 1,700 years, from A.D. 325 until now. So can people receive the remission of sins? Even after believing in Jesus for thirty years, they commit sin every day, so although they are grateful to Jesus, who died on the Cross for their sins, their hearts are always empty. Even now they go to pray on the mountain, fasting and weeping and wailing, and come thirty minutes before the worship service and pray for this sin to be washed away.

They come to worship and, instead of praising Jesus, they are still asking for their sins to be washed away. Jesus already washed away our sins with the baptism He received from John two thousand years ago, and yet even now, when nearly 2,000 years have passed, people who believe in Jesus offer prayers of repentance, weeping and wailing, asking for their sins to be washed away—how must the heart of Jesus be? Would His heart not break? He would say, I received baptism from John the Baptist and washed away your sins, so why do you not believe? What does the word baptism mean? Does it not mean to wash? He would say, "Did I not receive baptism and wash away your sins as one washes with water?" But people do not know that and know only that Jesus died on the Cross. Why did I have to die on the Cross? With the baptism I received from John I had your sins transferred to Me and washed them away, bore your sins, received in your place the punishment and death you had to receive, and did all that work and rose again in order to make you live again—it is that He asks why they do not realize that.

"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free"

(John 8:32). The truth is what is true. What is true? It is that Jesus saved us with the water and the Spirit. Jesus was born, borrowing the body of Mary, in order to become a human being, and at the age of thirty received baptism from John and had our sins transferred to Him, and bore our sins and went to the Cross and was crucified and shed His blood and rose again from the dead. The love that God accomplished by washing away our sins, receiving all the judgment, and making us clean—that is the gospel of the water and the Spirit that made us born again of water and the Spirit. It is the love of God. Is there anything even slightly lacking or anything that does not fit logic? I live every day steeped in the love of God.

Now it has become the age of spiritual night. Now the night is deep, and dawn comes. It is darkest at dawn, before the day breaks. It is that now is such an age. From what do we see that? From seeing the world religious unification movement arise, from seeing artificial intelligence develop, and from seeing people's hearts all being ruined, it is that such an age is coming now. So we must come to our senses and go and wash in the pool of Siloam. The Lord was born on this earth, borrowing the body of Mary, and at the age of thirty went to John the Baptist and said, *"For thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15)*, and received baptism from John. The Lord had our sins transferred to Him and washed them away by receiving baptism from John, and bore the sin of the world away and was crucified and died and rose again and saved us, so why do they not believe this—that is the question. They say that even if one does not believe that, one receives the remission of sins if one only believes in the blood of the Cross, but the blood of the Cross is the conclusion, and if there is no cause, in which He had sin transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, that result becomes a lie. If one speaks of a result without a cause,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

one is telling a lie.

Because He had sin transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, He was hung on the Cross and died, and because there was a purpose, He saved us and delivered us from death. God so loved us that, in order to save us, He received baptism from John, was hung on the Cross, died and rose again, and became our Savior. The Lord will come again. Because He is One who lives forever, He was able to become our Savior.

But why do pastors not believe this and have dark faces? Is there any guarantee that a person lives a holy life just because he is a pastor? When they themselves have sin in their hearts, how can they tell others to receive the remission of sins? So some even quit the ministry. Then what is the reason for doing ministry? It ends up being done to eat and make a living. The church members must serve the Lord and the pastors must serve the Lord, too, so how can it be right for a pastor to become a person who extracts things from the church members? When the members increase, they have a large chapel built in order to make them increase more, and there are even those who receive large sums of money for a single sermon. Then the sins of the church members ought to disappear, but far from their sins disappearing, they become even more sinners. Even while believing in Jesus, they become certified sinners.

If Jesus were to come again now, and someone said, Lord, although I believed in You, I did not receive the remission of sins; I am a sinner; please receive me—would the Lord be pleased? The Lord would be angry. He would say, you who practice lawlessness, you who do not believe what I did, depart from Me. It is not only religious leaders who become like that; you and I, too, can become like that if we go wrong. We must come to our senses and give thanks for the love of the Lord, and must reflect on it every day and live by faith.

Can human love bring us satisfaction? A person cannot give satisfaction, because he himself is also lacking. But the love of God satisfies our hearts. Are you and I people who, while believing in Jesus, are not satisfied with the love of God and demand yet another love? If so, that is lacking and a wrong belief, so we must believe rightly again. I hope that we will be people who go and wash in the pool of Siloam at any time. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 3 by Paul C. Jong

We must work the works of Him who sent Me, while it is day

< John 9:1-7 >

"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?' Jesus answered, 'Neither this man nor his parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him. I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.' When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing."

The blind man who went and washed in the pool of Siloam

The word says that the blind man who went and washed in the pool of Siloam had his eyes opened. For people to wash away their sins, they can have their sins washed away only by meeting the servants of God whom God has sent.

The Lord said, *"I must work the works of Him who sent Me*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work." (John 9:4), and I think that now is the time when this word applies. We can still preach the gospel and still work, but He said that before long the night is coming, and that when the night comes, no one can work. When the night comes and the Antichrist appears, no one can work. The world is now going in that direction.

When we look at the Bible, Jesus, too, continually speaks the gospel. He is speaking of it again and again through the woman caught in adultery, the healing of the paralytic, the opening of the eyes of the blind man, and so on. Unless it is repeated, people cannot remember. But in the world there are also religions that have changed the Bible. In Islam, they say that their prophet went to the kingdom of heaven and came back in a dream, call him the highest of the prophets, and have changed even the contents of the Bible entirely in their own way. If you watch carefully the videos they have made, you come to know that they are writing a new Bible and making it resemble the Bible.

The works that God wants to reveal

In today's passage, concerning the man who was blind from birth, the disciples asked Jesus whose sin it was because of which this man was born blind—whether it was his own sin or the sin of his parents. So Jesus said that neither this man nor his parents had sinned, but that it was so that the works of God should be revealed in him. It was not because the man had done wrong in his deeds; it was because God had a plan from the time He created the heavens and the earth, made man, and made the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and He did so in order to save souls through this man and give the blessing

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

of God; He did not say that it was because of this man's sin or because of his parents' sin.

We, too, must know and believe that God had a plan for you and me. Because God had a plan for you and me, He met us and led us, had us do the work of being the calyx of the gospel, and had us live here; and it is that He did all this in order to have this gospel preached to the whole world through us. The Lord said that while it is still day one can work, that as long as He is on this earth He is the light of the world, and that when the night comes, no one can work. Therefore sinners are to go and wash in the pool of Siloam. He said to go to the people whom God has sent, hear the word, and have one's sins washed away.

What is it that God wants to reveal to you and me? When we had become sinners and were dying, the Son of God came to this earth, received baptism from John and had our sins transferred to Him, died on the Cross and rose again, and saved us; and it is that He had us hear and believe this gospel and become the people of God, and has led us until now so that we would do the work of preaching this gospel of God to the whole world.

The path of leaving everything behind and following

When I myself look back on the years gone by, I think about what I did in the seventies and what I did in the eighties. I met the Lord and came to do the work, and I come to know that God led me and enabled me to preach this gospel. After the Lord met me, I came to realize that the work God had entrusted to me was the spreading of this gospel. A sense of duty arose in me without my knowing it, and I thought like this: "If I do not open my mouth, this gospel cannot be preached to the world; though I am

a lacking person, I must testify of this gospel; I cannot put this work off onto others; let me testify to the whole world as much as I know and believe." The Lord gave me such a heart, and that is how I have come to work together with you until now.

People think it extremely hard to give up what is their own, but when one meets the Lord, one loses everything. The people I knew, the life guaranteed to me, possessions, honor, power—one must lose all these things and start anew. Just as God told Abraham to leave his homeland, Ur of the Chaldeans, and go to the land that He would show him, I myself was led in that way. I lost everything. Having met the Lord, is there anything left to cling to? If I were bound to those who are not born again and did as they told me, no one would be saved and I myself would not be saved either, so should I have stayed there? So I came to think about what the will of the Lord was, and after I came to know the will of the Lord through the word, I knew that if I wanted to follow the Lord I had to give up everything, and I gave up everything. And alone, I put a few pieces of underwear and some socks into a bath bag, took my book bag, and came out into the world in the clothes I was wearing.

And I lived preaching the gospel while going from one day-labor job to another. Because I know what the word of God means and also know the gospel of the water and the Spirit that met me, the desire to preach it wells up intensely from within. But although I could do personal evangelism, since there was no chapel, I could have people be saved but could not nurture them, and that was hard. So I went to various gatherings and met this person and that person, but there was no such gathering or denomination that preached the gospel. Because I had met this gospel through the word, I could speak of it wherever I opened the Bible, and it became clearer as time went by that God was telling me to preach this. So I made up my mind firmly, and as

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the head of a household, while providing for my wife and children and carrying on my main occupation, I prayed before God to give me material means, and when it had reached a certain point, I threw myself in earnest into the work of preaching the word. And I started the mission school and have come to this day.

When I trace the footsteps I have left behind, it is the grace of God. When I see people today who, even though they believe in Jesus, cannot quit the church they used to attend and are at a loss there, I wonder what is so hard about it when all they need to do is start anew; but it seems hard for those who find it hard. Sometimes the seaside where I lived, the people I lived with, my seminary classmates, seniors and juniors, and my family come vividly before my eyes. But now, because they reject me, there is no reason to waste time. Once I had settled it in my mind—if you do not want it, I simply do not preach to you; and since the Lord sent me into this world, how many there are throughout the whole world who will be saved through me—I cannot tell you how light my heart became. My family of old is not my family; those who have been saved in the Lord have become my parents, brothers, sisters, and relatives. So I cannot tell you how good it is.

Looking at what the Lord said here, I am reminded of the time I received the remission of sins. Having received the remission of sins, my mouth could not stay still. Even when I tried to keep my mouth tightly shut, I could not. So whenever I met anyone, whether one who believed in Jesus or one who did not, even on the street I would sit down on the ground for an hour or two and write on the ground as I preached; and whoever I met—soldiers, police officers, civil servants, ordinary people, pastors, evangelists, mission staff workers, ordinary believers—when I preached this gospel to them, the faces of many people

brightened. I who preached gained strength, and those who heard also came alive and were excited. In the end, it was that God said, do not preach the gospel only in our country but preach it to the whole world; who is preaching this gospel to the whole world now?

The people who have been sent

In our country, people regard the Apostles' Creed as the orthodoxy and the basis of faith. But the Baptist churches in the United States do not confess the Apostles' Creed. The reason they do not is that it was made by the Catholic Church and is not in the Bible. In fact, we do not confess it either. There is no reason to, yet it is that people are believing only in wrong Christian doctrines. It is that, deluded by the words of theologians, they are not meeting the Lord.

Go, wash in the pool of Siloam—Siloam is the name of a pool that, when translated, means Sent. Whom did God send? He sent Jesus Christ. Whom did Jesus Christ send? It is that He sent you and me, who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, to the people of this world. It is that people receive the remission of sins through our preaching this gospel. So as we preach this gospel of the water and the Spirit to the whole world, there have also been many hinderers. In the process of translating the books, there were also parts where content that should not have been left out was left out, so we are now translating anew and filling in again what was left out. The more a person tampers with it, the more it becomes food with nothing left to eat. It is good to do as God has spoken. In the past, when I preached, I read verse by verse and spoke of every single verse. Such a thing is good.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

But now you all know. The conclusion is that our Lord had all our sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, bore those sins and received the judgment on the Cross, and rose again and saved us. You all believe that, and so it is that we must then present and guide the way—how to live from now on, how to live as a servant of God.

The work that must be done before the night comes

Even when we work, we must do work that is effective. That is why we are now translating anew, and through these books there will be many people who are saved in the future. I have preached on all four Gospels and put them out as books. Why would I have done so? I put them out as books so that when you read the Bible and wonder what something means, you can refer to them. All the other books were put out for the same reason. I have published the sermon collections for those who, though righteous, do not understand well even when they look at the Bible, and for the workers of God who will preach in the future. When I have a real jewel, I do not know how precious it is, but when a fake is placed beside it, I come to know that the real one is a fine jewel. When I sometimes look at commentaries written by people of the world, they have written them according to their own thoughts, yet people refer to them word for word and preach.

What are you and I doing now? We are working in order to preach this gospel to people before the night comes, while it is still broad daylight. In a little while the night comes. In just a few years the world changes a great deal and people's hearts change too. Now is just the right time. If we prepare now, make it known through the internet website and various media, and put

the books out to the world, someday word will spread among people. These days audiobooks and e-books also go out in great numbers. It is that we must work before it becomes night. Among you, too, there are many who have not yet been born again. You must know the work God wants to do through you. As to why you were born inheriting the sin of your ancestors—it is that God had you be born on this earth and meet this church in order to meet you, make you children of God, have you share in the glory of God, and give you eternal life and blessing. Therefore you must believe now. Now is the opportunity.

These days my eyes and ears are not good, and I think about how long I can hold out. Cataracts have come to my eyes, and I am holding out while slowing their progress with medicine, and my ears are also becoming muffled. Still, I am doing my best. I intend to quickly preach all of this gospel before the night comes, and then go. The foundation has already been laid.

Prepare for hard times and wait for the Lord

This world will become harder and harder from now on. The climate is changing so that the future cannot be known, and scientists say that when the ice of the South Pole and the North Pole melts, the sea level will rise by several meters. Yet people do not believe the words of scientists, nor do they believe the word of God, but believe their own thoughts and feelings. How foolish that is! When one day such a day suddenly comes, there will be weeping and wailing and chaos then. In fact, the sandy beach where I used to go out to the seaside long ago and pray, shouting and calling on the Lord, is now completely submerged in water. When I go there occasionally, I wonder how the spot where I prayed has become completely submerged in water.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

When the sea is churned up, boulders that were under the sea are sometimes found up on the road. It is that such a world is coming, so what will we do now? It is that we must believe now and prepare for salvation, preach all of this gospel, and also prepare for the problems of food, clothing, and shelter while living on this earth, and live on. It is that as time goes on, we will be unable to do that work and will be restricted.

In the future, when people are tormented by the problems of food, clothing, and shelter and fall into worry and anguish, they will come to commit sins and do evil. When there is much consciousness of sin, demons take hold of that heart. That is certain. Where there is sin, demons come, and when a demon takes hold of a person, he cannot move and must do as it tells him. Then how many such human beings will there be in this world? The time for the Antichrist to appear is drawing near, and when he appears, he kills everyone who does not obey him. It is that it will become a world ruled by the devil. We have now stepped into the entrance to that. So, just as the word says that when the night comes no one can work, when that time comes, we cannot work even if we want to. Before it becomes so, we must work quickly, and even if it becomes such a world, we must live as well as we can while we live, and if we really must go, we must go without regret. And we are to be preparing by faith to go to the kingdom of the Lord, and when the Lord tells us to come, then we go without regret.

Does it not all appear in the Book of Revelation that disease will cover the whole world, a third of the trees of the world will be burned up, and the waters will become bitter so that they cannot be drunk? It will really happen so. So we must prepare now. Faith and salvation must both be prepared now, the spreading of the gospel must also be prepared and carried out, and our livelihood must also be prepared now, so that even when

such a day comes around, we do not live in want but live on what we have prepared. It is that whoever prepares can live, but whoever has not prepared undergoes suffering. It is the same with farming. Even if it does not bring big money, we lay up in advance what we will live on. We also prepare facilities in which we can farm whether it rains heavily or snows heavily. If we do not prepare, who will bring us something to eat? No one.

When I was young, I went hungry many times. No one can understand the sorrow of being hungry. Since there was not a single grain of food in the house, I would pour water into the pot, boil it, mix in soy sauce and drink it; go to the seaside and catch sea urchins, crabs, and fish, and pick seaweed and boil them whole in a pot and eat them; and go up into the mountain valleys and catch frogs and share them with the hungry children of the neighborhood—I took care of it myself. We must not go through the sorrow of being unable to eat because we have nothing. Let us eat well, live well, and live positively, and when the Lord tells us to come, let us go. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 4 by Paul C. Jong

Jesus, who became my Savior

< John 9:4-7 >

"I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing."

The gift of salvation that God gave to mankind

When the Lord was on this earth, He spoke many words to His disciples. Because this was the year in which the Lord had to be crucified after the Passover, He said, *"I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work" (John 9:4).* Although it was a word the Lord spoke at that time, He spoke it even to the point that we must work now, because later, when the Antichrist appears, we will not be able to work. And after He said that as long as He is in the world He is the light of the world, He spat on the ground and made clay and anointed the eyes of the blind man, and told him to go and wash in the pool of Siloam, and the blind man went and washed and came back seeing. Siloam, when translated, means Sent. It is the word that, since the Lord came to this earth as the Savior sent by God the Father, had our sins transferred to

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Him with the baptism He received from John, was crucified and died, and rose again from the dead and saved us from sin, we come to receive the remission of sins by believing in that Savior.

The Apostle Paul says this in 2 Corinthians. *"We then, as workers together with Him also plead with you not to receive the grace of God in vain. For He says: 'In an acceptable time I have heard you, And in the day of salvation I have helped you.' Behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation" (2 Corinthians 6:1–2).* The Apostle Paul, while preaching the gospel on this earth, exhorted people not to receive the grace of God in vain, and said that now is the accepted time and the day of salvation. It is the same now. Even now, one can believe and receive salvation. What would it mean to receive grace? It is saying that it is the time when one can receive salvation as a gift by faith alone.

God gave a gift to us mankind, and that is the gift of salvation. Since God the Father sent His Son to this earth, had Him receive baptism from John and have our sins transferred to Him, had Him be crucified, and had Him die and rise again, and so accomplished all of our salvation, now whoever simply believes receives the gift of salvation by faith. So I think that the Apostle Paul was saying not to receive grace in vain—not to receive it halfheartedly, not to end with merely knowing it, but to accept in our hearts the gift of salvation that God has given.

The twelve sins that come out of the heart

In order for us to receive salvation, we must know that, before the Lord, we are those who were born having inherited a sinful nature through our parents. *"And He said, 'What comes out of a man, that defiles a man. For from within, out of the heart*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil things come from within and defile a man.'" (Mark 7:20–23).

There is a filthy nature that comes out of the heart of man, and from birth we were born with the evil nature, the filthy nature, that we inherited from our parents. Some people seem very cultured and to have a good character, but there is no such person on this earth. As the Lord said, all people are born with this nature from birth.

What comes out of the heart of man is evil thoughts. Our thoughts are always evil. We regard our own thoughts as rather fine, but even when we see a person simply walking along the road, evil thoughts come up from time to time. What am I thinking now, when that person has nothing to do with me? We commit many sins even with our thoughts. That is why human beings are the seed of evildoers, and all people are born with a filthy nature. We curse a perfectly fine person and wish that a perfectly fine person would come to harm, so what will we do if it really turns out that way? When their child gives them trouble, parents, in a fit of anger, say harsh words—that he had better just die, that it would have been better if someone like him had never been born—and even hit him. It is that even though he is their child, they are provoked. But in fact the child could actually turn out as they said. The thoughts of man are extremely evil. Though it stopped at a thought, it is as filthy and evil as if it had been carried out in action. Killing a person directly is evil, but wishing in one's thoughts that that person would die is also evil. Just as the word says, *"What comes out of a man, that defiles a man" (Mark 7:20),* we are born with the twelve evil natures inherited through our parents and do such deeds. If we all did as we set our hearts on, there would be no one left alive on this earth.

Do you yourselves think that you are decent people because you have not done evil deeds? Of course, there are people who think so. But because the Lord knows you and me well, He says that you are a human being who has evil thoughts, a filthy human being. When one has evil thoughts, one comes to carry them out in action. Have you not had a time when you nearly killed a person? It was only that I could not bring myself to carry it out in action; when I was young, too, I experienced many times, while clashing with people, the desire to kill surging up in an instant. When evil thoughts, thoughts of wanting to kill, come up inside a person, he comes to carry them out in action.

The word of Jesus is the truth. That is because He is the One who made us human beings. Satan the devil kept human beings from believing the word of God in their thoughts and put evil thoughts into them, making them oppose God. Opposing God is an evil thought. Because man is truly an evil being, when a person's evil flares up and one gets caught in it, one could even be killed. Is there anyone here whose thoughts are very clean and good? It is only that they have not carried them out in action; all people have filthy thoughts. We must know how evil the thoughts of man are. Jesus told us that. Because Jesus is God who created the heavens and the earth, He looks into all our hearts and knows everything.

First, fornication. Because the heart of man is given to fornication, it is only that people do not do it for fear of being punished for breaking the laws of society; if they could do as they pleased, they would commit acts of fornication without limit. It is that this is exactly what we human beings are.

Second, theft. Wanting to make what belongs to others one's own is theft; only the methods differ a little. There are people who steal things, and there are also people who use their heads, buy land that will become good land at a dirt-cheap price without

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

telling the owner, and sell it for several times as much after the price has gone up. The world calls that resourcefulness, but in the Lord's sight it is theft.

Third, murder. There is a murderous heart inside me, and it is only that no one has provoked me; if someone provokes me and it goes beyond the limit, something happens in an instant. When I was young, too, a very big man struck me for no reason, and I experienced a murderous heart coming up inside me in an instant. When someone treats me unjustly, a murderous heart comes up in my heart in an instant. It is not only men who are like that. Regardless of whether they are men or women, all people have a murderous nature inside them. Jesus says that it is not only that person who is like that, but that all of us are like that. When Jesus speaks, because it is the word of God, we must accept it as right, and must not say, I am not like that, I have never harbored such a heart. Only when I know that I am this kind of person do I avoid fights as far as possible and try not to provoke the other person's anger. If one does not know oneself, one does not know when one will commit what sin.

Fourth, adultery. Was it only the person who was accused who committed the sin of adultery? There is an adulterous nature in our hearts. It is only that we suppress it because adultery is bad for the other person and bad for me too; if we did not suppress it, we would become people who commit adultery.

Fifth, covetousness; it is that we have from birth the nature of trying to satisfy our own greed in everything.

Sixth, wickedness; it is that there is a very evil and venomous heart. What is filthier than all things, filthier than rotten food, is the heart of man.

Seventh, deceit; people always deceive. After I was born again, it is only that I, too, try not to do deceitful things because I live for the brothers and sisters and for souls; in the past, I

deceived as a matter of course.

Eighth, a lewd heart,

Ninth, an evil eye; without ever obediently saying yes, at every turn they glare sidelong, saying that it does not suit them.

Tenth, blasphemy; they cannot bear to see others do well.

Eleventh, pride; how proud is man? Satan the devil, out of pride, opposed God and coveted the place of God, and after man sinned because of Satan the devil, he inherited that heart.

Twelfth, foolishness, that is, a mad heart. Look at the dictators who start wars, kill the people of other countries, and seize their property. It is that every person is born with such a filthy and evil nature in his heart. And it is that throughout his whole life he carries it out in action, and so he himself has already become filthy and makes others filthy too.

Were we sinners born on this earth with such an evil nature, or were we not? It is only that we try hard not to do so; we were born with such a nature. Why is that? Because our parents, too, were people who had this kind of heart. Unless one receives the remission of sins, a person invariably acts this way. If there is anyone who claims to have lived a holy life without doing these things, that person is a swindler of a very high level.

Before being born again, it is exactly as the word says, *"There is none righteous, no, not one" (Romans 3:10)*. Even the people whom the Catholic Church calls saints are all the seed of evildoers. A certain famous great monk of Buddhism, as he departed this world, lamented that since he had deceived countless men and women throughout his life, his sin was greater than a mountain and he feared he would fall into hell alive. If someone had properly testified of Jesus to him, he too would have received the remission of sins. When you look deeply into yourself, you come to know that you are this kind of person.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The Savior delivered up for sinners

"Not to receive the grace of God in vain… Behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation" (2 Corinthians 6:1–2). It is that, as we live before the Lord as such seed of sin, the Lord came to save us and saved us. When we had become sinners, the Lord came to this earth, had our sins transferred to Him by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, went to the Cross and was crucified and died, and rose again and saved us.

Let us read the word. *"Who was delivered up because of our offenses, and was raised because of our justification" (Romans 4:25)*. We are born with an evil nature, and as we live our whole lives, we commit this sin today and that sin tomorrow until we die. We are sinners because we inherited sin, and we are sinners because we carry sin out in action.

"Who was delivered up because of our offenses" (Romans 4:25). Why did God the Father send His Son to this earth? It says that He received baptism from John and had our sins transferred to Him and bore them, and was crucified in our place, received the punishment of sin, and died for us.

"And was raised because of our justification" (Romans 4:25). It says that He rose again from the dead in order to make us people without sin.

If you are a person who believes in God and a person who has been saved before God, then if it is a word written in the Bible and you accept it, saying, "Amen, that is right," obey it, and believe it in your heart, you are a person who receives salvation before God. But a person who says that his own thinking is different is a child of the devil. People have evil thoughts, and if one believes one's own thoughts and ignores the word of Jesus, one is now living as a slave of the devil. So in

order to receive salvation, one must cast away one's own evil thoughts, and if it is the word of God, say unconditionally that it is right, and stand on God's side. Such a person can also receive by faith the gift of salvation that the Lord gives. The center of the heart must stand upright. Only when we become people who love, respect, and fear God can we accept the salvation God has given. Otherwise, even though Jesus came to this earth and accomplished our salvation, one enters the brimstone fire of hell by not accepting it.

The baptism He received from John, the Cross, and the resurrection

So Jesus received baptism from John the Baptist. *"Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. And John tried to prevent Him, saying, 'I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?' But Jesus answered and said to him, 'Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.' Then he allowed Him" (Matthew 3:13–15).* Jesus thus received baptism from John and had all our sins transferred to Him, and by bearing those sins and dying on the Cross and rising again, He fulfilled all righteousness. The word goes on to record, *"When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, 'This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.'" (Matthew 3:16–17).* It is that God the Father is pleased with what His Son did. He is saying that My beloved Son had your sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, died on the Cross in your place, rose

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

again, and saved you. This is the word of God.

Do you believe that this word of Matthew chapter 3, verses 13 to 17, is the word of God? Jesus came to this earth and received baptism from John in order to have the sins of you and me transferred to Him; because He had the sins of you and me transferred to Him with that baptism, He was crucified and died; and He rose again from the dead in order to bring you and me to life. That is why the Apostle Paul said, *"Who was delivered up because of our offenses, and was raised because of our justification" (Romans 4:25)*. Only when Jesus rose again do we rise again from the dead. If He had only borne our sins and died on the Cross and not risen again, we too would have died with Him and that would have been the end. Because He died and rose again, we can receive the remission of sins by believing in His power and become the people of God. This is precisely faith.

Of Jesus it says, *"When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay" (John 9:6)*. He put clay on His palm, spat on it, and kneaded it. And He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the saliva-mixed clay. It is that He applied the clay made with saliva to a man who, being blind, was already called dirty because he could not even wash properly. That He spat means that you and I were people who deserved to be cursed before God. It is that not a single person was whole, clean, and decent. The Lord washed those human beings deserving of the curse in the pool of Siloam.

Jesus, who became my Savior

"For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus" (Romans 3:23–24). All people could not but go to hell; having lived as slaves of the devil, they could not but go where the devil goes; but because the Lord made us from the beginning in the image of God and created us with the purpose of making us the children of God, when we sinned, God came to us and, by giving up His Son to us, saved us through that Son, and it is that He accomplished for us the work of salvation that makes us children of God by believing this.

So Jesus is our Savior. Jesus is my Savior and the Savior of each one of you. "Jesus came to this earth and had my sins transferred to Him with the baptism He received from John, died on the Cross in my place, and rose again from the dead and brought me back to life; He removed my sins." Believing like this is precisely receiving Him. It is accepting His love in our hearts. Even though He is not visible before our eyes, by accepting the written word in our hearts, by believing the word of God, we receive the remission of sins. When we receive the remission of sins, is that the end? We become the people of God. When the time comes, we enter the kingdom of the glory of God.

We must hold on to the word of the Lord and be assured of salvation by believing the word. This is the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is of no use to talk about this gospel merely as knowledge, however long I may talk, without my having received salvation. The gospel is not a mathematical formula. A mathematical formula is used only for solving that problem, but this gospel has eternal effect for those who believe. Because the Lord of power, who lives forever, saved us from sin, if we believe that He saved us, we enjoy the benefit of having been

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

saved forever. He became our Savior who, with the baptism He received from John, had transferred to Him even the sins we commit because we are lacking and weak. So how can we not be thankful?

The preachers of the world who have not received the remission of sins cannot preach this gospel of the water and the Spirit rightly. But we have received the remission of sins, and so we live before God, solving the problems of food, clothing, and shelter while offering our lives to the Lord. I changed a great deal after I met the Lord. From childhood I was a person who lived roughly, wandering all over the country by sneaking onto trains and buses. The Lord met such a person and saved him. I truly give thanks that the Lord has saved you and me. ✉

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

CHAPTER

10

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

John Chapter 10 seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit

In John 10:1–6, Jesus is the One who came to this earth Himself, removed the sins of sinners with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and became the door of the kingdom of heaven. But Jesus called robbers those who try to have their sins remitted and enter the kingdom of heaven without believing in the gospel of salvation by which Jesus removed the sins of sinners. Where do you belong now?

John 10:1–6 is the word that follows the story in John chapter 9 of the man whose eyes were opened through Jesus and the religious leaders who put him out of Judaism. Through the parable of the sheepfold, the door, the shepherd, and the sheep, Jesus made clear who are the people of God and who are false shepherds.

1. The sheepfold is the place where the saved people of God are gathered

Jesus likened the people of God to sheep. A sheepfold is a place enclosed with a fence in order to protect the sheep at night from wild beasts and thieves. The fold has a fixed door, and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

anyone who enters normally must pass through that door.

Spiritually, the sheepfold refers to the place where the people of God who have received the remission of sins by believing in the salvation of Jesus Christ are gathered. Entering the fold of God is not simply registering at a visible church. It is receiving the remission of sins and becoming a child of God by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished.

Therefore no one can enter the sheepfold by a person's good deeds and merit. Nor does one enter because one has graduated from seminary or become a pastor or an elder. One can enter only through the door of salvation that God has established.

2. Jesus said that He Himself is the only door into the kingdom of heaven

Jesus said.

"Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber" (John 10:1).

The parable of John 10:1–6 is made clear in the word that follows.

"Then Jesus said to them again, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep.'" (John 10:7).

"I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture" (John 10:9).

The door of the kingdom of heaven is not a person's religious effort or good deeds. Jesus Christ Himself is the door of the kingdom of heaven. Jesus did not merely teach sinners with words the way into the kingdom of heaven; He Himself became that door.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. Jesus opened the door of the kingdom of heaven with the gospel of the water and the Spirit

Because a sinner has sin in his heart, he cannot come before the holy God. Therefore Jesus removed all the sins of sinners and opened a new and living way by which they can come to God.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross. By shedding His blood on the Cross He received the judgment of sin, and by rising again from the dead He completed our salvation.

Therefore passing through Jesus as the door is not merely calling on the name of Jesus or vaguely believing only in the Cross. It is believing with the heart the fact that Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John, received the wages of my sins with the blood of the Cross, and rose again from the dead and became my Savior.

A person who believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of sins, becomes a child of God, and can enter the kingdom of heaven through Jesus.

4. One who climbs up some other way is a thief and a robber

A person who does not enter by the door but climbs over the fence, even though the sheepfold has a door, is not the owner of the sheep. He is not a shepherd who loves and protects the sheep, but a thief and a robber who tries to seize the sheep.

In this passage, the thief and the robber refer in particular to

false religious leaders who try to rule over the people of God without going through the salvation of Jesus Christ. They are people who try to lead the souls of others while they themselves have not received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

These people teach other ways instead of the salvation that Jesus completed.

— They teach that one receives the remission of sins only by praying hard and living a good life.

— They teach that the sins of the day are washed away only by offering prayers of repentance every day.

— They teach that one can go to the kingdom of heaven only by being loyal to a denomination and keeping religious rituals.

— They teach that salvation is completed even by believing only in the blood of the Cross, leaving out the baptism Jesus received from John.

— They teach that one has become one of the people of God merely by the confession that one believes in Jesus, even while having sin in the heart.

Such teachings do not lead sinners to Jesus but keep them bound to their own deeds and religious merit. Because they take possession of souls and rule over them while unable to give those souls the remission of sins and life, Jesus called them a thief and a robber.

5. A true shepherd enters by the door of Jesus without fail

Jesus said.

"But he who enters by the door is the shepherd of the sheep" (John 10:2).

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

A true shepherd is first of all a person who has himself received the remission of sins through Jesus. He believes the fact that Jesus removed all his sins with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. And he preaches to the sheep the same gospel of the water and the Spirit that he himself received.

A true shepherd does not make people belong to himself. He leads the sheep so that they hear the voice of Jesus and follow Jesus. He does not exalt his own authority or the doctrines of his denomination, but exalts the salvation that Jesus completed.

In contrast, a person who teaches others to believe in God while he himself has sin in his heart must himself first enter by the door of Jesus. That is because a person who has not received the remission of sins cannot lead other souls to the kingdom of heaven.

6. The sheep of Jesus recognize the voice of the shepherd

Jesus calls His own sheep each by name and leads them.

"To him the doorkeeper opens, and the sheep hear his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out" (John 10:3).

The sheep of Jesus hear the word of salvation that Jesus preaches. When they hear the word that Jesus bore all their sins with the baptism He received from John, they accept it with the heart. They believe the fact that the blood of the Cross was the judgment on their sins and the fact that Jesus rose again from the dead.

That the sheep hear the voice of the shepherd does not mean simply hearing a sermon with the ears. It is accepting the word

as the word of God, believing it with the heart, and following that word.

A person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit comes to discern between the voice of Jesus and the voice of a false shepherd. He comes to know that the word that preaches the salvation Jesus completed and religious teaching that puts forward people's deeds are different from each other.

7. The sheep of Jesus do not follow the voice of a stranger

Jesus said.

"And when he brings out his own sheep, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice. Yet they will by no means follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers" (John 10:4–5).

The sheep of Jesus follow Jesus the shepherd even after they are saved. In the Church of God they hear the word, serve the gospel, and live by faith. They do not look only at the weakness of their own flesh, but keep looking at the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished.

Also, when the voice of a stranger is heard, they discern it. They do not follow the voices that say, "There is still sin in your heart," "Sins are washed away only by more prayers of repentance and good deeds," or "One can be saved even without the gospel of the water and the Spirit." That is because they know that such words drag them back under sin and the law.

The sheep of Jesus hear the voice of Jesus, who saved them completely from sin. And being united with the Church of God, which preaches that word, they follow Jesus by faith.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

8. The Pharisees did not understand even though they heard the parable

"Jesus used this illustration, but they did not understand the things which He spoke to them" (John 10:6).

The Pharisees knew much of the Scriptures and also had religious positions. But they did not realize the fact that they were spiritually blind and false shepherds. They put out of Judaism the man whose eyes Jesus had opened, and condemned Jesus, whom God had sent, as a sinner.

The reason they did not understand the parable of Jesus was not that they lacked knowledge, but that they did not lay down their own righteousness and religious authority. They did not hear the voice of Jesus, who is both the Lamb of God and the Shepherd. Rather, they tried to separate the sheep from Jesus and keep them belonging to themselves.

9. Where do you belong now?

Before this word, we must examine our own faith.

1. Do I still have sin in my heart while only calling on the name of Jesus?

2. Am I trying to wash away my sins with prayers, good deeds, and religious life?

3. Am I believing only in the blood of the Cross, leaving out the baptism Jesus received from John?

4. Do I believe the fact that Jesus removed all my sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

5. Am I hearing the voice of Jesus and following Him in the Church of God?

6. Do I lead people to Jesus, or am I trying to keep them

bound to me and my religion?

If a person has received the remission of all sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished, that person is a sheep of God who has entered by the door of Jesus. He is a person who belongs inside the fold of God, and a person who hears the voice of Jesus and follows Him.

If one is trying to enter the kingdom of heaven by one's own deeds and religious efforts while having sin in the heart, one has not yet entered by the door of Jesus. One must first admit the fact that one is spiritually blind and a sinner, and believe with the heart the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed.

Conclusion

John 10:1–6 tells us the fact that there is only one door into the kingdom of heaven. That door is Jesus Christ, the Savior of mankind.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John, received the judgment of all those sins by shedding His blood on the Cross, and became the eternal Savior of those who believe by rising again from the dead. A person who believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart is a sheep of God who has entered by the door of Jesus.

The way of trying to enter the kingdom of heaven by human deeds and religious methods, without going through the salvation that Jesus accomplished, is the way of climbing up some other way. In particular, a religious leader who leads people onto that wrong way while he himself has not received the remission of sins is not a shepherd who gives life to the sheep,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

but a thief and a robber who seizes souls.

Therefore we must clearly confirm where we belong now. We must examine whether we belong to human religion and our own deeds, or whether we have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and have come into the fold of Jesus.

The sheep of Jesus recognize the voice of Jesus. They believe the word of salvation by which Jesus removed all sins, do not follow the voice of a stranger, and follow Jesus the shepherd by faith in the Church of God. We must become precisely such sheep of God who have entered by this door of Jesus.

In John 10:7–18, should we not discern, at the level of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, who becomes the door of the kingdom of heaven, who become the sheep of God, and how one is saved from all sins?

John 10:7–18 makes three things clear: that the door of the kingdom of heaven is Jesus Christ, that the sheep of God are those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished, and that salvation is received not by one's own deeds but by believing in the baptism of Jesus, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

1. Jesus Christ is the only door into the kingdom of heaven

Jesus spoke clearly, pointing to Himself.

"Then Jesus said to them again, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep.'" (John 10:7).

The door of the kingdom of heaven is not a denomination or a religious system. Nor is it a person's good deeds and merit, nor the effort to keep the law. Jesus Christ Himself became the door of the kingdom of heaven.

Because a sinner has sin in his heart, he cannot enter the holy kingdom of God. Therefore Jesus came to this earth in order to remove all the sins of sinners and open the door of salvation by which they can come to God.

"I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture" (John 10:9).

The word *"If anyone enters by Me"* means that one receives the remission of sins by believing in the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished. There is no one who can enter the kingdom of heaven without going through Jesus.

2. Jesus opened the door of salvation with the gospel of the water and the Spirit

That Jesus became the door of the kingdom of heaven does not mean that it is enough simply to call on the name of Jesus. We must know the work of salvation that Jesus actually did for sinners.

Though Jesus is God, He came to this earth clothed in human flesh in order to save sinners. And when He was thirty years old, He received baptism from John. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross.

The blood He shed on the Cross was the blood of the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

judgment on the sin of the world that Jesus had borne. Jesus was crucified, shed His blood, and died as the wages of our sins, and by rising again from the dead He completed our salvation.

Therefore the faith that enters by the door of the kingdom of heaven is believing wholly in the following work of salvation.

1. The fact that Jesus is God and came to this earth clothed in the flesh

2. The fact that Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John

3. The fact that Jesus bore the sin of the world and was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross

4. The fact that Jesus rose again from the dead and became the eternal Savior

A person who believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart is the person who enters by the door of the kingdom of heaven through Jesus.

3. The sheep of God are those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit

A person does not become a sheep of God merely because he was born into the world. Nor does one become a sheep of God because one has attended church for a long time or received a church office.

The sheep of God are those who have received the remission of all sins by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed. They are those who have accepted by faith the fact that Jesus bore all their sins and was judged.

Jesus said.

"I am the good shepherd; and I know My sheep, and am known by My own" (John 10:14).

Jesus knows His own sheep. The sheep also know Jesus, their shepherd. To know here is not simply to know information about Jesus. It is to know how Jesus removed all my sins and to believe it with the heart.

The sheep of God confess like this.

"Jesus bore all my sins—past, present, and future—with the baptism He received from John. Jesus bore my sins and was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross. Jesus rose again from the dead and became my Savior. Therefore I have received the remission of all sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit."

A person who has this faith is a sheep of Jesus and one of the people of God.

4. Jesus gives the sheep salvation and abundant life

Jesus does not give the sheep who believe in Him merely an exemption from the punishment of hell. He gives them the remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life, and has them eat the word of abundant life in the Church of God.

"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly" (John 10:10).

A soul that was dead because of sin obtains new life by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. All the sins of the heart are washed away, and the Holy Spirit comes upon that heart. One comes to be able to call God Father, and comes to hope for the eternal kingdom of God.

Also, the saved sheep keep eating the pasture of life in the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Church of God. As they hear the word, their faith grows, they discern the will of God, and they come to live a life of preaching the gospel to other souls. This is the abundant life that Jesus spoke of.

5. Jesus is the good shepherd who laid down His life in order to give life to the sheep

"I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep" (John 10:11).

The evidence that Jesus is the good shepherd is the fact that He laid down His own life for the sheep. Sinners could not but go each his own way, commit sin all their lives, and be judged. But Jesus did not abandon them.

Jesus bore all the sins of the sheep on His own body with the baptism He received from John. And bearing those sins, He was hung on the Cross and gave up His own life. Jesus received in our place the punishment of sin that we had to receive.

"As the Father knows Me, even so I know the Father; and I lay down My life for the sheep" (John 10:15).

Before demanding anything of the sheep, the good shepherd first gave up His own life for the sheep. Our salvation was accomplished not because we did something for God, but because Jesus did everything for us.

6. The death of Jesus was not a death taken from Him by force

It was not because Jesus had no power and was defeated by people that He died on the Cross. Jesus is God who created the

heavens and the earth, and the Lord of life who raises the dead.

"Therefore My Father loves Me, because I lay down My life that I may take it again. No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This command I have received from My Father" (John 10:17–18).

Jesus laid down His life of Himself in obedience to the will of the Father. He was voluntarily hung on the Cross in order to save the sheep from sin and judgment. Also, because He had the power to take His life again, He rose again from the dead.

The baptism of Jesus, the Cross, and the resurrection are not events separate from one another.

— He bore the sin of the world with the baptism He received from John.

— He received the judgment of that sin on the Cross.

— He rose again from the dead and gave new life to those who believe.

This is the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God the Father planned and Jesus completed by obedience.

7. A hireling and the good shepherd can be discerned by the fruit of salvation

"But a hireling, he who is not the shepherd, one who does not own the sheep, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and flees; and the wolf catches the sheep and scatters them. The hireling flees because he is a hireling and does not care about the sheep" (John 10:12–13).

A hireling thinks of his own benefit before the life of the sheep. He has no interest in leading people to the remission of sins, but sets his heart on gaining religious authority, possessions,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

and honor. As a result, he keeps people held within religion in a state of having sin in their hearts.

In contrast, a true leader who follows the will of Jesus the good shepherd preaches the gospel of the water and the Spirit to people. He has them receive the remission of sins not by human deeds but by the baptism of Jesus, the Cross, and the resurrection. He keeps supplying the word of God to the saved saints so that their faith grows.

Therefore the standard for discerning a shepherd is not outward scale, position, or eloquence.

1. Does he preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit accurately?

2. Does he have sin actually washed away from people's hearts?

3. Does he supply the word of life to the saints who have received the remission of sins?

4. Does he make people belong to himself, or does he have them follow Jesus?

5. Does he value the souls of the sheep more than his own interests?

Through this fruit, one can discern between a leader who follows the will of the good shepherd and a hireling.

8. The sheep of Jesus become one flock and dwell under one shepherd

"And other sheep I have which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they will hear My voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd" (John 10:16).

"Other sheep I have which are not of this fold" includes the Gentiles who would hear the gospel and be saved. The salvation

of Jesus was not given only to the Jews, but is for all the people of the world.

Even if people differ in nation, language, and status, if they believe in the same gospel of the water and the Spirit, they all become sheep of God. They become one flock that receives the remission of sins from one Jesus, receives one Holy Spirit, believes in one gospel, and follows Jesus, the one shepherd.

Therefore the Church of God is not a place that becomes one by human conditions. It is a place that becomes one by believing alike in the salvation that Jesus completed with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

9. We must discern by faith whether we are sheep of God

Before this word, we must examine our own faith.

1. Do I believe in Jesus as the only door of the kingdom of heaven?

2. Do I believe the fact that all my sins were transferred to Jesus with the baptism He received from John?

3. Do I believe the fact that the blood of the Cross was the judgment on my sins that Jesus bore?

4. Do I believe that Jesus rose again from the dead and became my eternal Savior?

5. As a result of believing in this gospel, have all the sins of my heart been washed away?

6. Am I hearing the voice of Jesus the good shepherd and following Him?

7. Am I eating the word of life and serving the gospel in the Church of God?

If sin remains in the heart as it is even though one says with

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the mouth that one believes in Jesus, one must hear and believe the gospel of the water and the Spirit accurately. When one fully accepts with the heart the work of salvation that Jesus accomplished, one receives the remission of all sins and becomes a sheep of God.

Conclusion

The door of the kingdom of heaven is Jesus Christ alone. Jesus did not stop at teaching sinners the way; He Himself removed all their sins and became the door into the kingdom of heaven.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross. He received the judgment of sin by shedding His blood on the Cross, and rose again from the dead and became the eternal Savior of those who believe.

A person who has received the remission of all sins by believing in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart is a sheep of God. The sheep of God recognize the voice of Jesus the good shepherd, eat the word of life in the Church of God, and follow Jesus by faith.

In contrast, if one tries to enter the kingdom of heaven by human good deeds and religious efforts, or if sin remains in the heart while one holds on only to the Cross, leaving out the baptism of Jesus, one has not fully passed through the door of salvation. Salvation is not accomplished by human zeal; it was completed by the good shepherd laying down His life for the sheep.

Therefore we must discern clearly through the word of the

Scriptures: that Jesus is the door of the kingdom of heaven, that those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are the sheep of God, and that only Jesus, who laid down His life for those sheep and rose again, is the true good shepherd.

In John 10:7–8, Jesus accomplished, through the work He did when He came to this earth Himself, all the truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that saves every sinner from his sins. That gospel is precisely the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and if one believes in the word of this gospel and lives a life of faith in the Church of God, one comes to obtain the food of the soul and the food of the flesh. Do you know that this is the truth the Bible speaks of?

Yes. That Jesus removed all the sins of sinners with the gospel of the water and the Spirit and became the door of salvation, and that a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in this gospel hears the word in the Church of God and is supplied with what the soul and the flesh need, is the truth the Bible speaks of.

However, John 10:7–8 makes clear the fact that Jesus is the door of the sheep and that those who do not go through Him are thieves and robbers, and verses 9–10 go on to say that the sheep that have entered by that door obtain salvation, pasture, and abundant life. Therefore verses 7–10 must be examined as one flow.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

1. Jesus said that He Himself is the door of the sheep

"Then Jesus said to them again, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep.'" (John 10:7).

Jesus did not introduce to sinners one of several ways of salvation. He said that He Himself is the only door of salvation.

A person cannot enter the kingdom of God in a state of having sin. Therefore, in order to become the door of the kingdom of heaven, the work of salvation that removes all the sins of sinners had first to be accomplished. Jesus came to this earth precisely in order to do this work.

2. Jesus Himself accomplished the gospel of the water and the Spirit

The gospel of the water and the Spirit is not a religious doctrine made up by man. It is the work of salvation that Jesus, who is God, did Himself when He came to this earth clothed in the flesh.

1. Jesus came to this earth clothed in human flesh in order to save sinners.

2. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

3. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross.

4. Jesus received the judgment of all sins by being crucified and shedding His blood.

5. Jesus became the eternal Savior of those who believe by rising again from the dead.

The incarnation of Jesus, the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection make up the gospel

of the water and the Spirit. By completing this work of salvation, Jesus became the door by which sinners can enter the kingdom of God.

3. A way of salvation that does not go through Jesus is a false way

"All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them" (John 10:8).

The thieves and robbers Jesus spoke of refer to false religious leaders who try to take possession of the sheep of God while they themselves do not enter by the door of Jesus. These people teach human deeds and merit instead of the gospel of salvation that Jesus completed.

— They say that sins are washed away only by living a good life.

— They say that one receives the remission of sins only by offering prayers of repentance every day.

— They say that one enters the kingdom of heaven only by keeping the law and religious rituals.

— They say that one receives the approval of God only by being loyal to a denomination and religious leaders.

— They teach that all sins are solved even by believing only in the blood of the Cross, leaving out the baptism Jesus received from John.

Such teachings cannot actually remove sin from the heart of a sinner. That is because they are the way of trying to climb up somewhere else without going through the door that Jesus established.

The true sheep of God do not follow such voices. They hear and believe the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

accomplished, and follow the voice of the shepherd who preaches that gospel.

4. A person who enters by the door of Jesus obtains salvation

Continuing from the word of verses 7–8, Jesus said this.

"I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture" (John 10:9).

The word *"If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved"* means that one receives the remission of sins by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished.

One does not enter merely by the outward confession of calling on the name of Jesus. One must believe the fact that Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John, received the punishment of those sins on the Cross, and rose again from the dead.

For a person who believes in this gospel, the following salvation is accomplished.

1. All the sins of the heart are washed away.
2. He is saved from the judgment of God on sin.
3. He receives the Holy Spirit as a gift.
4. He becomes a child of God.
5. He obtains eternal life.
6. He becomes a sheep that belongs to the Church of God.

5. The saved sheep obtain the food of the soul in the Church of God

Jesus said that the saved sheep *"will go in and out and find*

pasture." Just as sheep cannot sustain life without pasture, a person who has received the remission of sins must also keep hearing the word of God for his spiritual faith to grow.

The food of the soul is the word of God. In particular, the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished is the food of life that gives life to the soul of a saved person and establishes it firmly.

Even a person who has received the remission of sins can be shaken because of the weakness of the flesh, the worries of the world, and wrong thoughts. Therefore he must keep hearing the following word in the Church of God.

— The word that Jesus bore all sins with the baptism He received from John

— The word that the judgment of sin was ended with the blood of the Cross

— The word that Jesus, who rose again from the dead, is alive even now

— The word that a saved person is a child of God and a righteous person

— The word that the saints must live believing in God and serving the gospel

When one hears this word, faith arises in the heart, one gets out of carnal thoughts, and one gains strength to follow Jesus the good shepherd.

6. The Church of God is the place that feeds the sheep the pasture of life

The reason a person who has received the remission of sins must live a life of faith in the Church of God is that he receives the guidance of Jesus the shepherd through the Church of God.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The Church of God is the place where those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are gathered. There, not human philosophy and religious teachings, but the word of salvation that Jesus accomplished is preached.

In the Church of God, the saints live the following life of faith.

1. They hear the word of God and establish their faith firmly.
2. They pray to God for the help they need.
3. They have fellowship with the brothers and sisters of faith and hold one another up.
4. Receiving the guidance of the Church, they discern between the thoughts of the flesh and the will of God.
5. They preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to other souls.
6. They serve and work together for the spreading of the gospel.

This is the life of faith in which the saved sheep live hearing the voice of the shepherd and eating pasture.

7. The good shepherd also takes care of the food of the flesh

Jesus is not One who takes care of only the soul of a saved person. He is the good shepherd who also takes care of the life of the flesh that is needed while one lives on this earth.

The food of the flesh does not simply mean much property and worldly success. It is the care by which God opens the way for the food, clothing, and shelter, the health, the workplace, and the livelihood that the saints need in order to keep their faith and live serving the gospel.

In the Church of God, the saints can pray to God for their needs.

— If they need a workplace, they ask for a workplace.

— If they need health, they ask for health.

— If they need material things, they ask for the supply they need.

— In hardship and danger, they ask for protection.

— If their faith is lacking, they ask for faith to be added.

— They ask for wisdom and ability to serve the gospel.

Jesus the good shepherd knows the circumstances of His own sheep, and supplies what the sheep need at the most fitting time and in the most fitting way. As the saved saints experience this care of the Lord, they come to trust Jesus the shepherd all the more.

8. Jesus gives the sheep abundant life

"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly" (John 10:10).

A false shepherd cannot give life to the souls of the sheep, but rather keeps them bound to sin, the law, and religious deeds. But Jesus gives the sheep life and makes that life more abundant.

Abundant life does not mean only material abundance. It refers to the blessed life of obtaining the remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life, living according to the word of God, praying to God and receiving help, and being used in the work of saving other souls.

When a person who has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit hears the word in the Church of God, his soul becomes strong. When he lives

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

praying by faith, he also receives the guidance and supply of God in the life of the flesh. This is the life of faith shown in the word *"will go in and out and find pasture."*

Conclusion

Jesus came to this earth in order to save every sinner and completed the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John, was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross while bearing those sins, and became the door of the kingdom of heaven by rising again from the dead.

A person who believes in this gospel with the heart receives the remission of all sins and becomes a sheep of God. And he must live a life of faith in the Church of God, hearing the voice of Jesus the shepherd. He obtains the food of the soul through the word of God, and through prayer and faith he also receives the care of God that the flesh needs.

Therefore, after receiving the remission of sins, hearing the word in the Church of God, being united with the Church, and receiving the guidance of Jesus the shepherd is the right life of faith that the Bible speaks of. That is because the saved sheep continually need the pasture of life.

Jesus is the door of our salvation and the good shepherd. The sheep that have entered by His door come to receive in the Church of God the food of the soul and the care that the flesh needs, to grow by faith, and to live the abundant life of preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit to other souls.

In John 10:10–16, what is the truth that this word speaks of?

John 10:10–16 contrasts the thief and the good shepherd, the hireling and the true shepherd, the lost sheep and the saved sheep. The central truth of this word is that Jesus is the good shepherd who saves sinners with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, and leads the saved as one flock in the Church of God.

1. The thief destroys souls, but Jesus gives life

"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly" (John 10:10).

The purpose of the thief and the purpose for which Jesus came are completely different.

The thief cannot give life to the sheep. Rather, he seizes, kills, and destroys the sheep. Spiritually, the thief is one who leads the souls of sinners away from the gospel of the water and the Spirit and keeps them bound to human deeds and religious merit.

False teaching says this to people.

— One can receive the remission of sins only by living a good life.

— The sins of the day are washed away only by offering prayers of repentance every day.

— One is approved by God only by doing much religious ritual and service.

— One can be saved only by being loyal to a denomination and its leaders.

— All sins are solved even by believing only in the Cross,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

without believing in the baptism Jesus received from John.

With such teachings, the sins of the heart cannot be washed away. Because they leave a person as a sinner, in the end they lead that soul to judgment and destruction.

But Jesus did not come to kill the sheep; He came to give life. He came to bring to life those who were dead in sin, to give them the Holy Spirit and eternal life, and to make them children of God.

2. The life that Jesus gives was accomplished with the gospel of the water and the Spirit

That Jesus gave life to the sheep does not simply mean that He gave good words or comfort. It means that Jesus actually bore all the sins of sinners and, by receiving the judgment of those sins, brought dead souls to life.

Though Jesus is the Son of God and the Creator God, He came to this earth clothed in human flesh in order to save sinners. And He bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross. He received the judgment of all sins by shedding His blood on the Cross and died, and by rising again from the dead He became the eternal Savior of those who believe.

Therefore the work of Jesus, who gave life to the sheep, proceeds as follows.

1. The incarnation of Jesus

2. The bearing of the sin of the world through the baptism He received from John

3. The judgment of sin through the blood of the Cross

4. The resurrection from the dead

5. The remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life given to those who believe

This is the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus completed, and a person who believes in this gospel with the heart passes from death into life.

3. Jesus is the good shepherd who laid down His life for the sheep

"I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep" (John 10:11).

The clearest evidence that Jesus is the good shepherd is that He laid down His own life for the sheep.

Mankind left God because of sin and went each his own way. All people had to live committing sin all their lives and then be judged for their own sins. But Jesus did not abandon the lost sheep.

Jesus bore on His own body the sin and the judgment that the sheep had to receive. He took over all the sins of the sheep with the baptism He received from John, and laid down His life on the Cross in place of the sheep. By the death of Jesus the sheep were saved from the judgment of sin, and by the resurrection of Jesus they came to obtain new life and eternal life.

Our salvation was not accomplished because we, the sheep, laid down our lives for the shepherd. It was accomplished because Jesus the good shepherd first laid down His life in order to bring us sinners to life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

4. A hireling abandons the sheep when danger comes

"But a hireling, he who is not the shepherd, one who does not own the sheep, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and flees; and the wolf catches the sheep and scatters them. The hireling flees because he is a hireling and does not care about the sheep" (John 10:12–13).

A hireling is a person who works for the purpose of wages. Because he does not love the sheep like his own life, when danger comes he abandons the sheep for the sake of his own safety.

A spiritual hireling also thinks of his own interests before the salvation of the sheep. He has no interest in whether people have sin in their hearts or whether they have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He regards the number of people, offerings, buildings, honor, and his own position as important.

A true leader upholds the will of Jesus the good shepherd. He preaches the gospel of the water and the Spirit to sinners so that they receive the remission of sins, and supplies the word of God to the saved saints so that their faith grows.

Therefore a true shepherd and a hireling can be discerned by their fruit.

— Does he have sin actually washed away from the heart of the sinner?

— Does he preach the baptism of Jesus, the Cross, and the resurrection in full?

— Does he keep people bound to himself, or does he have them believe in and follow Jesus?

— Does he value the souls of the sheep more than his own interests?

— Does he feed and protect the saved sheep with the word of God?

5. The good shepherd and the sheep know each other

"I am the good shepherd; and I know My sheep, and am known by My own. As the Father knows Me, even so I know the Father; and I lay down My life for the sheep" (John 10:14–15).

Jesus knows His own sheep. He knows who has received the remission of sins by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and who only says outwardly that he believes in Jesus.

The sheep also know Jesus, their shepherd. To know here does not mean having knowledge about the name and the life of Jesus. It is to know by faith how Jesus saved them.

The sheep of God know the following facts clearly.

— I was a person who could not but perish because of sin.

— Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— Jesus bore my sins and was judged on the Cross.

— Jesus rose again from the dead and gave me new life.

— I have become a child of God who has received the remission of all sins by believing in this gospel.

A person who has this faith recognizes the voice of Jesus the shepherd and follows Him.

6. Abundant life includes even the life of faith after salvation

Jesus came not only to give the sheep life but to have them have it more abundantly. If receiving the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the beginning of spiritual life, hearing the word in the Church of God and receiving the guidance of the shepherd is the life of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

enjoying that life abundantly.

The saved sheep receive the following grace in the Church of God.

1. They keep hearing the word of life and confirm the faith of salvation.

2. They come to discern between the thoughts of the flesh and the will of God.

3. They learn how to overcome trials and persecution by faith.

4. They are united with the saints and protect and serve one another.

5. They pray to God for their needs and receive help.

6. They preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to lost souls.

7. They live with the hope of the eternal life and the kingdom of God that they will enjoy in the future.

This is the abundant life that the good shepherd gives His own sheep.

7. The *"other sheep"* also hear the gospel and become one flock

"And other sheep I have which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they will hear My voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd" (John 10:16).

The *"other sheep"* that Jesus spoke of include the Gentiles who at that time were outside the fold of the Jews. The salvation of Jesus was not given only to the Jews, but is for all the people of the world.

Even among those who have not yet heard the gospel of the water and the Spirit, there are people who will believe when they hear the gospel. Jesus wants the gospel to be preached to them also.

When they hear and believe the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they receive the remission of all sins and become sheep of God. Even if they differ in nation, country, and language, they become one flock by believing in the same gospel, and come to be under Jesus, the one shepherd.

Therefore the saved saints and the Church of God must preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to the souls who have not yet come into the fold. That is because Jesus said that He would lead them also and make them one flock.

8. This word demands discernment, faith, and evangelism of us

John 10:10–16 demands three things of us.

First, we must discern. We must discern between the word of the good shepherd, who gives life to souls, and the words of the thief and the hireling, who keep people bound to sin and religion.

Second, we must believe. We must believe with the heart the fact that Jesus removed all my sins and gave me new life with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection.

Third, we must preach. We must preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to those who have not yet come into the fold of God and have lost their way, so that they too receive the remission of sins and become one flock under one shepherd.

Conclusion

The truth that John 10:10–16 speaks of is that Jesus Christ is

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the good shepherd who laid down His own life in order to bring sinners to life.

The thief and the hireling use the sheep for their own benefit and in the end cast souls into sin and destruction. But Jesus bore all the sins of the sheep once and for all with the baptism He received from John, was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross while bearing those sins, and gave the sheep new life and eternal life by rising again from the dead.

A person who has received the remission of sins by believing in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart is a sheep of Jesus. Jesus knows His own sheep, and the sheep also know the good shepherd who saved them and follow His voice.

The saved sheep eat the word of life in the Church of God, are protected by faith, and grow spiritually. And they preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to the lost sheep still outside the fold, so that they too become one flock under Jesus, the one shepherd.

Therefore this word is speaking the truth that Jesus is our good shepherd, that the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the true gospel of salvation that gives life to the sheep, and that those who have believed in this gospel must form one flock in the Church of God and follow Jesus the shepherd.

In John 10:22–39, what is this word saying?

1. At the Feast of Dedication the Jews surrounded Jesus

The Feast of Dedication was a feast commemorating the cleansing again of the temple that had been defiled and its

dedication to God. It was winter, and Jesus was walking in the temple, in Solomon's porch. Then the Jews surrounded Jesus and asked.

"Then the Jews surrounded Him and said to Him, 'How long do You keep us in doubt? If You are the Christ, tell us plainly.'" (John 10:24).

But Jesus had already sufficiently revealed who He was through His words and the works He did. The problem did not lie in any lack of explanation from Jesus. It lay in the fact that they did not believe with the heart even though they saw the words and the works of Jesus.

2. The works Jesus did testified that He is the Christ

Jesus answered like this.

"Jesus answered them, 'I told you, and you do not believe. The works that I do in My Father's name, they bear witness of Me.'" (John 10:25).

All the works Jesus did—healing the sick, opening the eyes of the blind, raising the dead, and preaching the word of life—testified that He is the Christ whom God the Father sent. In the words and the ministry of Jesus, the authority of God, which cannot come from man, was revealed.

All this work was finally completed with the salvation that removes the sin of mankind. Jesus, who is God, came to this earth clothed in a human body. And He bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross. He received the judgment of sin by shedding His blood on the Cross, and by rising again from the dead He completed the salvation of those who believe.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

This is the greatest and most perfect work of salvation that Jesus did in the name of the Father.

3. The sheep of Jesus hear His voice and follow

Jesus spoke of the reason the Jews did not believe.

"But you do not believe, because you are not of My sheep, as I said to you. My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me" (John 10:26–27).

The sheep of Jesus are not simply people who have religious knowledge. They are people who hear with the heart and believe the word that Jesus removed all their sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In the sheep of Jesus the following characteristics of faith appear.

1. They hear the word of Jesus as the word of God.

2. They believe that Jesus is the Son of God and the Christ.

3. They believe that Jesus bore all their sins with the baptism He received from John.

4. They believe that Jesus bore those sins and was judged on the Cross.

5. They believe in Jesus, who rose again from the dead, as their perfect Savior, and follow Him.

Jesus knows such people and receives them as His own sheep. To 'know' here does not mean simply knowing that they exist, but acknowledging them as His own people, caring for them, and keeping them.

4. Jesus gives His own sheep eternal life

Jesus said clearly what He gives His own sheep.

"And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand" (John 10:28).

Eternal life is not a reward that a person obtains by his own effort and good deeds. It is the life that Jesus, the Lord of eternal life, gives freely to a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

A person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit believes that Jesus removed all his sins through the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. By this faith he receives the remission of sins, receives the Holy Spirit, becomes a child of God, and obtains the eternal life that Jesus gives.

Jesus said that His own sheep shall never perish. He also said that no one can snatch them out of His hand. The eternal life of the saved is not something kept by human strength, but is protected by the power of Jesus the Savior.

5. The Father and the Son together keep those who are saved

Jesus went on to say.

"My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand. I and My Father are one" (John 10:29–30).

A saved person is not only in the hand of Jesus but also in the hand of God the Father. No one can snatch him out of the hand of Jesus, and no one can snatch him out of the hand of God the Father.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

The reason is that Jesus is one with God the Father. The Father and the Son are distinct, but They are one in divinity, power, will, and the work of salvation. Therefore the word *"I and My Father are one"* is the word that makes clear that Jesus is not merely a prophet or a great religious leader, but God.

The only One who can give a person eternal life, save him from eternal destruction, and keep him so that no one can snatch him away is God. That Jesus does this work shows that He is the true God.

6. The Jews rejected Jesus' declaration of His divinity

The Jews who heard the words of Jesus took up stones to stone Jesus. They made their reason clear as follows.

"The Jews answered Him, saying, 'For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy, and because You, being a Man, make Yourself God.'" (John 10:33).

The Jews understood the fact that Jesus had said that He was one with God. But they did not believe that Jesus is God who came in the flesh. They saw the good works of Jesus, but did not accept who it was who did those works.

If one does not accept the divinity of Jesus, one cannot believe in the perfection of the salvation He accomplished either. But if one believes that Jesus is the true God, one can also believe the fact that the salvation He accomplished with the baptism He received from John, the Cross, and the resurrection is perfect. Because the One who saved is God, there is nothing lacking in that salvation.

7. Jesus made clear His legitimacy from the Scriptures

Jesus answered by citing the word of Psalm 82.

"If He called them gods, to whom the word of God came (and the Scripture cannot be broken), do you say of Him whom the Father sanctified and sent into the world, 'You are blaspheming,' because I said, 'I am the Son of God'?" (John 10:35–36).

In the Scriptures, too, the expression *"gods"* was used for those who received the word of God. If so, it cannot be blasphemy for Jesus, whom God the Father sanctified and sent into the world, to say that He is the Son of God.

Jesus is the only begotten Son whom God the Father sent into the world. He is not merely a man who delivered the word of God, but God who came as the Word made flesh. Jesus' calling Himself the Son of God was His making clear His true identity.

8. Looking at the work of Jesus, one can know that the Father and the Son are one

Jesus said that even if they could not believe His words at once, they should believe by looking at the works He had done.

"But if I do, though you do not believe Me, believe the works, that you may know and believe that the Father is in Me, and I in Him" (John 10:38).

The works Jesus did revealed the will of God the Father as it is. God the Father loved sinners and wanted to save them, and Jesus accomplished salvation in obedience to that will.

The work by which Jesus bore sin with the baptism He received from John, the work by which He received the judgment of that sin on the Cross, and the work by which He rose again from the dead are the work of salvation that the Father

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

and the Son accomplished with one will. When one believes in this work, one comes to realize the fact that God the Father is in Jesus and Jesus is in the Father.

The Jews tried again to seize Jesus, but Jesus escaped out of their hand. The violence of people could not hasten or overthrow the plan of salvation of God. Jesus was God who would lay down His own life of Himself at the appointed time and accomplish the salvation of mankind.

Conclusion

John 10:22–39 clearly tells who Jesus is, who His sheep are, and what He gives those sheep.

Jesus is the Christ whom God the Father sent, and the true God who is one with the Father. All the works He did testify of His divinity and His being the Savior. The sheep of Jesus are those who hear His voice, believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart, and follow Him.

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross, and by rising again from the dead He completed salvation.

To a person who believes in this gospel, Jesus gives the remission of sins and eternal life. And because God the Father and Jesus together hold him, no one can snatch him out of the hand of the Lord. This is the perfect promise of salvation that Jesus, who is one with God the Father, gave His own sheep.

In John 10:22–39, if all the feasts of the people of Israel were to be explained in detail?

In John 10:22 it is written, *"Now it was the Feast of Dedication in Jerusalem, and it was winter."* To understand the Feast of Dedication accurately, we must first look at the whole of the feasts that God gave the people of Israel.

The feasts were not mere holidays or national festivals. They were days that made the people remember how God had saved and led Israel, and they were shadows in the Old Testament that showed the work of salvation that Jesus Christ would accomplish in the future.

"So let no one judge you in food or in drink, or regarding a festival or a new moon or sabbaths, which are a shadow of things to come, but the substance is of Christ" (Colossians 2:16–17).

1. The overall structure of the feasts of Israel

In Leviticus chapter 23, the Sabbath and seven annual feasts are recorded.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Category	Time	Historical meaning	Connection with the work of salvation
The Sabbath	The seventh day of every week	Resting while remembering the grace of creation and the exodus	True rest enjoyed by believing in the salvation Jesus completed
The Passover	The evening of the 14th day of the first month	Being saved from the plague of death by the blood of the lamb	The blood of the Cross of Jesus and His bearing of the judgment
The Feast of Unleavened Bread	Seven days from the 15th day of the first month	Remembering the hasty departure from Egypt	A life of casting away sin and falsehood and living in the truth of the gospel
The Feast of Firstfruits	The day of offering the first sheaf during the Feast of Unleavened Bread	Offering the first harvest to God	Jesus, who rose again from the dead
The Feast of Weeks, the Feast of Harvest, Pentecost	The 50th day from the Feast of Firstfruits	Giving thanks for the firstfruits of the wheat harvest	The coming of the Holy Spirit and the beginning of the spreading of the gospel
The Feast of Trumpets	The 1st day of the seventh month	Proclaiming a holy convocation by blowing trumpets	Awakening and gathering the people with the word of God

Category	Time	Historical meaning	Connection with the work of salvation
The Day of Atonement	The 10th day of the seventh month	Making atonement for the sins of Israel for the year	Jesus' bearing sin with His baptism and being judged on the Cross
The Feast of Tabernacles, the Feast of Ingathering	Seven days from the 15th day of the seventh month	Giving thanks while remembering life in the wilderness and the harvest	The saved people enjoying the living water of the Holy Spirit and hoping for the kingdom of God

To these were added Purim and the Feast of Dedication, which arose in the history of Israel. Purim is the feast commemorating the deliverance of the Jewish people from Haman's plan of extermination, and the Feast of Dedication is the feast commemorating the cleansing of the defiled temple and its dedication again to God.

2. The Sabbath—the rest God gave

Leviticus chapter 23 first records the Sabbath before speaking of the annual feasts.

"Six days shall work be done, but the seventh day is a Sabbath of solemn rest, a holy convocation. You shall do no work on it; it is the Sabbath of the LORD in all your dwellings" (Leviticus 23:3).

The Sabbath was the day for remembering that God finished

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the work of creation and rested, and the day for remembering that Israel was set free from slavery in Egypt.

Applied to salvation, true rest is for a sinner to cease from the labor of trying to remove his sins by his own deeds and to believe in the salvation that Jesus completed. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He was judged on the Cross and rose again from the dead.

When a sinner believes in this work of salvation with the heart, he escapes the condemnation of sin and obtains true rest.

3. The Passover—the feast in which death passed over at the sight of the blood

The Passover is the representative feast showing the salvation of Israel. When God judged the firstborn of Egypt, the houses that had the blood of the lamb did not receive the plague of death.

"Now the blood shall be a sign for you on the houses where you are. And when I see the blood, I will pass over you; and the plague shall not be on you to destroy you when I strike the land of Egypt" (Exodus 12:13).

The Passover lamb points to Jesus Christ.

"For indeed Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us" (1 Corinthians 5:7).

The blood of the Cross of Jesus is the blood of life of Jesus, who received the judgment of sin in our place. But to know why Jesus had to shed His blood on the Cross, we must also know the baptism Jesus received from John.

Jesus bore all the sin of mankind with the baptism He

received from John. And as the Lamb of God bearing that sin, He was hung on the Cross and shed His blood. Therefore the Passover shows the truth of being saved from the judgment of sin and eternal destruction through the blood of the Cross.

4. The Feast of Unleavened Bread—the feast of eating the word of the gospel without leaven

The Feast of Unleavened Bread was kept for seven days starting from the day right after the Passover. The people of Israel removed leaven from their houses and ate unleavened bread.

Leaven has the nature of puffing up and spreading through the whole. In the New Testament it is also used to represent false teaching, malice, and hypocrisy. Therefore the Feast of Unleavened Bread shows that a saved person must live eating the pure word of the gospel, unmixed with human teachings and falsehood.

"Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth" (1 Corinthians 5:8).

In the gospel of the water and the Spirit there is no place for human merit or deeds. One must believe, just as it is, the word that Jesus completed salvation with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection. Even after that, a saved person must keep hearing the pure word of the gospel and live by faith.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

5. The Feast of Firstfruits—Jesus, who became the firstfruits of the resurrection

When the people of Israel reaped the grain in the land of Canaan, they brought a sheaf of the first grain to the priest. The priest waved that first sheaf before God.

The first sheaf represented the whole harvest that would follow. In the New Testament, Jesus, who rose again from the dead, is called the firstfruits.

"But now Christ is risen from the dead, and has become the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep" (1 Corinthians 15:20).

That Jesus became the firstfruits of the resurrection means that those who believe in Jesus will also rise again in the future. Because Jesus solved sin and judgment with the baptism He received from John and the blood of the Cross and rose again from the dead, a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit obtains the remission of sins and new life.

The Feast of Firstfruits is the feast that shows the resurrection of Jesus and the hope of resurrection of the saved saints.

6. The Feast of Weeks, the Feast of Harvest, Pentecost—the Holy Spirit and the spreading of the gospel

The day after seven Sabbaths were completed, counting from the Feast of Firstfruits, that is, the fiftieth day, is the Feast of Weeks. Because thanks was given for the firstfruits reaped from the field, it was also called the Feast of Harvest, and in the New Testament it was called Pentecost, meaning the fiftieth day.

When Pentecost came after Jesus rose again from the dead,

the Holy Spirit came upon the disciples.

"When the Day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. Then there appeared to them divided tongues, as of fire, and one sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance" (Acts 2:1–4).

Pentecost shows that after the work of salvation of Jesus was completed, the Holy Spirit came and the spreading of the gospel began in earnest.

When one believes with the heart the gospel that Jesus bore sin with the baptism He received from John, shed His blood on the Cross, and rose again from the dead, one receives the remission of sins. The Holy Spirit comes upon the heart of a person who has thus received the remission of sins, and makes that person a child of God and a witness of the gospel.

7. The Feast of Trumpets—the feast that awakens and gathers the people of God

The Feast of Trumpets was kept on the first day of the seventh month.

"Speak to the children of Israel, saying: 'In the seventh month, on the first day of the month, you shall have a sabbath-rest, a memorial of blowing of trumpets, a holy convocation.'" (Leviticus 23:24).

In Israel, trumpets were used to gather the people, to announce departure, to warn of danger, and to proclaim the feasts of God. Therefore the Feast of Trumpets has the meaning of awakening sleeping souls with the word of God and calling

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

them together before God.

The trumpet of the gospel tells sinners of their sins and the coming judgment, and at the same time preaches the good news that Jesus completed salvation with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Just as those who heard the sound of the trumpet gathered for the holy convocation, those who hear and believe the word of the gospel are called out of the world and become the people of God.

8. The Day of Atonement—the feast of passing sins on and making atonement with blood

The Day of Atonement was kept on the tenth day of the seventh month. On this day the high priest offered the sacrifice of atonement once a year for the sins of all the people of Israel.

Aaron the high priest laid both his hands on the head of the live goat, confessed all the sins of the people of Israel, and passed those sins on to the goat.

"Aaron shall lay both his hands on the head of the live goat, confess over it all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions, concerning all their sins, putting them on the head of the goat, and shall send it away into the wilderness by the hand of a suitable man" (Leviticus 16:21).

In this sacrifice two essentials of the remission of sins appear.

1. Through the laying on of hands, the sins of the people passed on to the sacrificial offering.

2. The sacrificial offering that took over the sins shed its blood and died, and so bore the punishment of sin.

This sacrifice of the great Day of Atonement was completed by the work of salvation of Jesus Christ. John, the representative of mankind, gave baptism to Jesus, and Jesus bore all the sins of

the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross and was judged by shedding His blood.

The high priest of the Old Testament repeated the sacrifice of atonement every year, but Jesus perfected forever those who believe with one work of salvation.

"But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God, from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool. For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified" (Hebrews 10:12–14).

9. The Feast of Tabernacles, the Feast of Ingathering—the grace of the wilderness and the final harvest

The Feast of Tabernacles was kept for seven days from the fifteenth day of the seventh month, and on the eighth day they gathered again as a sacred assembly. The people of Israel built booths with branches of trees and stayed in them.

This feast has two historical meanings.

1. They remembered that God led Israel out of Egypt and had them dwell in booths in the wilderness.

2. After gathering and storing all the produce of the year, they gave thanks to God. So it was also called the Feast of Ingathering.

The booths of the wilderness show that the human body and life in the world are not eternal. Just as the people of Israel lived in the wilderness receiving the protection and supply of God, saved people also live by the grace and the word of God while passing through this world.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

On the last day of the Feast of Tabernacles, Jesus said this.

"On the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, 'If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink. He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.' But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive" (John 7:37–39).

When one believes in the salvation Jesus accomplished with the baptism He received from John, the blood of the Cross, and the resurrection, one receives the remission of sins and receives the Holy Spirit as a gift. The Holy Spirit works like rivers of living water in the heart of a saved person, and has him preach the gospel he has received to other souls.

The Feast of Tabernacles shows that the saved people live by the grace of the Holy Spirit, and in the end will enter the kingdom of God and dwell there forever.

10. The three pilgrimage feasts

All the males of Israel had to go up three times a year to the place that God chose.

"Three times a year all your males shall appear before the LORD your God in the place which He chooses: at the Feast of Unleavened Bread, at the Feast of Weeks, and at the Feast of Tabernacles; and they shall not appear before the LORD empty-handed" (Deuteronomy 16:16).

The three pilgrimage feasts show the various feasts grouped into large units.

1. The period of the Feast of Unleavened Bread includes the Passover and the Feast of Firstfruits together.

2. The Feast of Weeks was kept fifty days after the Feast of

Firstfruits.

3. The Feast of Tabernacles was kept after the harvest of the year was finished.

Seen as the flow of salvation, they are as follows.

— The Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread show being saved from sin and judgment.

— The Feast of Firstfruits shows the resurrection of Jesus.

— The Feast of Weeks shows the coming of the Holy Spirit and the spreading of the gospel.

— The Feast of Tabernacles makes us look to the final harvest and the eternal life of the kingdom of God.

11. Purim—the day of deliverance from the crisis of extermination

Purim is not included among the seven feasts established by the law of Moses. It was made to commemorate that, when Haman tried to destroy the Jewish people in the days of Esther, God delivered them through Esther and Mordecai.

The Jews kept the fourteenth and fifteenth days of the month of Adar, holding feasts, giving presents to one another, and giving to the poor. Purim is the feast of deliverance in which sorrow was turned into joy and mourning into a good day.

This feast makes us think of how a sinner who was under death and destruction is saved through Jesus Christ and obtains joy.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

12. The Feast of Dedication—the day the temple was cleansed and dedicated again

The feast that appears directly in John chapter 10 is the Feast of Dedication.

"Now it was the Feast of Dedication in Jerusalem, and it was winter. And Jesus walked in the temple, in Solomon's porch" (John 10:22–23).

Unlike the seven feasts recorded in the law of Moses, the Feast of Dedication is a feast that arose in the later history of Israel. When Gentile powers defiled the temple and made the people serve idols, the people of Israel recovered the temple, cleansed it, and dedicated it again to God, and this feast commemorated that. The Feast of Dedication is the day for remembering the restoration, cleansing, and dedication of the temple.

Yet the Jews who were gathered in the temple at the Feast of Dedication did not actually believe in Jesus, whom God the Father had sanctified and sent into the world. While commemorating the history of the cleansing of the temple, they rejected the true Savior who cleanses the hearts of sinners.

Jesus told them that His words and the works He did testified that He is the Christ. He also said that He gives His own sheep eternal life and that no one can snatch them out of His hand.

Finally, Jesus declared.

"I and My Father are one" (John 10:30).

That Jesus spoke this word at the Feast of Dedication is very important. A temple made by man can be defiled and then repaired again, but Jesus is the holy God who is one with God the Father. He cleanses the hearts of sinners with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and makes saved people the temple of God in which the Holy Spirit dwells.

Conclusion

The feasts of Israel made the people remember the salvation God had accomplished, and at the same time showed in advance the salvation that Jesus Christ would complete.

— The Sabbath shows the true rest enjoyed in Jesus.

— The Passover shows the blood of the Cross of Jesus and His bearing of the judgment.

— The Feast of Unleavened Bread shows the pure gospel unmixed with falsehood and the saved life.

— The Feast of Firstfruits shows Jesus, who became the firstfruits of the resurrection.

— The Feast of Weeks shows the coming of the Holy Spirit and the spreading of the gospel.

— The Feast of Trumpets shows the work of awakening and gathering souls with the gospel.

— The Day of Atonement shows the transfer of sin and the salvation accomplished by Jesus, who bore the punishment of sin.

— The Feast of Tabernacles shows the living water of the Holy Spirit, the final harvest, and the hope of the kingdom of God.

— Purim makes us remember the salvation of God, who delivered from the crisis of destruction.

— The Feast of Dedication commemorates the cleansing of the defiled temple and its being offered again to God.

The substance of salvation that all these feasts point to is Jesus Christ. Jesus bore all the sin of mankind once and for all with the baptism He received from John, was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross while bearing that sin, and rose again from the dead.

Therefore the saints of the New Testament do not receive the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

remission of sins by the act of keeping the feasts, but obtain the remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life by believing with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit of Jesus Christ, to which the feasts point.

In John 10:22–39, the gospel of the water and the Spirit is being spread even now in the 21st century; what kind of people are accepting the gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart and being saved?

Even in the days of Jesus, not everyone believed the words of Jesus. Even though the Jews had seen the countless signs Jesus did and had heard His words, they surrounded Jesus again and asked.

"Then the Jews surrounded Him and said to Him, 'How long do You keep us in doubt? If You are the Christ, tell us plainly.'" (John 10:24).

Jesus answered that He had already told them, and that the works He did in the name of God the Father also testified of Him. Therefore the problem does not lie in a lack of the testimony of the gospel, but in whether a person accepts the word of God with the heart or rejects it.

Even in the 21st century, the gospel of the water and the Spirit is being spread through books, sermons, literature, and many languages. But not everyone who comes across the gospel is saved. Jesus explained who accepts the gospel with the words *"My sheep."*

1. A person who hears the voice of Jesus as the word of God is saved

Jesus said.

"My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me" (John 10:27).

The sheep of the Lord are not simply people who hear a sermon with the ears. They are people who accept with the heart the truth of salvation that Jesus spoke through the Scriptures.

Today one can come across the gospel through the internet or books, or hear it through sermons in church. But what decides salvation is not the place or the method by which one heard the gospel. What matters is whether one hears that word merely as a human claim, or hears and believes it as the word of salvation that God gives to one's own soul.

The sheep of the Lord do not pick and hear only the words that agree with their own thoughts. They accept as it is the word by which the Scriptures testify of Jesus.

2. A person who admits that he is a sinner before God accepts it

The gospel of the water and the Spirit becomes good news to a person who admits the fact that he is a sinner. To a person who thinks that he can live righteously by his own strength and can solve sin with good deeds, prayers of repentance, or religious efforts, the perfect salvation of Jesus does not seem necessary.

But a person who admits the following facts comes to seek the Savior.

1. I was born a sinner as a descendant of Adam.
2. I keep committing sin with my heart, thoughts, and deeds.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

3. I cannot remove the sin of my heart with my good deeds and religious efforts.

4. Because the wages of sin is death, I cannot escape the judgment of God while I have sin.

5. I am a person who absolutely needs the salvation that Jesus Christ bestows.

Admitting one's sin and inability is not meant to end in despair. It is the starting point of faith for accepting the perfect salvation that Jesus accomplished.

3. A person who believes in Jesus as the true God and Savior accepts it

The Jews did not accept Jesus as God even while they saw the works Jesus did. When Jesus said, *"I and My Father are one,"* they took up stones to stone Him.

But a person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit does not regard Jesus as a mere man, a prophet, or a religious leader. He believes that Jesus is the only begotten Son whom God the Father sent, and the true God who is one with God the Father.

Because Jesus is God, He was able to bear all the sin of mankind, able to receive the judgment of sin on the Cross, and able to rise again from the dead. And He is able to give the remission of sins and eternal life to those who believe.

If one does not believe in the divinity of Jesus, one cannot fully believe in the power of the salvation He accomplished either. A person who accepts the gospel of the water and the Spirit believes in Jesus as his own Creator and as God who saved him from sin.

4. A person who believes in the meaning of the baptism Jesus received from John accepts it

Jesus spoke as He received baptism from John in the Jordan River.

"But Jesus answered and said to him, 'Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.' Then he allowed Him" (Matthew 3:15).

Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross. So the next day John testified, pointing to Jesus.

"The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, 'Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!'" (John 1:29).

A person who accepts the gospel of the water and the Spirit does not see the baptism of Jesus merely as an example or a ritual. He believes that Jesus, through the baptism He received from John, bore even all his sins—past, present, and future.

5. A person who believes that the blood of the Cross of Jesus is the judgment of his own sins accepts it

That Jesus was hung on the Cross does not end merely as an event in which He died unjustly without any sin. Jesus shed His blood on the Cross bearing the sin of the world that He had borne with the baptism He received from John.

The wages of sin is death. Therefore Jesus, who bore sin, received the punishment of sin on the Cross in our place. The Cross of Jesus is the place where the righteous judgment of God on the sin of mankind was carried out.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

A person who accepts the gospel believes like this.

— Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John.

— Jesus bore my sins and was hung on the Cross.

— The blood Jesus shed is the evidence that He received in my place the judgment of sin that I had to receive.

— Jesus completed my salvation by rising again from the dead.

The Scriptures testify that Jesus came by water and blood.

"This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not with the water only, but with the water and with the blood" (1 John 5:6)*ASV.*

6. A person who does not add his own deeds to the salvation of Jesus accepts it

The gospel of the water and the Spirit is the word that Jesus completed salvation. A person who is saved does not think that the work of Jesus is lacking and that he must add something himself.

One's own good deeds, service, offerings, fasting, prayers of repentance, and religious zeal cannot take the place of the price of salvation. Such deeds are the fruit of the life of faith that a person who is already saved can do with thanksgiving; they are not the basis of the salvation that removes sin.

The basis of salvation is only what Jesus did.

— Jesus came in the flesh.

— Jesus bore all the sins of the world with the baptism He received from John.

— Jesus bore those sins and shed His blood on the Cross.

— Jesus rose again from the dead.

Accepting these facts with the heart is faith.

"For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation" (Romans 10:10).

7. A person who believes the written word, not his own feelings, accepts it

Some people think that they are saved only when their hearts grow warm, tears come, or they have a special experience. But feelings can change according to circumstances. The assurance of salvation must be built not on changing feelings but on the unchanging word of God.

A person who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit confesses like this.

"I am not saved because I had a special feeling; I believe that word because God has said that Jesus bore all my sins with the baptism He received from John and was judged on the Cross."

Faith is not making up unseen facts by human imagination. It is accepting as true fact the word of salvation that God has written.

8. A person who puts the word of God before his own doctrine accepts it

The Jews in the days of Jesus knew the Scriptures, but they rejected Jesus because of the religious notions they had set up. When the works Jesus performed did not fit their doctrines and traditions, instead of believing in Jesus they took up stones.

It is the same in the 21st century. Some people reject the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

gospel of the water and the Spirit before even hearing it, on the grounds that it differs from the doctrine they have believed for a long time or the teaching of their denomination. But a person who is saved humbles his heart before God as follows.

"Even if it differs from what I have known until now, if the Scriptures say so, I will follow the Scriptures."

This person exalts the word of God above his own knowledge and tradition. He confirms the word of the gospel from the Scriptures, and believes with the heart the facts that the Scriptures testify to.

9. A person who believes is saved regardless of nationality, education, or social status

Ethnicity, education, wealth, occupation, or social position is not a condition for accepting the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God loved all the people of the world, and had whoever believes obtain eternal life.

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life" (John 3:16).

Even a person hearing the gospel for the first time can be saved if he believes with the heart. Even a person who has attended church for a long time is not saved if he does not believe the gospel with the heart. The position of a pastor or a theologian does not guarantee salvation, nor is anyone excluded from salvation on the grounds of having little knowledge of the Bible.

Whoever admits his own sinfulness and believes with the heart in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus accomplished obtains the remission of sins and eternal life.

10. The remission of sins, the Holy Spirit, and eternal life come upon a person who has believed in the gospel

Jesus said to Nicodemus.

"Jesus answered, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God.'" (John 3:5).

When one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with the heart, one has all one's sins washed away, receives the Holy Spirit as a gift, and becomes a child of God. That person becomes righteous by faith not because his own deeds are perfect, but because Jesus removed all his sins perfectly.

Jesus knows such a person as His own sheep and gives him eternal life.

"And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand" (John 10:28).

Because a saved person believes with the heart in the salvation Jesus accomplished, he can make the confession of faith that there is no sin in his heart. Also, because the Holy Spirit dwells in his heart, he comes to hear the word of God and live following the Lord.

11. Following the Lord is not a condition of salvation but the fruit of faith

Jesus said, *"My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me."*

One first becomes a sheep and then follows the shepherd. It is not that a person becomes a sheep by following the Lord diligently. Because one has received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and has

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

become a sheep of the Lord, one comes to follow the word of the Lord.

A saved person also has the weakness of the flesh. At times he may stumble and judge wrongly. But when he hears the word of God, he acknowledges it with the heart, returns, and seeks to live according to the will of the Lord. This is the fruit of faith that appears in the sheep of the Lord.

Conclusion

The people who accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit and are saved in the 21st century are not people who belong to a special nation, denomination, or class. The following people are saved.

1. People who admit that they are sinners before God and cannot but be judged.

2. People who believe in Jesus as the true God and Savior whom God the Father sent.

3. People who believe that Jesus bore all their sins once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

4. People who believe that Jesus bore those sins and was judged by shedding His blood on the Cross.

5. People who believe that Jesus rose again from the dead and completed salvation.

6. People who accept with the heart the perfect salvation of Jesus without adding their own deeds and religious merit.

7. People who exalt and follow the written word of God above their own thoughts and doctrines.

These people are precisely the sheep of the Lord who recognize the voice of Jesus. Jesus washes away all the sins of such a person, gives him the Holy Spirit and eternal life, and

holds and keeps him with His own hand.

In John 10:40–42, when Jesus went again to the place where He had received baptism from John, the people said, *"All the things that John spoke about this Man were true."* What was the testimony of John that they acknowledged to be true?

In John 10:40–42, when Jesus went again to the place where He had received baptism from John, the people said, *"All the things that John spoke about this Man were true."* What was the testimony of John that they acknowledged to be true?

"And He went away again beyond the Jordan to the place where John was baptizing at first, and there He stayed. Then many came to Him and said, 'John performed no sign, but all the things that John spoke about this Man were true.' And many believed in Him there" (John 10:40–42).

1. Jesus went again to the place where John was baptizing at first

In Jerusalem Jesus made clear to the Jews that He is One who is one with God the Father. The Jews did not accept this word, and tried to stone Him and seize Him. Jesus escaped out of their hand and went beyond the Jordan, to the place where John was baptizing at first.

This was the place where John revealed Jesus to the people of Israel and testified of Him when the public ministry of Jesus began. Jesus received baptism from John there, and John

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

testified to the people who Jesus was.

Jesus' going again to that place shows the testimony that John first preached and the work Jesus had done until then as connected with each other. The word that John had testified beforehand about Jesus was revealed as fact through the life and the work of Jesus.

2. John performed no sign, but he testified accurately to the word of God

The people said, *"John performed no sign, but all the things that John spoke about this Man were true."* John did not perform signs such as healing the sick or raising the dead. But it was not that his ministry was lacking.

The most important work entrusted to John was not performing miracles but testifying who Jesus is.

"This man came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light" (John 1:7–8).

John did not exalt himself. He said that he was not the Christ, but the voice of one crying to make straight the way of the Lord. His work was not to gather people to himself but to have them believe in Jesus Christ.

John did not perform signs, but he accurately testified of the word God had entrusted to him. As time passed and people came to see the words and the work of Jesus directly, they came to know the fact that the testimony of John was all true.

3. John testified that Jesus is God who was before him

John testified of Jesus like this.

"John bore witness of Him and cried out, saying, 'This was He of whom I said, "He who comes after me is preferred before me, for He was before me."'" (John 1:15).

In the flesh, John was born about six months before Jesus. Even so, John testified that Jesus was before him. This means that Jesus is the eternal God who existed before He was born in the flesh.

In John chapter 10, Jesus said, *"I and My Father are one."* This agrees exactly with the testimony of John. John testified that Jesus is not a mere human or a prophet, but the Son of God who came from heaven, and God.

4. John testified that Jesus is the Lamb of God who bore the sin of the world

The most important testimony that John preached about Jesus is the following word.

"The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him, and said, 'Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!'" (John 1:29).

It was the day after he had given baptism to Jesus that John spoke this word. Jesus bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He went forward to the Cross.

Therefore the testimony of John, *"The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world,"* contains the following meaning.

1. Jesus is the sacrifice of atonement that God prepared.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

2. Jesus bore all the sin of mankind with the baptism He received from John.

3. Jesus went toward the Cross in the state of bearing the sin of the world.

4. Jesus received the punishment of sin in our place by shedding His blood on the Cross.

5. Jesus rose again from the dead and became the perfect Savior of those who believe.

John testified that Jesus is the Lamb of God who bore the sin of the world even before Jesus was hung on the Cross. Afterward, through the Cross and the resurrection of Jesus, the fact that the testimony of John was true was revealed completely.

5. John testified that Jesus is the Son of God

When Jesus received baptism from John and came up from the water, the Holy Spirit descended like a dove and remained upon Jesus. This was the sign of confirmation that God had given John beforehand.

"I did not know Him, but He who sent me to baptize with water said to me, 'Upon whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining on Him, this is He who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.' And I have seen and testified that this is the Son of God" (John 1:33–34).

John did not say that Jesus is the Son of God according to his own judgment or human acquaintance. He testified after seeing that the sign God had spoken of was fulfilled in Jesus.

In John chapter 10, Jesus' revealing Himself as the Son of God and saying that He is one with God the Father agrees exactly with the testimony of John.

6. John testified that Jesus is the One who baptizes with the Holy Spirit and fire

In the Gospel of John, Jesus is testified to be the One who baptizes with the Holy Spirit. In the parallel passage it is recorded as follows.

"I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire" (Matthew 3:11).

Jesus is the Savior and at the same time the Judge. To those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit He gives the Holy Spirit, but on those who refuse the gospel to the end and remain in sin He brings down the judgment of fire.

The word that follows shows the meaning of the Holy Spirit and fire even more clearly.

"His winnowing fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clean out His threshing floor, and gather His wheat into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire" (Matthew 3:12).

Therefore John testified that Jesus is the One who saves sinners and gives the Holy Spirit, and at the same time God who has the authority to judge the sin of unbelief.

7. John testified that not he but Jesus must increase

When the disciples of John said that many people were going to Jesus, John answered.

"He must increase, but I must decrease" (John 3:30).

John did not try to protect his own work and disciples. He

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

knew that the work entrusted to him was to reveal Jesus and to have people believe in Jesus.

After John had given baptism to Jesus and testified of Jesus as the Lamb of God and the Son of God, people had to follow Jesus. That many people believed in Jesus in John 10:42 means that the ministry of John achieved its purpose.

8. John testified that a person who believes in Jesus has eternal life

John testified that Jesus is the One who came from heaven and that God the Father had given all things into His hand. And he concluded as follows.

"He that believeth on the Son hath eternal life; but he that obeyeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him" (John 3:36, ASV).

This testimony also agrees with the word Jesus spoke in John chapter 10.

"And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand" (John 10:28).

John testified that a person who believes in the Son has eternal life, and Jesus said that He gives His own sheep eternal life. The testimony of John and the word of Jesus agree as one.

9. The people saw that the testimony of John and the work of Jesus agreed

The people who came to Jesus compared the word they had heard from John with the works Jesus actually did.

— John testified that Jesus is the Christ.

— Jesus spoke and worked with the authority of God.
— John testified that Jesus is the Son of God.
— Jesus said that He and God the Father are one.
— John testified that Jesus is the Lamb of God.
— Jesus said that He lays down His life for His own sheep.
— John testified that a person who believes in the Son has eternal life.
— Jesus said that He gives His own sheep eternal life.

Seeing that the testimony of John and the words and the work of Jesus agreed exactly like this, the people confessed, *"All the things that John spoke about this Man were true."*

10. Through the testimony of John, who performed no sign, many people believed in Jesus

The religious leaders of Jerusalem tried to seize and kill Jesus even though they had seen the many signs Jesus did. In contrast, the people beyond the Jordan remembered the word John had preached and believed in Jesus, even though John had performed no sign.

This contrast is important. Faith does not arise automatically because one has seen many miracles. It arises when one sincerely accepts the testimony of God.

John testified who Jesus is and what salvation He would accomplish. The people saw the work of Jesus and realized that the words of John were true, and as a result they believed in Jesus and obtained eternal life.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Conclusion

The word *"all the things that John spoke about this Man were true"* means that the following testimony that John preached about Jesus was confirmed as fact.

1. Jesus is God who existed before He came in the flesh.

2. Jesus is the Christ whom God the Father sent.

3. Jesus is the Lamb of God who bore all the sins of the world once and for all with the baptism He received from John.

4. Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him, and bearing that sin, He was judged on the Cross.

5. Jesus is the Son of God who rose again from the dead and saved sinners.

6. Jesus is the One who gives the Holy Spirit to those who believe and judges the sin of unbelief with fire.

7. A person who believes in Jesus has the remission of sins and eternal life.

The work of John was a work of revealing Jesus. John gave baptism to Jesus so that the sin of mankind was transferred to Jesus, and afterward testified of Jesus as *"The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world."*

The people came to know through the words and the work of Jesus that the testimony of John was all true. So they believed in Jesus as the Son of God and the Savior, and the Gospel of John recorded the result thus: *"And many believed in Him there."* ✉

Questions and Answers on John Chapter 10

[Question] 1. What similarities and differences do the parable of the "*good shepherd*" in John chapter 10 and the parable of the 'lost sheep' in the Synoptic Gospels have?

Both parables show the love of God, who does not take one soul lightly. When a sheep loses its way, the shepherd does not leave it as it is but goes out to look for it. In Matthew, through the search for the lost sheep, it says, *"It is not the will of your Father who is in heaven that one of these little ones should perish."* God does not despise even one person who seems small and insignificant, and He does not want him to perish.

The parable in Luke begins where the Pharisees and scribes complained, *"This Man receives sinners and eats with them,"* when the tax collectors and sinners came to hear the words of Jesus. The shepherd goes about looking for the lost sheep, and after finding it, he lays it on his shoulders rejoicing, comes back, and rejoices together with his neighbors. Therefore the conclusion of this parable is that there is joy in heaven when one sinner is saved. The emphasis is that He rejoices more over one soul that realized its sin and received salvation than over the ninety-nine who regard themselves as righteous.

The parable in John chapter 10 also speaks of the love that saves the lost sheep, but its center is on who the shepherd who bestows that love is and how He saves the sheep. Jesus Christ revealed Himself as *"the door of the sheep"* and *"the good*

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

shepherd." He calls His own sheep each by name and leads them, and the sheep know the voice of the shepherd and follow. Unlike a hireling, who abandons the sheep when danger comes, the good shepherd knows and cares for His own sheep, and finally gives up His own life for the sheep.

That Jesus Christ laid down His life for the sheep is not merely a matter of saying that He did not spare His life. In order to make lost sinners the people of God, Jesus bore their sins by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, and received in their place the judgment on those sins on the Cross. And He rose again from the dead, made sinners righteous, and gave them new life and eternal life. It was not that His life was taken from Him by anyone; He gave it up of Himself according to the will of the Father in order to bring the sheep to life.

Therefore, if the parable of the 'lost sheep' in the Synoptic Gospels emphasizes the heart of God, who seeks one soul to the end, saves it, and rejoices, the parable of the *"good shepherd"* in John makes even clearer that the One who seeks that lost sheep is precisely Jesus Christ, and with what sacrifice He saved the sheep. The Synoptic Gospels show the figure of the shepherd finding the lost sheep and coming back with it on his shoulders, and John makes clear the fact that this shepherd is the Savior who bears the sins of the sheep, dies in their place, rises again, and gives life. In the end the two parables are not different stories, but the word that shows together the love of God, who seeks the lost sinner, and the work of salvation of Jesus Christ, who accomplished that love in person.

[Question] 2. In the parable of John 10:1–6, what does each of the sheepfold and the door, the shepherd and the doorkeeper, and the sheep represent?

Rather than mechanically matching the elements of this parable to completely separate persons or places, we should understand them as representing the various aspects in which Jesus Christ saves, protects, and leads His own people.

First, the *"sheepfold"* is the fence within which the sheep gather together and are protected from fierce beasts outside. Spiritually it refers to the Church of God, where the people of God who have received the remission of sins gather and receive the protection and guidance of the word, and ultimately it is also connected with the kingdom of God, into which they will enter and live. It is not a place that just anyone enters by climbing over the wall, but a place one must enter through the designated door.

That *"door"* is Jesus Christ. Jesus Himself revealed, *"I am the door of the sheep."* Jesus Christ is the only door who saves people from sin with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, makes them the people of God, and has them enter the kingdom of God. Therefore a person who tries to enter the kingdom of God by another method without believing in the salvation that Christ accomplished is not a person who enters by the door, but is like a thief and a robber who climbs over the wall.

"The shepherd of the sheep" also refers to Jesus Christ. The shepherd knows his own sheep, calls them each by name and leads them, and goes ahead first to open the way for the sheep to follow. Jesus is not One who merely taught people the way; He is the One who Himself bore sin, was judged, and rose again, and so first accomplished the way of salvation. Therefore the sheep know who it is that saved them from sin, and believe and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

follow His word.

The *"doorkeeper"* also represents the work of Jesus Christ from another side. Jesus is not only the door of salvation but also the One who opens that door and receives His own people. He does not open the door unconditionally to anyone and let people into the kingdom of heaven in the state of having sin as they are; He receives those who are related to the remission of sins He accomplished, that is, those who believe in that salvation with the heart. Therefore Jesus is the door, and at the same time the doorkeeper who opens that door and receives the saved sheep.

Lastly, the *"sheep"* refer to those who have received the remission of sins and become the people of God by believing with the heart in the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished. Because they are people who have received the Holy Spirit in their hearts by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they recognize the voice of the shepherd. To know the voice here does not mean simply remembering a voice. It means knowing the heart of the shepherd who saved them, and recognizing that His word is not meant to harm them but to give them life and benefit them. So even when at times they must yield their own thoughts, they believe and follow the word, and they do not follow a strange voice that departs from the truth of salvation.

In the end, in the sheepfold the people of God who have received the remission of sins are gathered; Jesus Christ is the door of salvation by which they enter, the shepherd who knows them and goes ahead and leads them, and the doorkeeper who opens the door of salvation and receives them. The sheep are the people of God who know, believe, and follow Him as the Savior who removed their sins with His baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection.

[Question] 3. In John 10:1, whom do those who climb up some other way, not by the door, into the sheepfold refer to?

The door of the sheepfold is Jesus Christ. Therefore those who do not enter by the door refer to those who claim to be the people of God or spiritual leaders themselves without believing in the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished. Because they try to enter salvation and the kingdom of God by another way without going through Christ, they are defined as thieves and robbers.

This word is also connected with the events of the previous chapter. The Pharisees of John chapter 9 did not believe in Jesus Christ, who opened the eyes of the blind man, and rather put out of the synagogue the man who believed in Christ. They claimed to be Moses' disciples and leaders of the people, but they rejected the Savior whom God had sent. Like this, even if one has religious position and knowledge of the Scriptures, if one does not know Jesus Christ and refuses His salvation, one cannot be a true shepherd who leads the sheep to life.

Also, those who do not enter by the door are those who claim that there is another savior besides Christ, or who act as if they themselves could save people. Those who speak the name of Jesus Christ yet do not fully believe in the salvation He accomplished, and put forward human good deeds and merit, religious tradition, or doctrine as conditions of salvation, also fall under this. They do not lead people to believe in Jesus Christ and obtain the remission of sins and life, but make them come under their own teaching and authority.

The reason they are called thieves and robbers is that they snatch away the sheep even though the sheep are not their own possession. A true shepherd gives life to the sheep, protects them,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

and feeds them the pasture of the word, but a false leader puts his own honor, power, and profit before the souls of the sheep. In the end he takes away people's possessions and hearts and makes their souls depart from the way of life. The word in John 10:10, *"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy,"* clearly shows that result.

Therefore those who do not enter by the door of the sheep are not limited to people outside the church. They refer to all the false religious leaders and self-styled saviors who, even while outwardly speaking of God and salvation, do not believe in Jesus Christ the door, depart from the truth of salvation that He accomplished, and make people belong to themselves. A true shepherd surely enters through Jesus Christ the door, and does not keep the sheep held to himself but leads them to hear and follow the voice of Christ.

[Question] 4. In John 10:4–5, on what basis do the sheep distinguish between the voice of their own shepherd and the voice of a stranger?

That the sheep know the voice of the shepherd does not mean simply remembering the tone of a voice. Because the sheep belong to the shepherd and have received his protection and guidance, they know who he is and with what heart he leads them. Therefore when the shepherd goes ahead and calls, they recognize his voice and follow after him, but even if a stranger imitates him similarly, they do not follow him but flee.

Spiritually, the sheep refer to those who have become the people of God by believing in the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished. Because they know that Jesus Christ is their Savior and the good shepherd, they hear and follow His word.

The voice of the shepherd here means the written word of God. The Holy Spirit, who is in the saved person, makes him realize that that word is true and that it is the word that gives him life and benefits him. Even when it is hard to obey in the thoughts of the flesh, in the heart he acknowledges that the word is right, and yields himself and follows.

Therefore the standard for discerning the voice of the shepherd is not the position or fame of the speaker, or eloquence and emotional appeal. One must examine whether the words agree with the written word, whether they fully testify of the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished, and whether they lead the soul to the way of life. Words that blur the gospel or bind people to a human being instead of Christ are the voice of a stranger, so one must not follow them.

However, it is not that one discerns all words perfectly from the start just because one has been saved. If one's faith is young and one is not familiar with the word, one may be shaken by circumstances or by people's words. Therefore one must hear the word of God again and again, reflect on it in the heart, and grow in faith. In the end, the sheep discern the voice not by the voice itself, but by knowing who the shepherd who saved them is and what He has said, and by examining that voice in the light of the written word in the Holy Spirit.

[Question] 5. In John 10:8, what verdict did Christ give on those who came before Him and led people?

Christ gave the verdict, *"All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers." "All who ever came before Me"* here does not mean simply all the people who lived in the ages before Jesus.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

It refers to the religious leaders who made up religions and ways of salvation by themselves, and led people, claiming that if one followed their teachings one would obtain salvation or liberation.

The reason He called them thieves and robbers is that they did not lead people to the true door of salvation but drew them to themselves. They had neither the ability to actually bear people's sins, nor the ability to receive the punishment for sin in their place, nor the ability to overcome death and give new life. Nevertheless, because they held on to people as if they themselves were the way of salvation, in the end they did not give life to souls but did the work of stealing, killing, and destroying.

Unlike them, Jesus Christ is not One who claimed the way of salvation only with words. In order to bear the sins of His own people, He came clothed in a human body, and through the baptism He received from John the Baptist He bore those sins on His own body once and for all. And He received on the Cross in their place the punishment that His own people had to receive and died, and rose again from the dead and actually became the Savior. Therefore Jesus Christ alone is the true door through which the sheep can obtain salvation, obtain life, and enter.

Therefore the standard of judgment in this word does not lie in whether someone established an old religion or how many followers he gained. It lies in whether he leads people to God through the salvation that Jesus Christ completed with His baptism, the Cross, and the resurrection. One who puts forward another way of salvation without passing through this door is not a shepherd who gives life to the sheep, but a thief and a robber. Because the sheep of God discern that that voice is not the voice of the Savior, they do not follow it to the end.

[Question] 6. In John 10:14–15, what is the reason Christ laid down His own life for the sheep?

Christ laid down His life for the sheep because they were His own sheep and were in a position where they would die and perish because of sin. A hireling abandons the sheep and flees when danger comes because the sheep are not his own possession, but because the good shepherd knows and loves His own sheep, He does not leave the sheep to die. Christ laid down His own life in order to bear in their place the death that the sheep had to receive.

In the word *"I know My sheep, and am known by My own,"* to 'know' is not merely knowing a name or circumstances as knowledge. It means a relationship deeply united in life and love, just as the Father knows the Son and the Son knows the Father. Christ knew how weak His own sheep were, in what sin they were, and that they could not get out of that sin and death by themselves. Therefore He had compassion on them and saved them Himself.

In order to bear the sins of the sheep, Christ received baptism from John, and in order to receive in their place the judgment of those sins, He gave up His own body on the Cross. Instead of the sheep dying because of sin, Christ died, and He delivered them from sin and destruction and had them obtain new life and eternal life. This was not that His life was taken from Him because He had no power; He laid down His life of Himself in order to bring the sheep to life.

Therefore the most fundamental reason Christ laid down His life lies in His knowing and loving His own sheep and wanting to save them from sin and give them life. The fact that He laid down His own life and brought the sheep to life clearly shows that Christ is the true and good shepherd.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

[Question] 7. In John 10:16, what does the word that other sheep which are not yet in the fold will come to form one flock teach?

"Other sheep I have which are not of this fold" refers to the souls who have not yet met Christ and have not yet come into the Church of God. It means that not only the people who were before His eyes at that time were the objects of the salvation of Christ, but that there are people in every part of the world, including other peoples and nations, who will hear the gospel and be saved. Christ already knew of their existence and regarded them as sheep He must surely lead.

This word first teaches the fact that the salvation of Christ is not limited to any one people or region. Even if people differ from one another in lineage and language, status and living environment, anyone can become a sheep of God if he hears the voice of Christ and believes in the salvation He accomplished. But it does not mean that all people automatically become one flock in their present state as they are. One must hear the voice of Christ and receive salvation by faith.

The way Christ leads the other sheep is by letting them hear His voice. That voice means the written word of God and the gospel of salvation. When the people who are still outside the fold hear the gospel and believe with the heart in the salvation that Jesus Christ accomplished, they receive the remission of sins and come into the Church of God.

Also, the word *"there will be one flock and one shepherd"* means that saved people, even if they have come from different peoples and nations, become one people who serve the one Jesus Christ as shepherd. Their oneness is not achieved by human organization or outward conditions, but by believing in the same salvation and following the voice of the same shepherd.

Therefore this word teaches that the church has the mission of spreading the gospel. Because even a person who is now outside and has lost his way and is wandering can hear the gospel and become a sheep of Christ, those who have been saved first must convey the voice of the shepherd to them. Through this work Christ calls souls from every part of the world and makes them one flock.

[Question] 8. In John 10:22, against what background did the Feast of Dedication arise?

The Feast of Dedication is the feast commemorating the recovery of the temple of Jerusalem, which had been defiled by Gentile powers, its cleansing and repair, and its restoration as the temple in which worship is offered to God. The name of this feast also carries the meaning of repairing the temple and offering it to God again.

When Israel had its nation taken away by foreign enemies, even the temple was invaded. The Gentiles served their own gods and burned incense inside the temple and defiled the temple of God. Afterward the people of Israel drove out the foreign enemies, cleansed the temple, and offered worship to God again, and in order to remember that event they came to keep the Feast of Dedication.

Therefore the Feast of Dedication is not a day that merely commemorates the repair of an old building. It is the feast commemorating the cleansing of the temple that had been defiled by idols, and the restoration of the worship that had been taken away and its being offered to God again. By saying, *"Now it was the Feast of Dedication in Jerusalem, and it was winter,"* the Gospel of John makes clear that the time when Jesus Christ

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

was in the temple, in Solomon's porch, was this feast.

[Question] 9. In John 10:25–28, when the Jews demanded that He tell them plainly whether He was the Christ, how did Christ answer?

The Jews surrounded Jesus Christ and demanded, *"If You are the Christ, tell us plainly."* To this, Christ first answered, *"I told you, and you do not believe."* It was not that they could not believe because He had not revealed who He was; it was that they had not believed even though He had already spoken and testified.

Christ said that not only His words but also His works bore witness of Him: *"The works that I do in My Father's name, they bear witness of Me."* The works He did in the name of the Father—opening the eyes of the blind, healing the sick, raising the dead, and so on—were proving the fact that He is the Christ whom God sent. Therefore it was not that they lacked testimony.

Concerning the fundamental reason they did not believe, Christ said, *"But you do not believe, because you are not of My sheep."* The sheep of the Lord recognize the voice of the shepherd and believe and follow it, but even though they had already witnessed His words and the works He did, they did not accept them. Their continued questioning was not so much because they did not know the truth as because they were unwilling to believe the words of Christ.

Then Christ also spoke of what kind of people His own sheep are and what blessing they receive. He said, *"My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me,"* and promised that because He gives them eternal life, they shall never perish and no one can snatch them out of the hand of Christ.

Therefore the answer of Christ does not stop merely at declaring that He is the Christ. He made clear the fact that His words and the works He did in the name of the Father already testify of that fact, and that the true sheep believe that testimony, follow, and obtain eternal life, but those who do not believe refuse even in the face of clear testimony.

[Question] 10. In John 10:40–42, after finishing the dispute with the Jews, where did Jesus go?

Jesus escaped from the hands of the Jews who were trying to seize Him and went beyond the Jordan. That was the place where John the Baptist was baptizing at first.

"And He went away again beyond the Jordan to the place where John was baptizing at first, and there He stayed" (John 10:40).

Jesus stayed there, and many people came to Jesus. They realized the fact that although John the Baptist had performed no sign, the words he spoke in testimony about Jesus were all true. As a result, many people there came to believe in Jesus.

Therefore the place Jesus went to was not merely a place where He stayed to escape persecution. In the place where John the Baptist had testified of Jesus from the beginning, his testimony was confirmed again, and the people who had heard that testimony came to believe in Jesus. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 1 by Paul C. Jong

The Lord, who became the true door of the sheep

< John 10:1-9 >

"'Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he who enters by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the doorkeeper opens, and the sheep hear his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. And when he brings out his own sheep, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice. Yet they will by no means follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers.' Jesus used this illustration, but they did not understand the things which He spoke to them. Then Jesus said to them again, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture.'"

The Lord, who has prepared all of our salvation

Today we have read the word of John chapter 10, verses 1 to 9. Looking at this word, we can see that the Lord has prepared everything concerning our salvation, and that He wanted to become our Savior and also become our shepherd and lead us.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

God the Father wanted, from before the foundation of the world, to become the true Savior of His people in Jesus Christ, and to become the shepherd who protects and leads us. And He hopes that we will truly know and believe it. He said, *"I am the door of the sheep. All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture,"* and I believe that everything is what the Lord has prepared for us.

God has prepared everything: that He would become our Savior and become our shepherd and keep and feed us, and make us children of God and let us enjoy glory. In fact, all we have to do is believe, but because there are those who believe and those who do not believe, this makes God's heart bitter and even grieves it. Everything was begun and planned by God, yet some people wholly believe and follow the word God has spoken, and some people do not believe and go out on a crooked path. The Lord has prepared everything and become our Savior and become our shepherd and fed us with pasture, and has done everything so that if we only believe, we can live and can be clothed in all glory. Yet I do not know why people do not believe it. It is beyond understanding what people think is so great about themselves that they do not believe, that they believe according to their own thoughts, that some things they filter and believe, and some things they believe excessively. As Jesus Christ said, those whom the Father draws believe in Jesus Christ as the Savior and follow Him, but some people do not believe. Because such people do not believe in God, they do not follow and do not pursue the voice of God.

God loves all of us mankind and has removed all sins. There is not a single person whom God has excluded. He loves all people and has saved them all, yet people, as if they were

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

something great, believe some things and do not believe others. What is more, they do that even with the matter of salvation. If the Lord has saved us with the water and the Spirit, if God has planned it and accomplished it all in Jesus Christ, we have nothing to do but believe. But people believe some things and do not believe others, and argue and make a fuss. It seems that God's heart must be truly grieved.

The Lord said that he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, is a thief and a robber. God planned before He created, and created, and did all of it in Jesus Christ, and it is the word that he who does not enter by the door, but climbs up some other way, is a thief and a robber. It is asking why one does not believe what God has done.

People believe in the theory that human nature is fundamentally good, or the theory that human nature is fundamentally evil, or the theory of evolution. Those who pretend to be smart say that Jesus is indeed our Savior, but that He saved us on the Cross, that He removed sin only with the Cross. There are people who, as it turns out, are extremely dull-headed but pretend to be smart. Those who do not believe the word of God, which is the word of Jesus Christ, pretend to be very smart though they are dull-headed. When one sees that, it is enough to make one feel frustrated.

This salvation is what God has done. It is what God planned, and He accomplished everything just as He planned and has completed our salvation. Then all we have to do is simply believe. Is that not so? All we have to do is believe, and all we have to do is accept it.

Faith that believes by one's own thoughts is not faith

In John chapter 3, Jesus spoke about the part where a person is born again. Looking at chapter 3, verses 1 to 3, Nicodemus came out and said to Jesus, *"No one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him."* What is shown here is that those who do not believe in God purely try to believe in Jesus by looking at signs and miracles and power in a fleshly way, with their own standard. Then Jesus said, *"Unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."* Being born again means being born from above. It means that God has a person born again from above, and so it means that God the Father removes our sins through His Son and has us born again if we only believe.

But Nicodemus's interest was not in the work God does, but in the fact that, as he saw it, Jesus was respectable. So he believes some things and does not believe others. Nicodemus asked, *"How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?" (John 3:4)*. Some people even say nonsensical things about being born again, such as that one is born again by the amniotic fluid in a woman's womb, or that one lives on the amniotic fluid. Our Lord said, *"Unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God" (John 3:5)*. What is being born of water and the Spirit? It is the word that God came to this earth clothed in human flesh, bore all our sins by receiving baptism from John, died on the Cross, and rose again from the dead, and so saved us from sin. Believing this is precisely being born again of water and the Spirit. It is not that one must enter one's mother's womb again and come out, as Nicodemus said.

A person who believes in God has only to know what God has done for us and believe it with thanks. It is not that one

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

believes because one thinks to oneself that God probably made this world, but that because it says, *"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Genesis 1:1)*, because it is written that God created, one believes it just as it is. That is faith.

Believing what God has done is faith, and believing what God will do is faith. But the Lord said that if people do not enter by the door of the sheep but climb over the side and go over the wall, or enter some other way, or enter through a rat hole, they are a thief and a robber. God planned our salvation, and just as He planned, in Jesus Christ He received baptism from John, died on the Cross, and rose again from the dead, and so has saved us. Therefore, it is by believing what the Lord has done that we become children of God; can we do anything for our own salvation? We can do nothing. It is a fact that even a small child knows.

Nevertheless, foolish people among men do not believe this. They say, "I believe what makes sense to me when I think about it, and I do not believe what does not make sense," but that is not faith. It is not true faith.

That is just like Nicodemus giving Jesus a generous score. It is exactly the same as saying, "If God were not with You, You could not do such signs." And it means that it is like asking, when told that a person must be born again to see the kingdom of God, whether one must then enter one's mother's womb again and come out. That amounts to believing in God, believing in Jesus, and believing in the way of salvation on the basis of one's own thoughts.

Because such a person believes by his own thoughts, even though the Lord has become the door of our salvation and our Savior, he does not obtain salvation by believing the word He spoke and the work He has done, but tries to obtain salvation by his own thoughts. That is why God says that he is a thief, a

robber. It is saying, how can you receive when I have not even given, and when I have said that I have done it, all you have to do is believe, so why do you argue this way and that with your own thoughts and quibble over whether to believe or not?

On this earth there are many people who, even though God has spoken to every human being and promised and fulfilled it, cannot believe or believe by their own thoughts. So there are many thieves and robbers before God. It is so even among those who believe in Jesus. Such people are far removed, and they dislike mixing with the righteous and dislike hearing the voice of the righteous, too.

Everything is in the hands of God

Everything is entirely in the hands of God. All sovereignty, all plans, and the fulfillment of everything are all in the hands of God. That is why those who believe in God teach that life and death, the most important matter in our human life, depend on God. The saying that a man's life is in the hands of Heaven is also such a word. Man merely strives as God has said, and the One who fulfills it is God. Any plan whatever is fulfilled by God; it is not that man does something.

Our salvation is the same. There are truly many people on this earth who believe in Jesus. Since God has already planned all of salvation, too, and created and fulfilled it, all one has to do is believe, but people, as if they were so smart, quibble and say, "This is right and that is not right; I cannot believe this because it does not make sense; this does not fit the doctrine and does not fit reason." It is such people that He calls a thief and a robber. What is theft? It is being a thief. However weak and beautiful a woman may be, if she is caught stealing, she is called a thief all

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the same. Man or woman, there is nothing to do but believe just as God has done it. Does salvation come about however hard we may try? Can one save oneself from one's own sins? It is not that it goes as we please, whether we believe this way or that way; we must believe just as God has done it. That is the easiest way.

Do not grieve the heart of God

As I look at the Bible, I think like this. God has done everything; He has made the door of the sheep, made the sheepfold, and standing at the door, saying, "Go in, come out, follow Me," He feeds them with pasture and gives them water and does everything.

As for our salvation, too, God the Father sent His only Son to this earth, had Him receive baptism from John, had Him die on the Cross, and raised Him, and so has completely saved us. If we only believe, we can enter that sheepfold and can also be protected. The Lord also becomes our shepherd, yet some people come before Him and stand their ground and say that they will not believe. It is that they say, "When I think about it, it seems that our Savior is not like that." It is that, looking at the life of some thirty years that Jesus lived after coming to this earth, He seems like a country bumpkin, and so they do not like Him.

It is that, to be our Savior, He should have been at least the emperor of Rome, saying, "My word is law," wearing a crown, wearing a big gold ring, stamping His seal, and having dignity. But Jesus was born as the son of a carpenter and did carpentry, went about without even an occupation to boast of, and was not educated, so how, they say, can they believe in Him as the Savior? Because of the pride of thinking that their own thoughts

themselves are higher than God and that they are smarter than God, these people do not believe in God and so are not saved, and that is truly pitiful.

And it truly grieves the heart of God. God planned to give us salvation, sent Jesus Christ, and after saving us with the water and the Spirit, opened the way of grace by which one becomes a child of God if one only believes. But when people do not believe and so are not saved, and only scheme this way and that and make a fuss, God's heart is grieved. God could simply do away with those who do not believe at once, but because those human lives are pitiful, God's heart is grieved.

That is why God has left this Bible with us and speaks to us. Since the Lord said, *"I am the door of the sheep" (John 10:7)*, it is like an owner building a sheepfold, making a fence and making a door, and standing there and keeping the wolves from entering and letting only the sheep enter. We were all like wolves, but the Lord saved us and makes us sheep. Even one who came as a wolf can at once be changed into a sheep and enter, if he only believes in his heart that our Lord has saved that person with the water and the Spirit.

But when people quibble over something and do not believe, how grieved must God's heart be? The Lord said that His people, even after being born again, rejoice in the voice of God. They rejoice in the work God does. Since the gospel is being spread throughout the whole world, it is joyful and good, is it not? It is good. If someone says it is not good, that is a thief and a robber. It amounts to his having come in though it is not even his own house.

On this earth, how many are there who believe that Jesus came by the water and the Spirit and saved us from sin? The population of this city is 200,000, and those who believe in Jesus would be about a tenth of that, some 20,000. Then among those

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

20,000, how many people really believe what God has done? It is that God's heart is grieved because those who so believe are few. Because such a person does not believe, his heart feels cursed, he feels as if he lives all alone, he is weary and irritable, he keeps complaining, and the work of God comes to displease him. If the work God does displeases one, and the work of God's spreading the gospel hardly pleases one, then there is a problem.

However lacking one may be, one must believe. If one is inside the sheepfold and yet does not believe and stays like a goat, God's heart is grieved. It is not that God loves some and hates others; He loves everyone, but because a person does not believe, because he rejects the love God has given and rejects the blessing He has given, God hates him. As in the story of the prince and the pauper, when a prince leaves home and lives like a beggar, and refuses even though the king provides many things for him, that is naturally hateful.

What grieves the heart of God most is the person who does not believe. Who is the most undutiful child? The person who does not believe. Who is the wickedest person? The person who does not believe in the salvation God has given him and does not believe in Jesus. That person is the wickedest person and the most undutiful child. One must believe. He said, *"He who enters by the door is the shepherd of the sheep" (John 10:2)*. He said, *"To him the doorkeeper opens, and the sheep hear his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out" (John 10:3).*

It means that the Lord knows all His own sheep. Our Lord, in order to give us salvation, completed it and went up to the kingdom of heaven. If we believe in that Jesus Christ, we also enter. We enter by believing in Jesus Christ, who removed our sins with the water and the Spirit, as our Savior. And we receive His guidance. But what is truly regrettable is the fact that

although the sheep do not follow a false shepherd, a person who has not become a sheep before God through faith does not follow the voice of Jesus Christ, who has become our shepherd.

One knows the tree by looking at its fruit

The Lord said that whether we have been saved can be judged by whether we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit or not. But there is a way to examine oneself once more even while saying that one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that is knowing the tree by looking at its fruit.

The point is whether, though our hearts are lacking, we really want to follow and do follow, whether we take part with our hearts and pursue with thanks and faith, or whether we keep getting irritated and the work of God itself grates on us. Humanly, after going through something that gets on one's nerves, there are times when one gets irritable about the gospel and everything else and wants to quit it all. Even so, is one glad in one's heart when this gospel is spread, even though one does not do well oneself, or is one fundamentally not glad, and a grating feeling arises, and one dislikes the spreading of the gospel? If a feeling of rejection rises up within one's heart, that person is not a sheep of the shepherd, and so he must believe in Jesus Christ. Only when one believes does one's disposition change and the Holy Spirit dwell in that heart, so that one can rejoice together in what the Lord rejoices in and dislike together what He dislikes. One knows the tree by looking at its fruit.

Though we are lacking, we rejoice in spreading the gospel. Is that not so? When one's body is sick, an irritable feeling may arise, but if one fundamentally hates the spreading of the gospel like an enemy, that person is absolutely not a born-again person.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

When a person is driven to desperation and gets irritable, that can happen, but if from the deep root of one's heart there is a heart that does not rejoice in what the Lord rejoices in and rejoices in what the Lord does not rejoice in, that person is not of the same people as the Lord. That person must believe in Jesus with his heart, even now. If he does not believe even now, the Lord's heart is grieved and the Lord is troubled.

The Lord says like this repeatedly in the Bible. We must know the heart of the Lord, who said, *"I am the door of the sheep. All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture" (John 10:7–9)*. The Lord saves us from sin, and when we come in and go out, He gives us pasture and makes us full and makes us fat and has us live blessedly.

But a person who does not know the Lord is not inside that sheepfold; his heart has gone elsewhere, and he enjoys self-satisfaction there. That is a forced life of faith. In fact, as we now work to spread this gospel to the whole world and also to preach the gospel in our own country, there are times when we do not understand why on earth we have to do this in this way.

I myself, too, have times when I do not understand while serving the Lord. There are truly many times when I ask why I have to do it this way, why I have to do it again, why I have to preach the same content this way and that way, why I have to pray. But why do we do so? Is it not because the Lord is within us, because the Holy Spirit is within us, and it is pitiful and heartbreaking and piteous that souls go to hell? To print about ten thousand copies of one kind of book costs 15 million won. These days, the businesses have lowered their unit prices, so it sometimes costs about 13 million won. Dear fellow believers, is that a small amount of money? Printing and distributing them

also costs money again. Printing books abroad and so on costs about 200 million won a month. Is that a trifling amount of money? But why do we do so? It is because the Holy Spirit is within us.

As I look at this word, I think like this. The Lord made the universe and all things in it, and made man, too, and in order to make man the people of God, had him go through a trial for a little while, and then sent the Son of God and had Him receive baptism from John, and He was crucified and received the judgment for sin, and rose again from the dead and so saved us from all sins, so that if we only believe, He has made us children of God.

This was the will of God, and it is beyond understanding why people do not believe this and so grieve the heart of the Creator and, far from a blessing, receive a curse. We must think how grieved the heart of God must be, having to pronounce a curse and send people to hell. Those who say they will go to hell even go so far as to insist that they would rather go to hell, since they will have many friends going there. Think about it a little. Would God rejoice at our going to hell? Would He rejoice at our not becoming children of God? Would He rejoice at our suffering? God frets, saying, why do you not believe it, you foolish ones? A person who knows this gospel and yet does not believe is naturally more hateful than anyone in the world.

How grieved must God's heart be? For He has to send people to hell, where the devil goes. The devil became what he is when an angel fell and challenged God head-on, so he may rightly be sent to hell, but man was originally made weak, and it is pitiful enough that he suffers and lives a hard life on this earth, so if God has no choice but to send him to hell, how grieved must His heart be? Yet it is beyond understanding why people do not believe and so try to go to hell. The Lord told us to keep chewing

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the cud of this gospel, as a cow chews the cud.

Is it difficult for us to believe? Is it difficult to believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit? All one has to do is simply hear it and say, "Ah, so that is how it is," and without putting in a single bit of one's own thoughts, wholly say amen and believe. Saying, "So that is how You saved me. I believe," is believing. When the people of Israel were bitten by fiery serpents while living in the wilderness, God said to Moses, *"Make a fiery serpent, and set it on a pole; and it shall be that everyone who is bitten, when he looks at it, shall live" (Numbers 21:8)*, and Moses made a bronze serpent and set it on a pole. Everyone who looked at it was healed.

The Lord, being the doorkeeper, says, look only at Me; I have removed all your sins. He says, I was born on this earth and bore all your sins by receiving baptism from John, was crucified and died for your sins, and rose again and became your Savior; go ahead and look at Me. If one only looks and believes, all is done, so what is the hidden motive in not looking and not believing?

This word in John chapter 10 is such a word. The Lord said that He is the door of the sheep. It is the word that we were like wolves, but He became the door that makes us sheep and lets us in. Since the Lord said, *"I am the way, the truth, and the life,"* He has become the way by which we can go to the kingdom of heaven. He has become the way by which we can receive the remission of sins, and has become the way by which we can become children of God. The Lord Himself has become the door.

The faith that keeps insisting that it says ‘Utility pole’

But some stubborn people, once they know one thing, keep insisting that only that is the truth. Wherever they go, they make everything fit that one thing. Long ago, there were two brothers who could not read. The elder brother went out, earned some money, and came back for the holidays. The younger brother asked the elder what the sign posted between the utility poles said. What was written was ‘Watch for fire,’ but since the elder brother could not read a single word either, he thought quietly. Counting the words, he saw there were three, and since it was hung between the utility poles, he said, “It says ‘The utility pole.’” The younger brother, not knowing any better anyway, said, “That’s right, utility pole! Our big brother is amazing.”

As the two of them went up a mountain, another sign written ‘Watch for fire’ appeared. When the younger brother asked, “Big brother, what do those words say?” the elder said, “Count the words. One, two, three—it fits exactly. That one says ‘The utility pole,’ too.” Going up further, this time a sign written ‘Look again even at a fire that has gone out’ appeared. When the younger brother asked, the elder said, “Haven’t utility poles kept appearing as we go up the mountain? They keep appearing, don’t they? It just means ‘More utility poles.’” The younger brother, trusting his elder brother’s every word, looked up to him greatly. It amounts to fitting everything, whatever appeared, to the one thing: utility poles.

Those who believe that one receives the remission of sins by offering prayers of repentance are also like this. What does one do if one commits sin after believing in Jesus? They say, offer prayers of repentance. What does one do if one commits actual sins again after that? They say, offer prayers of repentance while

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

fasting and praying. They stick to prayers of repentance unconditionally. They are of the sort that says, "You must believe unconditionally, you must offer prayers of repentance unconditionally, you must be sanctified unconditionally, and you must handle it yourself." It is like insisting that whatever appears, it keeps saying 'Utility pole.'

That is faith that believes with one's own thoughts, not faith that believes according to the word of God. I want to ask why they do not believe. I do not know why they do not believe and so grieve the heart of God, and why they do not believe and so do not receive the Holy Spirit and do not come to have the same heart as God. It says, *"For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son" (John 3:16)*, and how much must He have loved us, to have sent His only Son to this earth to save us from sin? We must know that in our hearts.

God existed, and He is alive even now, and He has recorded His word in the Bible, so all we have to do is hear and believe according to that word. If we simply believe according to the word, we become children of God, and God's heart is not grieved either. And as we come out to church and go in, God fills us with food for the heart and food for the body. The word that one will go in and out and find pasture is the word that because we have become the Lord's sheep, the Lord takes responsibility.

It may seem that I am speaking harshly today, but it is not because I am stressed. What stresses me most is that people cannot believe even when I tell them like this. When foreigners are told to summarize and send it in, they summarize it better than we do and send it in, but the people of our country are truly remarkable people. I am also a person of our country, but if a foreigner came and said what I say, the people of our country would believe it at once. But when a person of our own country

says the same thing, they do not believe. Even the same words, if spoken plainly, they do not believe them, but if spoken fluently and in difficult English, they say amen, amen, without even knowing the meaning. It is truly frustrating.

It says that the Lord became the door of the sheep. The Lord Himself made the sheepfold and became the door, and had us receive the remission of sins and become children of God. Yet I do not know why people do not believe and make a fuss and are all in an uproar trying to make something new. Seeing such people, the Holy Spirit grieves. That is the heart of God. God says, "Because I do not want you to go to hell, because I do not want you to be cursed, please receive the blessing; if you believe what I give, you become a child of God and receive the remission of all your sins." I say this every day as I do the work of revising documents. Even when I think that if they cannot believe even after being given this much, there is nothing to be done, because my heart aches, I end up telling them to believe.

The sheep that recognize the voice of their owner and follow

Let me talk about sheep and goats. A goat, too, obeys its owner well. Only, a goat does not obey when its owner leads it from the front. If the owner puts the goat in front and drives it from behind, saying, "Let's go, let's go," it goes well, but if someone leads it from the front, it never follows. If one puts a ring through its nose and pulls until it tears, it is dragged along by human strength, but it braces its four legs and does not follow. Long ago I raised some goats on an island, and whenever I went near, this goat would raise its front legs high and charge at me to butt me. One day, since there was no one on the mountain and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

no one to watch, I thought I would stand up to it for once, and I, too, stood facing it and held my ground, and this goat thrust its horns at me and butted me so hard that my head swelled up. I, too, got stubborn, and grabbed its horns firmly and pushed hard, bending its head back with all my strength, and only then did it run off and come along. The one that never followed when I went ahead goes well when, from behind, one says, “Hey, let’s go graze on grass.” That is a goat. Sheep, too, do not obey well. Even when led from the front they do not come well, and even when driven from behind they do not go well. But they are less so than goats, and when one says, “Let’s go, let’s go,” they hold out for a while and then follow.

A person who has not been born again dislikes it and does not do it when told to do it, and yet does it well when left alone. A person who does not believe the word of God but says he has been saved by believing in Jesus according to his own thoughts becomes zealous when left alone, and makes a fuss, saying he does not like it, when led. A person who tries not to listen is in fact not one of the people of God. That is why he dislikes listening.

The characteristic of us born-again people is that even when we do not listen for a while, we listen once we know it is the word of God. Even while grumbling, if told that it is the word of God, we say, “All right.” If asked, “Shall we do it this way?” we say, “All right.” What is a sheep before the Lord? A sheep is a being that recognizes the owner’s voice and follows when the owner calls. What is different about us, though we live just like the people of this world, is that when God speaks, we believe in our hearts and follow. But a person who does not believe, however much one speaks to him, does not follow or unite, but goes on a crooked path.

As I look at this word and preach it, I wonder why people do

not believe, when all they have to do is believe what God has done, just as it is. There are people who say, “I believed this way long ago, so why must I believe this way again? Why must I hear this again?” But for the sheep, even if this word is spoken today, and the gospel of the water and the Spirit is preached again tomorrow, and preached again the day after, it is new every time they hear it. Is that not so? Every time they hear it, it is new and it is chewed as the cud and it is good. But what about the goats? They say, “There he goes again; I am sick of hearing it; is that all there is?” Dear fellow believers, since that is all that is written in the Bible, what can we do but preach it? Shall I preach philosophically instead of preaching this word of God?

The people of God who chew the cud of the word

In fact, whether one is a sheep or a goat can be distinguished by whether one gladly accepts the word of the Lord when one hears it, or whether one fundamentally says no deep in one’s heart. According to whether one has the exact opposite heart, saying no in one’s heart to what the Bible says is right, and saying yes in one’s heart to what the Bible says is not, one can distinguish whether one is now a goat or a sheep. How is it in your hearts? Does it become amen deep in your hearts that our Lord loved us and removed all our sins with the water and the Spirit and made us children of God? Does it seem right to you? Yes, it does.

When one has not received the remission of sins, if some truth is spoken, even though one says it is right because it is right in one’s thinking, deep in one’s heart one regards it as not so. It always turns out that way. For a person who does not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, a person who knows it

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

only as theory, the affirmative comes out as the negative and the negative comes out as the affirmative. I, too, after meeting the Lord, may fail to follow well because my heart is lacking, but if the word is affirmative, I believe it is affirmative, and if it is negative, I believe it is negative, and I follow. But before I was born again, my heart was opposed.

I hope that as we face this Bible, we will become those who really believe. If we believe, it is good for us, and God is pleased, too. Why would we do what God dislikes? All people, too, must now become believers, and we, though we have already believed, must firm up our hearts once more and become believers. A person who really does not believe, a person who does not chew the cud, a person who dislikes chewing the cud may be a goat, not a sheep.

Sheep graze on grass and chew it inside and chew the cud. Cows, too, chew and chew the cud. They keep it inside and then bring it back up and chew it again. Pigs do not chew the cud. They say that a cow also gets sick when it cannot properly chew the cud of what it has eaten and what it has stored inside rots. What do we do after eating the word of God? We chew the cud. We chew the cud again of the word we heard when we gathered. That is how we have become a clean people before God. A person who cannot chew the cud and complains that the sermon already preached is being preached again is not one of the people of God, but is one who must now believe. Since God has done it all, all one has to do is believe. I hope you will not grieve the heart of God.

We believe. It is only that we do not have much knowledge of the Bible, but we believe the word we have heard. We believe that our Lord became the door of the sheep, became the shepherd, became our Savior, and made us the people of God. Do you believe? Amen. Also, wherever the Lord leads, we follow.

Though we are lacking, we follow. The Lord takes responsibility for everything of ours and leads us and blesses us. We hope that the gospel will be spread throughout the whole world. We hope that the gospel will be spread in our country, too. We give thanks before the Lord, who accomplished all our salvation and clothed us with that salvation so that we could obtain salvation by only believing, truly purely, without any effort on our part. I will close the word here. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 2 by Paul C. Jong

In this age we must accomplish the reformation of faith

< John 10:1-16 >

"'Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he who enters by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the doorkeeper opens, and the sheep hear his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. And when he brings out his own sheep, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice. Yet they will by no means follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers.' Jesus used this illustration, but they did not understand the things which He spoke to them. Then Jesus said to them again, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep. All who ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture. The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep. But a hireling, he who is not the shepherd, one who does not own the sheep, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and flees; and the wolf catches

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

the sheep and scatters them. The hireling flees because he is a hireling and does not care about the sheep. I am the good shepherd; and I know My sheep, and am known by My own. As the Father knows Me, even so I know the Father; and I lay down My life for the sheep. And other sheep I have which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they will hear My voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd.'"

I feel that the weather is so hot that it is hard to breathe. It is hard beyond what words can express. I suspect that it is even harder for you and for the churches across the country. So I think that rather than only saying it is hard, we should just work all the harder. Because it is harder if one stays still, and time keeps passing if one is absorbed in the work one has been given, that is how I am living.

Now is the time to carry out the reformation of faith

We need a reformation of faith. The religious reformers say that they carry out a religious reformation, but you and I must carry out the reformation of faith. It means that we must correct again the faith we had before and believe rightly. Looking at it historically, everyone should know the evil deeds of the Roman emperor Constantine.

The Roman emperor issued the Edict of Milan in A.D. 313. He issued the Edict of Milan and proclaimed freedom for Christians, and history records that because of this the early Church came to be bound to the Roman state and turned into the religion of the Roman state. And in 325 he established the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Nicene Creed in the region of Nicaea, and this is the greatest thing among the things the emperor Constantine did. At that time, while the faith of those who believed in Jesus was not being unified into one, a Christian leader named Arius threw out a question during the religious council. It is the question, "Is Jesus really a created being, or is He God?" Of course He is God. The name "Jesus" means "Savior," and "Christ" means "the Anointed One," that is, the Messiah.

When, after the Edict of Milan was issued, the people who had obtained religious freedom gathered and there was great confusion, Constantine the Great himself convened a religious council in the region of Nicaea in 325. And concerning the question of Arius, he himself judged and he himself made the decision. It means that, while knowing nothing at all about Jesus, he himself convened the council, sat himself in the judgment seat and judged, saying, "That is wrong, this is right," made a Nicene Creed, and decided himself that this was the real faith. This is the most evil thing among the things this man did.

The baptism Jesus received from John, which was left out of the Nicene Creed

Looking at the Nicene Creed this man made, from the fact that Jesus received baptism from John and had the sin of the world transferred to Him, was crucified and died and rose again, and became our Savior, they left out the baptism Jesus received from John. If the gospel of the water and the Spirit is one sentence, then that Jesus received baptism from John the Baptist and had the sin of the world transferred to Him and bore it, was hung on the Cross, and rose again from the dead and became our Savior—this is one sentence, and it is the fact that they cut off

half of it. It is that they left out Jesus' having received baptism and having the sin of the world transferred to Him, and summed it up as Jesus' having been hung on the Cross and become our Savior. This is the Nicene Creed.

The emperor Constantine made the Nicene Creed and did various things and then died. After that, between A.D. 379 and 395, when an emperor named Theodosius I reigned, an edict was issued at Thessalonica. He issued an edict that only those who follow the Nicene Creed are orthodox Christianity and all the rest are not, established it as law, and enforced it as it stood. Such measures tell us that the Roman emperor, going beyond the role of a mere patron of believers, came to sit in the seat of the highest authority, becoming the judge who would decide what orthodox Christianity is.

The early Church preached the gospel that Jesus gave us salvation, was hung on the Cross and died, rose again and ascended, and promised to come again—the gospel that the disciples of Jesus held—and in that way maintained the faith from A.D. 30 until 313. But it means that the Roman emperor, while drawing Christianity into his own state, while saying that he was giving religious freedom, changed the framework of their faith. Originally it was the framework of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but he left out Jesus' having the sin of the world transferred to Him by the baptism of John the Baptist, changed it into the framework that Jesus was hung on the Cross and saved us, had them accept that, and made it the state religion of the Roman state.

And at that time the disciples of Jesus were no longer alive, and there were the Church Fathers, but he kept even those Church Fathers from speaking and made the decisions himself. Saying, "This is right, this is wrong." Since he himself knew nothing, what he did was this. Ancient Greece was a land of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

philosophy, and at that time a syncretic philosophy, made by adding new things to the existing philosophy, was in vogue among philosophers. He called those people and told them to make a Christian doctrine that could blend the early Christian faith and other religions into one, and what they made is the Nicene Creed. He himself told them to make it, and with the finished product he put a full stop to it, saying, this is the orthodox faith.

Rome, which brought down the early Church with the whip and the carrot

Who could refuse the Nicene Creed, which the emperor made by convening a religious council and through the people under him? The emperor called this the faith of the early Church, so who could refuse it? Some of the leaders who held the faith of the early Church refused it, but they ended up vanishing like dew on the execution ground. They were all seized and killed. And he carried out a policy of appeasement. To those who responded to the religious policy the Roman emperor carried out, he gave houses and gave high offices, built chapels for them, and bestowed many benefits on the children of Christians.

But to those who refused and went against the word of the Roman emperor he gave death, and killed them miserably. Whether by executing them publicly or by burning them at the stake, he killed them that cruelly. Because he carried out the policy of the whip and the carrot, not a single person could refuse. Yet there were occasionally people who refused and died, and since a person, even if he himself could die, could not bear to see his own child die, they took that child first and killed him. It is saying, “Will you still refuse, even so?” So from the

standpoint of those parents it was extremely hard, and because this was the work of the emperor, they came to a situation where they had to choose only one of two things: either keep their mouths shut and believe only in their hearts, or refuse and give glory to God and die.

As for the Roman emperors, Constantine died and Theodosius I also died, but before they died they set up the system of the church. They set up a bishop as the representative of a province, and also set up an archbishop, and even the pope; they established a hierarchy like this. And the emperor himself became the supreme leader, the supreme head of the church, and handed that down to those under him, and later they established the papal system. It means that from A.D. 590 to 604 the pope became like an actual political ruler and took on a system like that of a secular state, and in the eleventh century A.D. the pope had the authority both to set up and to depose the kings of the world.

So the early Church was brought down because of the Roman emperors. It was brought down like this, but the one thing that continued to be maintained is the fact that the Nicene Creed, which the emperor Constantine had people make, was adopted as the gospel of the orthodox church. In accordance with his policy of appeasement, the mouths of the believers of the early Church were completely sealed, and now they became loyal dogs of Rome. Just as dogs are loyal to their master, those who held the Christian faith did as the Roman emperor ordered, believed just as he made the creed, abandoned what they had believed, and became the dogs of the Roman emperor. It has been 1,700 years since it became so.

Since the Nicene Creed was made in A.D. 325, now in 2025 it has been exactly 1,700 years that, in Catholicism and Christianity, the Nicene Creed made by the Roman emperor has

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

been the orthodox gospel. The baptism of Jesus is missing from it. A false religion became the faith of Christianity and drove out the true truth.

That is why we must accomplish the reformation of faith in this age. Before the Lord, we must testify of this whether people believe it or not. I spoke of this before, too, but because people's opposition was so severe, I said only a little. If you look at the book Return to the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit, it speaks of such things. What did the religious reformers do after coming out of Catholicism? There is nothing at all, is there?

Learning theological thought is not learning the Bible

Go ahead and think about it. Long ago, when Jesus was here, the disciples learned under Jesus. After Jesus died and rose again and went up to heaven, people heard the gospel from the disciples of Jesus and learned and believed. After the disciples of Jesus were martyred and gone, those who had learned under them, and then those who had learned under those, began to preach this gospel. But it means that from that time the corruption of the gospel came. As the Roman pope began to use Christianity as his own political tool, he corrupted the gospel, and they began to use this to gain their own profit. They set up their own seminaries and theologians, and made it so that only those who graduated from there could receive ordination and do the ministry.

So, in those days, did countless people have to spread what they had learned in the seminary? When they went out and did the ministry that way, money came in, and the money that came in all became theirs. In those days the system was set up that way.

Then what about Christianity today? It is exactly the same. Those who make and teach Christian doctrine are the theologians. Those theologians have made the seminaries. So it means that it has become an age in which, to preach the word of God, one must graduate from that seminary, and only by spreading what one learned there does one avoid becoming a heretic and receive recognition, a stipend, and good treatment.

Originally, the gospel learned from Jesus is not something that comes about by learning doctrine, but something that comes about by believing with the heart, and when the Holy Spirit comes upon one through believing with the heart, the desire to testify of this gospel rises up. Such people lead the church and become evangelists, become missionaries, and become ministers. Originally it should be that way. What one learns by going to seminary is theological thought. So it is of no use. It has nothing to do with the Bible.

To give one example, in the five points of Calvin's doctrine there is what is called total depravity. It says, "Because man's heart has been defiled from birth, he is a totally depraved human being who can neither do good nor live virtuously, and so he must believe in Jesus," and that is a correct word. But John Wesley, of the Methodist line, with what is called Arminianism, is not like that. It is the claim that "man is only half depraved; he has in his nature both what is right and what is not." Theological thought and doctrine all differ like this. If one goes to seminary, one learns only such things. They teach what Wesley's thought says, and if told to discuss Wesley's theological thought, one discusses it, and in conservatism, if told to discuss Calvinism, one discusses it, and if one passes there, one is recognized and later receives ordination as a pastor. There is no learning of the Bible. The real thing is that one should learn the Bible, but they do not learn the Bible. So during worship,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

during the sermon, they do not talk about the Bible.

Christianity, which fails to be the light of the world

So Christianity has come down 1,700 years to this day. In the course of that, Catholicism, continuing for a thousand years, completely became the Dark Ages. It became a dark religion that took people's money, and if they did not obey, branded them as heretics and seized and killed them and took their property. It has been five hundred years since Christianity came out of there. But is there any place in the whole world where Christianity is recognized by people? In our country, too, there are so many anti-Christians. If someone says he goes to church, people turn away and shudder.

In the old days, if a merchant kept a Bible in his shop while doing business, people thought, "Ah, that man must be a Christian," and bought that shop's goods. But these days, if one keeps a Bible in the shop, people treat one as a thief instead, and so the goods do not sell. Since we, too, are people within Christianity, I do not like to talk about it, because to keep talking about it is to disparage ourselves, but it means that many anti-Christians are arising. Why do people not go to church? The reasons for not going to church vary endlessly: they overemphasize offerings, those people's words and deeds differ, however much one believes in Jesus, sin does not disappear, one cannot stand the sight of church members, and so on.

If one goes to prison, there are many people who went to prison while believing in Jesus. If only a pastor goes there, it becomes a church. There are elders, there are deacons, there are believers; people who used to go to church are all over the place. The church should be the light of the world, but it fails to be the

light. Why is that? Because they have not received the remission of sins in their hearts, and so they do not have the Holy Spirit. So they want to live rightly but cannot live rightly. We must believe that Jesus received baptism from John and took over our sins, that is, had them transferred to Him, and by that faith have our sins washed away. And we must believe that Jesus was hung on the Cross and shed His precious blood and died, and rose again and ascended to heaven, and is the Lord of the second coming who will come again, and so become those who are saved from the judgment for our sins. But it is the fact that Christianity today is not so. That is why Christianity has been ruined.

Now the small churches have closed their doors because of COVID-19. Among the people who were there, many go out as day laborers doing odd jobs to make a living. But looking at the large churches that appear on Christian broadcasts, there are churches in our country with attendance of a hundred thousand each. Those people must find laughter welling up inside as they preach. In a church where a hundred thousand come, even if each person gives only ten thousand won in offerings, it is a billion won. Those in difficult circumstances would give a little, but anyone who claims to have even a little faith must pay tithes and must give thanksgiving offerings, and with this and that, taking an average, they would give at the very least fifty thousand won each, so it is five billion won. When those people receive money like that, do they help the churches that have closed? There may be some part where they help, but many churches have closed their doors just as they are and cannot get up again. I cannot know it all and have not been there, so I do not know it well.

It is that these days the church is becoming not the light of the world but the darkness of the world. Church pastors wear neckties, their outward appearance is respectable, and their

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

voices are smooth, so there is nothing painful for them. The pastors of old had hardships, too, but now the church buys them a car, gives them education expenses, gives them food, and expenses under every kind of pretext all come out. And on top of that, a monthly stipend of at the least several million won and at the most several tens of millions of won comes out, and this is something one can scarcely see in the world. And yet, how much do they live preaching the word and preaching the gospel for people and doing good deeds? They are crazy only about securing their own profit.

A sister in England read three English books and sent in her impressions of them. As she talked, pointing out the passages where the author had said good words, she said that in some parts the author speaks bluntly, and that she likes that point best. It is that she likes his speaking of things just as they are, just as the facts are, without dressing them up beautifully or embellishing them. In a way, people find such words hard. But what is wrong with the word that if one has sin, one goes to hell? The wages of sin is death, and does one not go to hell? But people do not say so. As far as they can, they do not say that one goes to hell. But I do. And I say openly, "If you believe this gospel, you become righteous; you become a person who has no sin at all."

The reason people feel attracted to our books is that they tell things that precisely. Ordinary ministers speak of the same truth in a roundabout, embellished way, so the reader struggles, wondering, "What does this word mean? Does it mean this, or does it mean that?"

The sheep recognize the voice of the shepherd

We must carry out the reformation of faith. Looking at the

word of John chapter 10, verses 1 to 5, which we read today, the Lord said that he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, is a thief and a robber. To enter into the Church of God, one must believe that Jesus had the sin of the world transferred to Him by receiving baptism from John, shed His blood and died on the Cross, and rose again from the dead and became our Savior. Not believing like this, but climbing up some other way that is not the door, is like going over the wall to get in. Do thieves not usually go over the wall of someone else's house to get in? Do they not get in that way and steal and rob? It was precisely this that Jesus was speaking about. Jesus said, I am the door of the sheep and the shepherd. So it is the word that when someone like a thief who does not tend the sheep calls, the sheep do not know that voice and all run away.

Jesus says in verses 14 and 15, *"I am the good shepherd; and I know My sheep, and am known by My own. As the Father knows Me, even so I know the Father; and I lay down My life for the sheep."* Jesus laid down His life for His own sheep. Why did He lay it down? Because He had the sins of His own sheep transferred to Him by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, He laid down His own life. He laid down His life and saved us and became our shepherd.

And Jesus says in verse 16, *"And other sheep I have which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they will hear My voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd."* It is the word that there are many people who do not yet believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Church of God believes. It is the will of God to preach the gospel fully to these people, too, so that they also come in and receive the remission of sins, and become one flock with the people of God and belong to one shepherd.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Let us read John 10:3. *"To him the doorkeeper opens, and the sheep hear his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out."* Dear fellow believers, have you ever raised an animal? When one raises a dog, one gives it a name and cherishes it, and the moment the dog hears its master's voice, it wags its tail and is glad. Because it knows its master, who loves it and feeds it and rescues it when it falls into danger, it is beside itself with joy when it sees its master.

Jesus is the doorkeeper of the sheep. Just as it says, *"To him the doorkeeper opens" (John 10:3)*, Jesus opened the door and gave us salvation. Do we not know that Jesus has become our Savior? Jesus received baptism from John and had the sin of the world transferred onto His own body, was crucified in our place, and rose again from the dead and became our Savior. Do we not know and believe that Lord, who is alive even now? Because we know the voice of the Lord, we believe this gospel and live on this earth. When we face hard things, we pray, and we live desiring and doing what the Lord rejoices in.

In verses 4 and 5 He said, *"And when he brings out his own sheep, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice. Yet they will by no means follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers."* It means that when one becomes a true Christian, one recognizes whether what is now being preached is the word of God or not. Thinking, "Ah, the word of God is being preached now." Can a person who has heard the gospel of the water and the Spirit in the Church of God and received the remission of sins leave this church and go to a worldly church and lead a life of faith? He cannot. Why can he not? Because when he hears the word there, it is not the gospel.

A religion in which only rituals remain and there is no word

Catholicism has had no word to preach from the beginning. That is because Constantine the Great cut off Jesus' having received baptism from John and having our sins transferred to Him, made them believe only in the Cross, and put that out in writing as the faith of the apostles. So they stand in splendid vestments and perform rituals. When the priest holds up the bread in a vessel and says, "Lamb of God, O Lord who removes the sin of the world, remit our sins," the congregation repeats after him. And the priest reads a written text.

When the priest says to the saints, "The peace of Christ be with you," the believers respond, "And also with the priest," back and forth. They perform rituals wearing different splendid vestments for each feast. In this way it amounts to replacing the place of the word with rituals. Since there is no word of God, it is of no use even if one attends for a thousand, ten thousand years. From early on they belonged to the Roman emperor and tasted the power of the world. So such a religion is in collusion with the political powers of the world.

Within Christianity, too, there are such pastors, and within Catholicism almost all are like that. That is because if they are loyal within it, there is much that they gain. For them, the word of Jesus is not what is important. The word of Jesus has nothing to do with it. They merely operate by rituals and institutions and lead people astray. That is why there are the seven sacraments.

At the rite of baptism the priest pours water on the forehead and says, "I baptize you in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit," and at confirmation he prays with the laying on of hands, saying, "Receive the Holy Spirit," and pours oil on the head. They place meaning in performing ceremonies

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

like that, in splendid clothes, on appointed days. But what Christianity should regard as most important is the word. Within the word there is the gospel of the water and the Spirit, it is recorded how Jesus has remitted people's sins, and what Jesus will do in the future is also recorded. That is why we must preach the word of God. So when we preach the word, we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and we make booklets of that gospel and distribute them to people. Then people read them and receive the remission of sins, and that news comes to us. Even though I do not personally know those people well, such news comes.

The word that prepares for the time of the Antichrist

What I want to say is this. The world we now live in is racing toward the end. Satan the devil has, in the past as well, moved the heart of the emperor or ruler of some nation and done evil deeds. In the future a time comes when the Antichrist appears and tells those who believe in Jesus that he is God and that they should believe in him. It means that at that time, will not those who have not heard such a word become those who praise and worship him as God and pray before him? Even if such a day draws near in the future, even if they appease us, saying that they will give so much food if we receive the mark on our hands, we must not fall for it. That period is at most one year, and at the longest, a year and a half.

During the seven-year Great Tribulation, for the first three and a half years the Antichrist will carry out an enlightenment campaign, and for the next three and a half years he will use a policy of appeasement, giving benefits to those who obey well

and seizing and killing those who do not. But the Lord said that He would shorten the time before those three and a half years are fully over, saying, *"I am coming quickly."* When we are martyred, He comes immediately. For if Jesus does not shorten that period, this earth becomes a world so painful that people cannot live in it. So we would live at most one more year or a year and six months, and would we, to live that period a little longer, deny that Jesus has become our Savior, call the Antichrist God, and bow to him and follow him? No. The reason I am now preaching the word called the reformation of faith is that it must be preached in advance in preparation for that time. It is that if this is made into a booklet and distributed to people, then even if they do not know now, when the world later becomes like that, people will realize on their own, thinking, "Aha, so that is why the leader preached this word," and cope with it.

A born-again person has the Holy Spirit in his heart and so can never submit to the Antichrist. The early Church was not ruined while the apostles were there. On the contrary, the more the Church of God is persecuted, the more firmly it stands, the firmer its faith becomes, and the more it binds together as one. But when the world uses a policy of appeasement, if one is led astray by it and chases after pleasure and enjoyment, faith is ruined.

In a way, it seems that we are living very hard lives because COVID-19 has come, but this, too, is what God has permitted for us. Before the seven-year Great Tribulation comes, such a great disease is going around, and the temperature now rises to 35, 40 degrees, so that it is hard even to breathe. God has permitted this both for the Church of God and for the people of the world. The people of the world should look back on their own souls through this and prepare to go to the kingdom of

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

heaven, too, but some do and some do not. But what about us? If COVID-19 had not come, if hardship had not come, the Church of God, too, would not have reorganized the literature ministry it is now doing. We would have said, "Everyone is working hard, so that much is enough." But when COVID-19 came, I was told that Pastor Galvão in Brazil sent an email saying that then Pastor Paul C. Jong ought to say a word to the fellow workers throughout the world.

The thought rose up in me, "I have written it all in the books, and I have written it all in the books on Revelation, too," but I was told that even so, it would be good if I would say a word. At that time I said to myself, "God is telling me to do it again. I think I have done all of this literature ministry, but He is telling me to do it again. Then I will do it again." I am not a person who writes books, but I have written them of necessity. But since they said it was needed again, I said I would do it without a word of complaint, and while there was a translator, I hurriedly made two English books and put them out. In them there are many sermons of thirty or forty pages each. That is because I put in what the saints must believe and what they must be careful of in facing COVID-19.

And I also checked with artificial intelligence whether the earlier books had parts that were mistranslated. Artificial intelligence has now advanced a great deal, and when I checked, there were parts that were nonsense and many parts that were missing, so I am now doing the work of reorganizing them.

It means that if God had not given us hardship through COVID-19, would we have come to our senses and done this work now, when it has been going on six or seven years since COVID-19 came? Before COVID-19 came, I was far more comfortable physically. Even until then I was doing the literature work, but when there was a work site, I would go and talk

together and work and eat a snack between meals, and now I cannot do that. Because I have to do the literature work, I have become busier than before, and the work to be done in the future has increased. I believe that God's having given me this situation means that I should say what must be said.

We must change our wrong faith and believe.

That is why we must carry out the reformation of faith. Catholic or Christian believers throughout the world will get nowhere, however much they believe in such rituals and institutions. What the Roman emperor made long ago and the emperors after him went on making is the seven sacraments of Catholicism, and they have been using them to this day. In them there is truly not a single word, and there is nothing that removes sin. Now we must believe in Jesus Christ, of whom the Bible speaks. Jesus received baptism from John the Baptist and had the sin of the world transferred to Him, was crucified and shed His blood and died, and rose again from the dead and became our Savior. We must correct the faith of the heart that believes in this Jesus Christ, so that sinners become righteous. And we must become those who believe in the Lord and follow Him and live for the Lord, and when the Lord comes, go to that kingdom and enjoy eternal blessedness. In the old days we thought that the kingdom of heaven was a place one goes only after dying, but seeing such hard disasters come upon us, it means that the kingdom of heaven has come before our eyes. It is that we will meet the Lord before long. We must correct our faith rightly.

After being born on this earth, at first I became a Christian believer like them. I received catechism and received baptism and believed in Jesus, who was hung on the Cross, but my sin

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

did not disappear. I prayed to God. I fasted and prayed, too, and prayed and prayed because I really wanted to know what the word of the Bible says.

But the time of God came. That day, too, I was reading the Bible as usual, and in the Gospel of Matthew I saw the word that Jesus was born on this earth with the name Jesus as the One who would save His people from their sins, and received baptism from John the Baptist in the Jordan River. It is the word, *"Thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15)*, and *"When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, 'This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased'" (Matthew 3:16–17)*.

In the past I had agonized because I did not know what this word says, but that day God made me realize it, as if an electric light were switched on in my heart and head. Jesus received baptism from John, so then who is John? In the Old Testament God said through the prophet Malachi that He would send Elijah, and that is precisely John the Baptist of the New Testament age. Pointing to John the Baptist, Jesus said that *"he is Elijah who is to come" (Matthew 11:14)*. Then why did he baptize Jesus? It was in order to pass the sin of mankind on to Jesus. It is the same as how, in the Old Testament, the act by which the high priest passed the sins of the people on to the sacrificial offering once and for all was the laying on of hands. Then why did Jesus receive baptism? I came to know, "Because He came to remove the sin of this world, He is the One who fulfilled all righteousness by receiving baptism from the representative of mankind." I realized, "Because He took over the sins of all people, He is the One who went to the Cross and died and rose

again and so did the work of saving all people from sin; that is why He had to receive baptism from John the Baptist."

As I realized this word of truth, I came to know what this whole Bible says. This is the key and the core. I can string the Bible together in one thread from Genesis to Revelation. That the Lord received baptism and went into the water means death, and that He came up out of the water means the resurrection. That Jesus received baptism from John means that He had all our sins transferred to Him. Your sins, my sins, the sins of your parents, the sins of your descendants, all the sins from the very beginning until the end of this world—these are called the sin of the world, all sins. It is that Jesus received baptism once and for all and took them over, shed His blood and died once and for all, and rose again from the dead and paid the price of sin, and so became our Savior. We must believe this gospel. This is the gospel. It is the gospel of being born again of water and the Spirit.

We must no longer be deceived by swindler religious leaders. Even if one always goes to church, in Christianity they say that if one believes in Jesus and receives catechism and receives baptism, one has received the remission of original sin, and in Catholicism, too, they say that if one receives baptism, one has received the remission of original sin. Then when are actual sins remitted? In Christianity they say that one receives the remission of sins by offering prayers of repentance, and in Catholicism they say that one receives the remission of sins by making the sacrament of confession. Going to a priest and saying, with a partition between them, "Father, I have committed such and such a sin," and saying in Christianity, "Lord, I have committed such and such a sin. Please forgive me," are exactly the same thing. The seven sacraments of Catholicism are performed as prescribed, through the process of carrying out holy ceremonies: when one receives baptism, original sin is remitted; when one

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

makes the sacrament of confession or offers prayers of repentance, actual sins are remitted; and when one receives the laying on of hands, one receives the Holy Spirit. Then when does sin disappear? They say it disappears when one dies. Not content even with that, theologians say that if one believes in Jesus and then stops believing, one goes to hell. So it means that it is an imperfect doctrine. It is a doctrine that human beings made up. It is a doctrine that extracts money. The result is that it demands money. They say, "Give the Sunday offering, give the thanksgiving offering, pay the tithe, give the special offering," so in the end it is money. They are people who are crazy about money. Do we go to church to bring money? What is the reason for going to church? Just one thing: we go to hear the word of God. Within the word of God there is the word of the remission of sins, by which our sins are remitted, there is the word of being born again, and there is the word of promise about the future. And the word of God also teaches us what is right and what is wrong. We go to church to know the will of God; do we go to pay money? Does one go to the kingdom of heaven if one pays a lot of money? In Catholicism they said that if one buys an indulgence, one goes to the kingdom of heaven.

We must change our hearts, be saved by the faith that believes in the baptism Christ received from John and the Cross and receives the washing of sin in the heart, and live for the rest of our lives the life in which God delights. Now, before long, the Lord is coming. The time has fully come. The world, too, will not last long. They say that in only ten years the water of the sea off Sokcho will rise up to the coastal road. This is not my word but the word of meteorologists. They say that breakwaters must be built high. But how can they all be built? They say that the water will rot, mosquitoes will swarm, germs will teem, and a third of the mountains will burn with fire. They say that the

scorching heat will burn people. It is all recorded in the word of the Bible. It is the disaster God brings down at the last, telling swindlers and people who have sin to repent and turn back and receive the remission of sins and come to the kingdom of God. But by what means, with what strength, can people escape it? How can we live any longer in this world? Artificial intelligence robots will live in our place. The One who made us is God. Since we came from the earth, we must return to the earth, and there is a plan in God's having made us. It is that He meant to have us receive the remission of sins and take us to the kingdom of God. We must respond to that. In this age we must truly come to our senses and live. However much money one may have, where will one go to play? Now one cannot play as in the old days. If one does, one catches a disease and dies. The Lord has saved us. I give thanks. I will close the word here. ✉

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Sermon 3 by Paul C. Jong

Jesus, who became the door of the kingdom of heaven

< John 10:4-5 >

"And when he brings out his own sheep, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice. Yet they will by no means follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers."

Since we read the whole text of John chapter 10, verses 1 to 19, during the day today, in the evening hour I intend to speak while reading one verse at a time.

God entrusts the work to those who have received the remission of sins, telling them to spread the gospel in this world, to spread the news that He has saved us from sin, and brings them out into this world to have them do this. First, God Himself saved us with the love and salvation of God and embraced us in His bosom. Also, in order to have us save those who have not yet come into the fold, He brings out the sheep, and Himself goes ahead of them and has them do the good works of God in this world. God leads His people and entrusts the works of God to them and accomplishes them.

But it is the word that when God does these works, the sheep of God, that is, those who have been saved, recognize the voice of the Lord and follow. It means that they follow and obey the Lord. But it means that when born-again people receive directions or orders from people who have not been born again,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

they do not follow. So when the people of God are with the people of God, when they are with leaders who lead them by the word of God, their hearts are extremely at ease, and they come to serve the spreading of God's gospel willingly and rejoice in it. But it is that when people who have not received the remission of sins try to lead a born-again person, he refuses.

They say that these days places like public health centers are giving flu shots. I hope those who are eligible will get one. I mean young children and the elderly and infirm. I, too, fall into the elderly and infirm, and they say that if things go wrong, one can get complications and die. Life and death may be in the hands of God, but it will not do to catch the flu and be unable to preach and have one's face turn red. As it is, I had surgery because my throat was not good, and it will not do to have surgery again. So I intend to go and get the shot. I am going to get it around tomorrow, and I hope you, too, will get it if you can. It seems that an extremely strong cold germ is active. You may wonder what talk about colds is doing in the middle of a sermon, but when the servants and workers of God who have received the remission of sins say even such things, the people of God gladly accept them. Even if their circumstances do not allow it and they cannot get the shot, they still accept it in their hearts and follow.

Those who have been saved by the gospel of the water and the Spirit rejoice in following God

But if a person who has not been born again steps forward and says, "Let us get our shots," even if they say nothing outwardly, inwardly they refuse, thinking, "You go get yours." When a born-again person says, let us serve God, they follow

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

with real gladness, but when a person who has not been born again says, "Let us live for God," inwardly they think, "You serve Him yourself." So the sheep never take directions from a person who has not been born again.

But even among these sheep there are sheep that lack discernment. In fact, sheep are extremely foolish not only when newly born, but even when fully grown and become mothers and fathers. When they are young, how severe must that foolishness be? So it means that there are cases where they follow even when a person who has not been born again leads them. Why is that? Because when they are led by a person who has not been born again, he leads them with correct words in nine things. Because all nine were correct, they do not notice even when one is wrong, and because four out of five were correct, even when one is wrong they let it pass, thinking, "Since he has spoken all correct words, that word will be right too." It is extremely difficult. A person who has not been born again is sure to end up revealing his true nature. Even so, if there is no shepherd, the sheep are taken in.

God has saved us and made us the people of God, but there are also many people on this earth who, though they have the born-again new life, fail to use that new life in pursuing the will of God and accomplishing the work of God, and act like those who have no new life until they go before the Lord. Our Lord said later on that He must bring many sheep that are not yet of this fold. A born-again person bears patiently and waits a long time until a person who has not been born again comes into the flock of God.

First Corinthians chapter 13 says that love suffers long and is kind and is not provoked, and truly it suffers long. There is also the word that the righteous lends, but the wicked borrows and does not repay, and just as God loved us and removed our

sins and made us the people of God and made us the workers of God and bestowed on us the grace of giving us the kingdom of heaven, we the righteous, too, are extremely good at giving.

But it is the fact that even though one has been born again, knowing and following the voice of God should come about in the heart, and yet there are occasionally people who fail in this and live wrongly, drawn along by circumstances and the prevailing trend. That is why it is extremely important for the sheep to meet the church that God has established. That is because only then can they do the work of God, do good works, and follow God. The sheep who fail to do so end up being plundered and dying. In any case, one characteristic is that born-again people, those who have received the love of God and been saved by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, rejoice in following God. Though they are lacking, though it is hard, though it is difficult, they rejoice in following.

He said that a born-again person does not follow the voice of a stranger, but runs away. A born-again person wanders if he is not with the Church of God. Going to this church today and to that church tomorrow, he suffers, and it is truly pitiful. So I give thanks that God has given us the sheepfold. Here is the sheepfold, the house of the sheep. In this house the people of God gather and live, and I, too, am one sheep before God. Looking at verse 6, it said that Jesus spoke with this illustration, but they did not understand. Why is that? Because they were not the people of God.

"I am the door of the sheep"

The Lord said again, *"Most assuredly, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep" (John 10:7)*. It is that the Lord has become

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

for us the true door of salvation, the door of the kingdom of heaven. So the Lord said, apart from Me there is no way to go to the kingdom of heaven, and except through Me no one can enter before God the Father, and except through Me no one can receive the remission of sins, and no one can be saved from all sins. In this world, the only One who has the power to remove people's sins absolutely, make them the people of God, and make them a people who can go to the kingdom of heaven is Jesus. Jesus is the God of our salvation. It is that He is God, and yet He became our Savior.

As for how He accomplished that salvation, it is the word that He came to this earth, received baptism from John and bore all our sins, died for us on the Cross, and rose again three days after He died, and so became our Savior. Just as it says, *"There is no other name under heaven given among men by which we must be saved" (Acts 4:12)*, Jesus Christ is the true Savior for us. For mankind there is no other Savior and no other shepherd apart from Jesus. There is no true good shepherd, no genuine shepherd. All the religions of this world are not the door of salvation. It is the word that all the shepherds and religious leaders of this world are not leaders of salvation, but are thieves who take what belongs to people through religion, and are robbers.

Christianity is the same. If Jesus is the true door of salvation, we must see how He becomes the door of salvation. The Lord became the door of our salvation by the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God became a human being, received baptism from John the Baptist and bore our sins, died for us on the Cross, and rose again from the dead, and so became the God of our true salvation, but those who have not met that God of salvation through the faith that believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are merely religious leaders. Even within Christianity, they amount to playing the role of a hireling as religious leaders.

So the Lord said, *"I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture. The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep" (John 10:9–11).*

It means that apart from the Lord there is no God of salvation, that apart from Jesus there is no one who truly gives salvation, and that there is no religious leader who has himself borne people's sins and died in their place, and so saved people from sin and brought them back to life and had them enter the kingdom of heaven. In no religion is there such a leader. Absolutely, only Jesus, our Savior who is God, has become our true Savior and has really had us obtain new life. And it is the fact that He not only had us obtain new life, not only saved us from sin, but gave us the incomparably abundant blessing called the kingdom of heaven. It is an undeniable fact. God alone is our Savior, has removed our sins, and has made us the people of God. Therefore, since we have received the remission of sins by faith and become children of God by faith, we give thanks before God, who has saved us.

Only Jesus is truly the good shepherd

It said that the good shepherd gives His life for the sheep. Among the religions of this world, is there anyone who, for his people, for those who would believe in him, bore those people's sins and died in their place? Who is there that gave up himself? Shall we talk about Buddhism? The one who founded Buddhism was the son of a king who ruled a small tribe in India. He once went out of the castle to look around, and came to see the

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

problems of birth, old age, sickness, and death—people falling ill, suffering, and starving. Wondering why people suffer like that, why they grow old like that, why they go hungry and naked like that, and what on earth life is, he gave up the authority of a prince and went out. Since there was no one outside the castle to teach him, he agonized and thought and meditated alone, but there was no way to solve it. He died while practicing asceticism like that. Later, people came to revere him, seeing the figure of him meditating under the Bodhi tree and saying, "That man is a great man."

While he was alive, he taught the disciples who followed him, and said to people who had lived only for themselves, "You must cast off greed, you must attain liberation, you must not covet; true happiness lies not in material things but in the heart." So the people of that time followed him, thinking, "These are truly right words, and we have met a great teacher." But he, too, died. Look. In the end he died without solving even his own problem. What about the sins of other people? He taught, "If you carry one mal of barley on your head and go ten ri and bury one grain in the ground, that much sin disappears, so do good deeds diligently."

Did Siddhartha ever take over the sin of mankind for us human beings and die in our place? Does he have such power? Is he God? He is not God, and he has no power. Nor did he ever take over our sins and shed his blood and die in our place for us. Nevertheless, because he tried harder than ordinary people to solve the problem of his own conscience, people revered him highly, and so he became a slave of the devil who opposes God.

Buddhism says that if a person makes his own efforts, he escapes from all evil and reaches the level of a god, and calls such a person a Buddha. It is nothing at all. In India, where Siddhartha was born, a class follows every person from birth. It is called the caste system: the children of nobles are nobles from

birth and live their whole lives commanding slaves and being served, while a person born into a lowly status lives serving the people of the upper classes, believing that if he lives that way in this life, in the next life he, too, will be born into a high status. So those people practice a great deal of asceticism and do a great deal of yoga. They cross their legs and put them behind their necks and do not eat, and climb to the tops of trees and stay there, being fed by a bucket on a rope, and grow thin.

They say that these days many of those in India who practice spiritual discipline smoke a great deal of drugs. When they smoke drugs, they forget all their thoughts and sink into another world, and so they say they reach the highest level, but after a little while they sink completely into hell. No religious leader or cult founder has ever borne our sins for us or died for us.

But Jesus alone, as God, as the One who has power, though He is our Master, came to us and became a human being exactly like us. And in order to remove our sins, He received baptism from John and bore our sins, and gave His own body to the Cross for us and was crucified, and let Himself be sacrificed in order to pay the price for the wages of sin. So it is that He became our true Savior. The only One who has such qualification is Jesus, who is God.

If one goes to Rome, there are many gods. There are many petty gods such as the god of the sun, the god of war, the god of the sea, the god of the earth, the god of farming, and the god of love, but in reality they have no power. They have no power to make the universe and all things in it, they never received baptism for their people and bore all the sins of the people, and they never were crucified and received the judgment for the sins of the people.

The Confucianism of our country is the same. Because Confucius, who was born in China, was born an illegitimate son,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

his mother was not honored. So Confucius, out of his utmost devotion toward his parents, proclaimed the ideology of filial piety, the ideology of loyalty and filial piety. Confucius, too, said a great deal—live virtuously, honor your parents well, be loyal to your country, and there must be faithfulness between friends—but what did he actually do for mankind? Nothing at all. The leaders of all religions told us to do something, but did nothing for us.

But Jesus was really God. As the God who made the universe and all things in it and made you and me, when you and I had fallen into sin, He became a human being in order to save us from sin. At the age of thirty He took over all the sins of people by receiving baptism from John, bore the sin of the world away and shed His blood on the Cross and received the judgment for sin, and three days after He died, because He has power, He came back to life and became for us the true God of salvation. That is why only Jesus is truly the good shepherd, and only Jesus is the real God and the really good God.

There are many petty gods in this world, but apart from God the Trinity—the Father of Jesus Christ, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit—everything else is all the devil. All the things called gods in this world are petty gods and the devil. So they torment people if people do not listen to them. Saying that people's devotion is lacking, they do harm if people do not bring them many offerings, tell people to pick a day even when moving house, and appear in dreams and torment them if they do not listen. That is called the devil, and the devil was originally an angel created by God, but was driven out for trying to covet the place of God. That devil, driven out of heaven, came down to this earth with many of his messengers, and they are precisely the devil and demons. Because God loves human beings most, the devil and his kind, in order to torment and kill people, give

voice under the pretext of the names of your ancestors, and torment the descendants through those names. The reason fortune-tellers commonly say that a household does not prosper because it does not serve its ancestors well is that fortune-tellers, too, are slaves of the devil, and so they say such things.

The hireling leaves the sheep and flees

He said, *"I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep" (John 10:11)*. But He said, *"A hireling, he who is not the shepherd, one who does not own the sheep, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and flees; and the wolf catches the sheep and scatters them. The hireling flees because he is a hireling and does not care about the sheep."* A hireling refers to a person who works to make a living. A person who does hired work at someone else's house is called a hireling. Today's salaried workers, who work and seek to receive wages for their labor, are all people who do hired work.

Long ago, in the age of Genghis Khan of Mongolia, Genghis Khan championed Christianity. It is ironic that so fierce a man as Genghis Khan was, historically speaking, a person who believed in Christianity. In any case, the history of Mongolia tells it that way. When Genghis Khan believed in Christianity, there were extremely many people who believed in Christianity, and there were pastors and there were seminaries, too. Even when Genghis Khan died and his son took power, there were many pastors, and when his grandson took power, the grandson did not believe, but his mother is said to have believed in Christianity faithfully. But after the Mongol Empire collapsed, the leaders and Christian believers all abandoned the Christian faith, and Mongolia ended up becoming a land of Tibetan

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Buddhism. Why was that? Because they had believed in Christianity to make a living, because they had played the role of Christian leaders to make a living, and because they had believed because the king believed.

In fact, there was no gospel of the water and the Spirit in Mongolia. There was no one to teach that gospel. If there had been someone to teach it rightly when Genghis Khan believed, many Christian believers would have come forth and kept the faith even under persecution, and the Mongolia of today would have become an extremely rich and strong nation. But now, under the name of Tibetan Buddhism, they go about even in summer wearing big boots and purple sashes, sweating. It is that they say something comes of practicing asceticism in the heat. It means that they set an example before the people that way.

It is that because the hireling is not the shepherd and the sheep are not his own, when he sees the wolf coming, he leaves them and flees. Those who do the ministry to make a living serve for a while at this church, and then, if another church pays more money, they go off. If this church is shattered to pieces, they abandon it without regret and go. Those who do the ministry to make a living plant a church and build it up a little. And they calculate everything, even the number of members—so many men, so many women, so many children, so many officeholders, and how much comes in through tithes—calculating all of it, and sell it off, together with the building, to a newcomer. Such things happen all the time in our country. So if one looks at Christian newspapers, many advertisements for selling churches appear. There must be many church members who have suffered such things. It means that because the hireling is not a true shepherd, he abandons them and goes. Only Jesus is the true shepherd. If they really believed in Jesus, they would at least imitate Him. We ought to know that there are many people who claim to

believe in God in order to make a living.

"I am the good shepherd"

Jesus said like this in verses 14 and 15, *"I am the good shepherd; and I know My sheep, and am known by My own. As the Father knows Me, even so I know the Father; and I lay down My life for the sheep."* It is that He knows everything. It is the word that He knows all of it—our life and death, fortune and misfortune, and our beginning and end. Just as the Father knows everything about Jesus, because Jesus is our God and made us, He knows everything: why we commit sin, what weaknesses we have, what stubbornness we have, what thoughts we have. That is why, when we had gone wrong, He came to save you and me from sin, took over all our sins by receiving baptism from John, and gave His body to the Cross in our place, and so saved us from sin, from judgment. This God who knows everything has become our true shepherd. So our Lord said that there are many people who are not yet in this fold. It is the word that those people, too, must be brought into the fold, and for that the gospel must be spread, and when they come in, they must be under the voice of one shepherd. One shepherd refers to Jesus. Jesus is the Chief Shepherd, and the many leaders in this world are little shepherds.

The goats mixed in within the sheepfold

In fact, even among those who have come into the sheepfold, there are those who have come in having received the remission of sins, and there are also those whose bodies have come in but

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

whose hearts have not yet come in. Such people must honestly believe before God that Jesus alone is their true God and Savior. But it seems that there are also people who do not believe. Look. There are Esau and Jacob, the sons of Isaac, are there not? Of the two, one believed and one did not believe. It is the same with Isaac and Ishmael, the sons of Abraham. One son had the faith his father had believed with, the faith that believes in God, and one son showed off his own strength. Ishmael shot the bow well and was strong. It means that those who are strong in human terms, even if they have come into the Church of God, the formal flock, do not in their hearts believe in Jesus as their God, as their Savior. They seem to believe, but in fact they half believe and half hold out by their own strength. Our Lord is our Savior God, who came to this earth for His people, received baptism from John for His people, was crucified and died for His people, and came back to life, yet there are many people who do not believe in that Jesus. Those who believe in that Jesus as their God, as their Savior, those who acknowledge and believe just as it is that Jesus, who came by water and blood, has washed away all their sins, are spiritually children of God. God saw the believing faith in their hearts and made them children of God. That is why He becomes their shepherd and hears their prayers, keeps them, leads them, protects them, and blesses them. But even among those who have come into the fold, there are people who do not believe. Such people have no heart that reveres God, do not fear God, and are extremely authoritarian.

In practice, the people of God may rebuke with spiritual authority when someone acts contrary to the will of God, but they do not put forward human authority. There is absolutely no such thing as, “I am a pastor, how dare you.” They simply say, on equal terms, “Ah, this person does far better than I do.” When we play soccer, once a match gets going among the pastors, the

evangelists, and the pastors' wives, some of the pastors' wives come charging in with their shoulders, and at such times my chest smarts. I try to dodge slightly, but the other side puts on strength and collides hard, so I, who was not even bracing myself, get knocked aside and am really frightened. They come from behind and hit my side, too; when playing soccer, there is no pastor or anything.

I usually play striker, and I do it because everyone tells me to. Once, the goal was three meters in front of me and it was one-on-one with the goalkeeper. Thinking, "Today, at last, I am finally going to score a goal," and wanting, if I was going to score, to score in style, I raised my leg while looking at the goalkeeper. But while my foot was coming down, the ball had disappeared. The other side had already come and snatched it away. Not even knowing that, I kicked at nothing, thinking I was kicking the ball, so I had a bitter taste in my mouth. I said, "This is really too much. Did you already take it away while I had my leg up?"

Among us there is no high or low in human terms. We only work in the part each of us has been assigned in order to do the work of God, and there are only differences according to office; there is not the least attempt to press people down by the office itself. Do you know who the person is that I am most careful of, most afraid of, and most respect? It is the person who has just heard the gospel and received the remission of sins and come into the church. Before that person I tremble. To a person who received the remission of sins long ago I can speak casually, saying, "Hey, how have you been?" but before a person who has just come in, I become extremely careful. That is because I wonder what I would do if, through my acting wrongly, that person fell into temptation and did not believe in Jesus, thinking, "Even the pastor is in that sorry state." If he does not believe, it

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

is only his own loss, but still, I must not become a stumbling block to that person's believing in Jesus, so in any case I am careful.

But there are also goats that have come into God's sheepfold. Dear fellow believers, do you understand? Already this year, two families among the ministers have left the church. Those people made a fuss without even believing, and their characteristic was that they were extremely authoritarian. When pastors came to their district, they shouted, drove them hard with harsh words when kind words would have done, never went anywhere and bought anything, and said, "You pay," trying only to be served themselves. If I have money, I spend it. I say, "I should pay. Whether it is your money or my money, it is all spent for God." But it means that even if they have come into the sheepfold, goats never do that. When one fault of a worker under them is caught, goats try to drive him into a corner. We do not catch a fault in order to drive someone into a corner. When a job is done wrong and comes to nothing, because that labor looks so painfully wasted, we say, "Don't do it that way; try doing it this way." Imagine working yourself to death for a month and having it come to nothing. How hard is that? So it is that the heart is different. It would be good if there were no such things, but we must bear in mind the fact that even within the Church of God, even within the sheepfold, goats are mixed in. And we must also bear in mind that the Lord has permitted it.

If it were the heart of a hireling, one would want to cut them off in an instant with a single stroke, and in one's heart one really wants to do so. But what does the Lord say on that point? He says, *"No, lest while you gather up the tares you also uproot the wheat with them" (Matthew 13:29)*. It is that He says, leave them alone until the day when the Lord comes to this earth and judges; if they repent, that is fine, and if they do not repent and hold out

to the end, just keep them from hindering any further and leave them alone. If someone says with his mouth that he believes, there is nothing one can say. Judging by what appears, he clearly does not believe, but if he says with his mouth that he believes, what can one do? If, when he says he believes, one drives him into a corner, saying, you are one who does not believe, what happens to the weak? It means that if the weak come to think, "I, too, have such weak parts, and I, too, seem not to believe, so will I not be driven out too?" the weak die. It is that this cannot be done.

Seeing such things this year, I have also come to acknowledge my own lack before God. Leading the saints onto a wrong path can never be tolerated, but I thought about why, when God can do what I cannot, He leaves such people as they are. God has left them so lest, without such people, we the saved should eat and drink and play complacently among ourselves, and not serve the gospel, and live in a fleshly way and die. I believe that He has left them so in order that we should treasure our having been saved, that we should come to our senses in preaching the gospel to those who are still outside and have not been able to come into the sheepfold, and that we should work with vigilance.

The reason He has mixed goats in among the sheep

There is an illustration like this. A certain man loaded fish onto a truck and transported and sold them, and in the course of transport a third of the fish died. However much oxygen was supplied, they died, and the better the fish, the faster they died. But that man discovered a strange thing. It is the fact that if there are one or two natural predators among the fish, the fish do not

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

die but hold out. It is the fact that a few are caught and eaten and die, but the rest, busy fleeing so as not to die, do not die on their own. So when he deliberately put in a predator and transported them, only a few were caught and eaten, and there was no longer any case of half dying or two-thirds dying.

God, too, lets loose a few goats within the Church of God. If God did not let them loose, the saints would slacken, saying, "I am saved now; all I have to do is go to the kingdom of heaven," but when they look closely, there is someone trying to devour them. Since there is someone trying to trip them up even though they have clearly received the remission of sins, they come to their senses, and in order to live, they avoid him and pray and believe more firmly in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and saying, it is this alone, they come to work until the day the Lord comes and live without leaving the church. That is why the people of Israel and the Mongolians, too, do not leave the sheep alone by themselves, but mix in a few goats with them. Goats have the habit of butting, and even while grazing together, if a sheep comes alongside, they butt it hard with their horns, and then the sheep's belly is sometimes pierced and wounded. Sheep usually graze absentmindedly and have little vigilance, but if there is a goat, even while grazing they come to look to the side to see whether it will butt or not, and even when drinking water they come to have vigilance. Because the owner put them in together, they cannot drive them out either. You must have wondered why there are goats within the Church of God, within the sheepfold, and why there are such things. But you must know that in fact God has permitted it in order to have us saints who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit keep our faith more firmly, and to have us spread this gospel clearly.

When people are too comfortable, they do not do the work of God. Do you understand? It seems that if one has received the

remission of sins and there is no one tormenting one and no one to be on guard against, one would serve the Lord well, but one does not serve well. But if there is someone who butts and someone who tries to trip one up, one naturally comes to one's senses all the more and does the work better. It seems it would be good if there were no hardships, but God permits, at the right times, hardships that we can bear, and we must know that this is to have us serve the Lord's gospel better with greater watchfulness and not lose our faith. But in fact, what is pitiful is the goat mixed in among the sheep. A goat lives well, and then one day, when the owner says, "Come here," and it is caught in the owner's hand, that is the day of its death. He catches it and roasts it and eats it, and boils it into soup and eats it, too.

In the Bible, sheep refer to the people of God, those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and goats refer to those who have not been born again. Among them, in particular, a person who has slipped in among the sheep within the Church of God and deceives himself, deceives people, and deceives his own conscience is called a goat. Such people imitate well. They even make their cry like a sheep. But looking at the fruit, they are not sheep. When they bear young, they are goats. Sheep beget sheep and goats beget goats. Goats look stronger. They are strong in every respect. In fact, because they are not sheep at the root, they put on a strong appearance to hide themselves. Nevertheless, we must wait a long, long time for such people, too, and pray, and teach them with the word.

I, too, am sometimes so weary that I want to end everything with a single stroke, according to my temper. But that must not be. If one yields one's heart before the Lord, believes in Jesus as God, and believes and gives thanks that God has remitted one's sins by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, one receives the remission of sins, and if one does not believe to the end, one goes

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

to hell. In fact, they say that Christians throughout the world number in the hundreds of millions, but ninety-some percent of them are all goats. They are not people who have received the remission of sins. So we must pray for them.

Our Savior, who received all authority

Let us read verse 16. *"And other sheep I have which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they will hear My voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd."* Making those who are still goats into sheep and putting them into God's fold is the work of God, and God is now doing that work. We are those who help that work. He said that those people would receive the remission of sins and belong to one shepherd, and it is the word that they must really believe in the salvation of Jesus Christ and be in it.

Jesus said in verse 17, *"My Father loves Me, because I lay down My life that I may take it again."* God the Father loves Jesus, who has become our God, because Jesus, receiving the command of God, does the work of having us, who were originally like goats, be born again by the gospel of the water and the Spirit and bringing back to life the lives that were to die. The Lord laid down His own life in order to have us obtain our lives. He bore our sins by receiving baptism from John the Baptist, and gave His own life to the Cross and died. He did that in order to bring the lives of you and me back to life. That is why God the Father loves Jesus Christ.

Jesus came to this earth and did these things because God the Father commanded His Son Jesus Christ, and also because He gave Him authority. That authority is the authority by which Jesus Christ can remit our sins with the water, the blood, and the

Spirit, and the authority by which He makes us children of God and saves us from death and enables us to live together forever in the kingdom of heaven. God the Father gave His Son all the authority to save us, the authority to bear our sins and die for us, and the authority to come back to life again of Himself. The name Jesus means Savior, and Jesus is God Himself in essence. It means that God has become our Savior. So His birth, the baptism He received from John, His death on the Cross, His resurrection, and His ascension, which He accomplished on this earth in order to save us, are things that came about because He received all power and authority and command from the Father. Jesus is alive even now at the right hand of the throne of God, and gives the remission of sins to those who believe, gives the Holy Spirit, gives new life, and gives the Millennial Kingdom and the eternal kingdom of God. So if one believes in Jesus, one is not only saved from all sins but becomes one of the people of God and receives all the abundant blessings God gives.

So only Jesus has become the true door of the kingdom of heaven, which lets us enter the kingdom of heaven, and only Jesus has become the true door of our salvation. We must surely know and believe this, and believe in and give thanks for the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God has given us. We must surely know and believe that God came to this earth, received baptism from John, died on the Cross, and rose again from the dead, and so saved us. It is not what human beings did, but what God did. We were made by God, and God became a human being in order to save His people from their sins.

He became a human being and received baptism from John and bore our sins, and in order to receive the judgment for our sins, He bore the sin of the world away and was crucified and died on the Cross, and rose again from the dead and is alive even now. So it is the word that He has given the remission of sins,

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

becoming children of God, and eternal life to those who believe in the Lord. Therefore we must know that Jesus is God, must know that God has saved us by the gospel of the water, the blood, and the Spirit, must know that by believing in Him we have obtained new life and become children of God, and must know that we have no sin. And we must surely know and believe and remember that in the future we will enter the Millennial Kingdom and the eternal kingdom of God and live forever in a sinless state, enjoying that authority as children of the Father, and we must live keeping that faith. Dear fellow believers, do you believe? I give thanks before our God and will close the word here. ✉

Sermon 4 by Paul C. Jong

Jesus, who received the testimony of John the Baptist and is equal with God, gives eternal life

< John 10:27-42 >

"My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand. My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand. I and My Father are one. Then the Jews took up stones again to stone Him. Jesus answered them, 'Many good works I have shown you from My Father. For which of those works do you stone Me?' The Jews answered Him, saying, 'For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy, and because You, being a Man, make Yourself God.' Jesus answered them, 'Is it not written in your law, "I said, 'You are gods'"? If He called them gods, to whom the word of God came (and the Scripture cannot be broken), do you say of Him whom the Father sanctified and sent into the world, "You are blaspheming," because I said, "I am the Son of God"? If I do not do the works of My Father, do not believe Me; but if I do, though you do not believe Me, believe the works, that you

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

may know and believe that the Father is in Me, and I in Him.' Therefore they sought again to seize Him, but He escaped out of their hand. And He went away again beyond the Jordan to the place where John was baptizing at first, and there He stayed. Then many came to Him and said, 'John performed no sign, but all the things that John spoke about this Man were true.' And many believed in Him there."

How are you? These days, while eating breakfast, I watch the American Christian program Life of Hope on a Christian channel. It is a program with an announcer, people giving testimonies, and an audience, in which people testify of what happened after meeting the Lord and give hope. This morning a woman who is a schoolteacher over sixty years old appeared, and she was a sister who had breast cancer and, while receiving very harsh chemotherapy, had come close to death about twice and survived.

The host asked, "You came close to death as many as two times; was there no fear at that time?" That woman said that she had had a great deal of fear at the time. But she said that, thinking about it now, having had that fear was sinful. Her family always gave her hope that she would get up again, but the story is that she herself was really afraid of dying. I saw that as that woman said this, her expression hardened and stiffened. The host said that the Lord is the Lord of the resurrection, and that Christians must have the hope of rising again.

That woman said that she felt guilt over having been afraid, but although her body is now a little better, she has no confidence in a real resurrection. It means that although she did appear on the broadcast, if she were asked to speak of her present faith, she has no faith that she will rise again. And saying that

she feels guilt over having feared death is itself not faith. It means that the very absence of that faith really becomes sin and becomes judgment.

People think that if they believe in Jesus, they have hope and will rise again. They say that if one believes in Jesus, one has been saved. But when one really falls ill and stands in the face of death, one knows perfectly well oneself whether one has really been saved or not. So for a person who has not received the remission of sins, a person who has sin in his heart, fear comes, and he cannot escape from that fear. For them, there is no such thing as resurrection or going to the Lord's kingdom. Absolutely, unless the Holy Spirit is within one, unless one has been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, one cannot meet the Lord, and there is no hope of going there either.

No one can hide himself in the face of death. The state of the heart that is revealed when one faces death is one's true self. That is why, even in such a state, one must quickly repent and turn back, know what was wrong, hold on to the word of the Lord, and stand by faith. Today there are many people who believe in Jesus, but there is no one who has the hope of the resurrection. Those people also rise again. But when, and what kind of resurrection do they have? They rise again to live forever in the fire that is never quenched. That is the resurrection after the Millennial Kingdom.

The first resurrection is the resurrection in which those who belong to the Lord, those who have been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, those who have no sin at all in their hearts, rise again and enjoy life for a thousand years. There is a second resurrection, and that is the resurrection in which people come back to life and enter the fire that is never quenched and come to live suffering forever. Those who have

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

not been born again, even among those who believe in Jesus, and the sinners who do not believe in Jesus rise again in that way. It is the word that there are two kinds of resurrection. There is the resurrection for enjoying eternal life, and there is the resurrection by which one comes to suffer eternal torment.

One must believe with the heart to obtain eternal life

That is why, when we believe in Jesus, we must believe with a sincere heart. We must acknowledge that we are sinners, acknowledge our own wickedness, and hold on to the word of the Lord with our hearts and believe. And we must be united in our hearts with the fact that the Lord came to this earth and saved us with the truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must believe with our hearts like that and be saved and obtain eternal life.

Above all, we must be united with the Lord and obtain eternal life. The Lord said that He is the vine and we are the branches. He also said that He is the olive tree and we are those grafted into that tree. The olive tree refers to the holy God. There is olive oil, is there not? These days people say it is good for the table, and in our country, too, we eat olive oil. Those of you who have not tried it, go to a place like a department store and buy some and try it. It is a little expensive, but would it not be a pity never to have tasted it even once? That oil is pressed from the olive tree.

As for where that oil was actually used, it was spread on the food and cakes used in the tabernacle, and used for pouring when offering sacrifices. It is the best oil in the world. What does it refer to? It refers to the Holy Spirit, and it refers to God. It shows

that the Lord Himself is God. The Bible explains that we are like branches grafted into an olive tree, and Jesus said that He is the true vine. We are by nature neither the olive tree nor the vine, but we are grafted into Jesus and are saved and obtain eternal life.

Eternal life is our being born again, our not dying for all eternity. We must acknowledge Jesus with our hearts. We must acknowledge the word of God with our hearts. Even though one's flesh is lacking, if one takes part with one's heart in all the work the Lord did after coming to this earth, and is united with it and believes, one obtains the remission of sins, salvation, eternal life, and every blessing.

But if one does not believe with the heart and believes only theoretically, it is in vain. I tell you to believe very sincerely with your hearts. I really believe this word of God sincerely with my heart. Do you believe like that, too? Do you believe that this word of the Bible is the word of God? The words of men may be the words of men, but the word recorded here is the word of God. So at least during the worship hour I do not talk about the trivial things of the world. When I meet people personally, I joke and say funny things and talk big, but the word of God must absolutely be preached as the word is. The word of God is the word of life. It is called the word of God because it is writing that records the words God has spoken. So we must know well what this word says, look deeply into whether it is really so, and believe with our hearts.

Otherwise, one does not go to the kingdom of heaven just because one believes in Jesus, nor does one obtain eternal life. There is no rule that says one will not become like Judas just because one believes in Jesus. Saying that I believe, too, because my parents or my husband or my wife believes is extremely wrong and foolish. One must believe personally and receive Him

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

personally. Why is that? Because one's life is one's own. If one wants to keep one's life and obtain eternal life, one must oneself believe in the Lord who gives eternal life. It is important.

In order to meet the Lord, in order to receive the remission of sins by believing in Jesus, for over ten years I sought the Lord and prayed and read the word truly with the attitude of a seeker of the way, and in that way I met the Lord. It goes like this: when someone has come to church once, they tell him to offer a prayer to receive Jesus, and once he has done it, they say, "You have obtained salvation; if you believe in Jesus, you obtain salvation," but I did not obtain salvation that way. Obtaining it that way is all in vain.

Having obtained salvation by a prayer to receive Jesus is all false. When one faces death, that falsehood is all exposed. If one sincerely looks at one's own conscience, looks at oneself, and holds it up to the word of God, one can know that one is a person who has nothing to do with the Lord. Meeting the Lord is not easy. Thousands of people who believe in Jesus say that they started out with faith, but those who really obtain eternal life are a very tiny minority. When one believes in Jesus, if one knows properly and believes properly from the beginning, one can obtain salvation even in a single day, and if one follows the Lord properly after obtaining salvation properly, it is guaranteed that one receives blessings both in spirit and in flesh. But if one trusts in how long one has believed, trusts in one's family background, and trusts in one's family, it is hard. One must follow the Lord with the attitude of one who seeks to meet the Lord.

"I give them eternal life"

Let us all read together the word we read today, John 10:28. *"And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand."* The Lord speaks to those who believe in the Lord, to those who have believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and received the remission of sins. It is the word that the Lord gives us eternal life.

What is eternal life? Living forever is called eternal life, and never perishing means never being ruined again. Also, since He said, *"Neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand" (John 10:28),* it means that there is no one greater than the Lord. The Lord came to this earth and removed and washed away the sins of you and me and saved us from sin, and gave eternal life to those who have obtained salvation. It means that He has given the life that lives forever to those who have received the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, by believing in the truth. But was there anyone among us who wanted eternal life, saying to the Lord, "I want to live forever"? There was not. Generally, people say, "I am sick of this wretched world; I want to end it quickly and go."

Emperor Qin Shi Huang of China wanted to live forever and ordered the herb of immortality to be brought to him. Those who went to find the herb of immortality never came back if they could not find it. Why is that? Because if they came back without finding it, they were killed at once. He sent countless retainers like that, but Qin Shi Huang fell ill and died. And yet, because he wanted to enjoy eternal life, he had an army made and put into his tomb, and delicious food put in, all carved out of stone, and furnished it completely. After Qin Shi Huang died, the son who inherited the throne presided over the funeral, and he put

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

Qin Shi Huang's wife and court ladies and retainers into the enormous tomb and sealed the door and killed them all. He put in every single person connected with his father, without exception, and killed them. In order to carry the riches and glory and power he had enjoyed on this earth into the next world and enjoy them there, they carved everything—horses, people, food—and put it into the tomb. And Qin Shi Huang ordered countless identical tombs to be made so that his corpse could not be found, and so that no one would know where the corpse would be buried, he killed all the retainers involved, to keep that secret. They bored into a great mountain and formed a village in a great cave and shut the door. It was burial alive. So even now, though people say that Qin Shi Huang's tomb is here, no one has found the remains of Qin Shi Huang. Why did that man pursue eternal life like that? The story is that because the life of enjoying riches and glory in this world was so good, he tried to carry it even into the next world.

Dear fellow believers, our obtaining eternal life, living forever, never perishing—we have received that through the Lord. The Lord has given us eternal life. He has given us the life that lives forever. We do not die. Perhaps we, too, may fear death. The greatest task and hardest problem for human beings is death. Such is man that if only he could solve this death, he would pay any price. To solve this death, people take up religion. They prepare in order to solve that problem and live well in the next life.

But the Lord said to you and me, *"I give them eternal life" (John 10:28)*. We have obtained eternal life. We have eternal life. We never perish, and now we are not ruined. Even if death should come to us, there is no longer any such thing as death. We come back to life. We have eternal life. And the Lord said that no one can snatch them away from Him. It is the word that

the Lord has given us salvation and given us eternal life, and there is no one who can snatch us, who are in the Lord, away. There is no one who has such power. Do you believe?

As we live in the reality of this world, we feel joy, anger, sorrow, and pleasure, and we make a commotion, laughing, crying, and being glad. That is because the emotions of the flesh are alive. But it is that we should listen for once to the voice of God coming down from heaven. *"And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand."* We must know what an amazing blessing this is that He has given. Because the Lord said this, because this word exists, we have obtained eternal life, we never die, we never perish, and we have an eternally happy life. It means that it is so because the Lord said it. I believe; do you believe?

It is of no use for me to think a great deal on my own that I want to live forever; it is because the word of the Lord exists, because this word is within me and I accept this word, that eternal life comes upon me. If you, too, accept this word, eternal life comes upon you. If you accept in your hearts the word that the Lord has removed all our sins, has washed them away, with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the sin in your hearts disappears and you are saved. This is true receiving.

He said that no one can snatch them away. If there were somewhere someone stronger than Jesus, and he came and snatched away the eternal life we have obtained and threw us into the pit of destruction and curse, we could only end up that way. But it is the word that because the Lord is strong, because the Lord has given us eternal life, because the Lord has power, you and I who believe in the Lord have received the remission of sins and obtained eternal life. The word of God works in us that way. The word of God is the truth. As we come out to the worship hour and worship and hear the word and have

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

fellowship with one another, we may also have many thoughts of the flesh. But there is this word that the Lord spoke in today's text.

Who are those called 'them' here? They are those who have received the remission of sins and believe in the gospel the Lord has given, namely, people like this. They are those who believe in the Lord as their Savior, believe that when the Lord received baptism from John all our sins passed on to the body of Jesus, and that when Jesus died on the Cross He bore all our sins and received the judgment for sin, and believe in that Lord, who died and came back to life, as the Savior.

It is the fact that the Lord has given them salvation and given them eternal life. And He has guaranteed with His own power that they will never perish. I believe this. Do you, too, believe and acknowledge this word in your hearts? Then you are those who have obtained eternal life. It means that you are not only saved from sin, but have obtained eternal life. What do we fear? Do we not fear because of being ruined, because of falling ill, because of coming to death? We fear death because death is losing everything. But we no longer fear. This is precisely what it is to believe in Jesus.

What we have received in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is not only the remission of sins but an unspeakably great blessing. Being able to receive and enjoy every blessing is the blessing one obtains when one believes in Jesus Christ, who came by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, as one's Savior. In human terms, the Lord is a bundle of blessing and a precious Lord. No one can stand against that.

The Lord said, it is not that I die because I have no strength, but that I lay down My life for you; I have the authority to lay it down and the authority to take it again; I do it of Myself, willingly, for you. It is the word that the One who has such

authority is precisely the Lord who has saved you and me from sin and given us eternal life. How amazing, how powerful, how perfect a One is He? Who is there that said, *"I am the way, the truth, and the life"*? Who is there that said this word, *"I give them eternal life"*? Did Siddhartha, did Shakyamuni, say that? No one can say such a word. Search through all the old books of philosophy and religious books and see. There is no one who said so. Only Jesus can say, believe in Me; I am the life, so I have given you life; I am the Creator, so I created you. Also, He can say, I am your Master, so I am your shepherd; I give you eternal life; I remit your sins; I keep you. The only One who has such power is Jesus.

"I and My Father are one"

The Lord speaks in verses 29 and 30, *"My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand. I and My Father are one."* The Lord, saying that no one can snatch you out of the Father's hand, identified Himself with the Father. The word that He and the Father are one means that since the Father is God, I, too, am God and am the same, and it means that I, too, uphold the will of My Father and give you eternal life. Dear fellow believers, we must know Jesus well. It means that we must not degrade Jesus and regard Him as One who is less powerful and lower in position than God the Father.

Many people in this world who make films about Jesus greatly lower Jesus because He is the Son of God the Father. Because He is the Savior who came as a son of man, they portray Him as if He were merely someone a little better than a created being, someone with power. But He said that He and the Father

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

are one. Jesus is God. He is the Creator, the One who made you and me, the One who gave eternal life, and the God who keeps our happiness so that we are never destroyed again.

There is no one who can snatch us from God the Father, and there is no one either who has the power to snatch us away from Jesus. Jesus is God Himself in essence and is the God identical with the Father. Only when this faith stands properly can one pray, too. Even if, when praying, one goes back and forth, saying God the Father and then saying Lord, if one has this faith, that prayer is a proper prayer. Sometimes, when one says God the Father, it seems like praying before One who has great power, and when one says Lord, it seems like praying to One who is a little lower, so that the concept may not stand firm, but since He said that He and the Father are one, They are one.

The Jews took up stones to stone Him. Reading verses 31 to 33, it says, *"Then the Jews took up stones again to stone Him. Jesus answered them, 'Many good works I have shown you from My Father. For which of those works do you stone Me?' The Jews answered Him, saying, 'For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy, and because You, being a Man, make Yourself God.'"* When Jesus said that He and the Father are one, they took up stones to stone Him.

You and I today also need to establish this word in our hearts once. It is the word that Jesus is the God identical with His Father, the very same God. This concept must be established in the heart. That God came to this earth clothed in human flesh and saved you and me with the truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That is why the salvation of you and me lacks nothing and is whole and perfect. According to how powerful He is and how perfect He is, our salvation is decided, our eternal life is decided, and our future is decided.

Our believing in Jesus means relying on Him, leaning on

Him. According to how powerful and how perfect that Jesus is, in whom you and I believe and on whom we rely, it is decided how perfect a person you and I can be changed into. Is that right, or is it not? It is right. Because the Lord has saved us with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, with the word of truth, and we believe that word, we, too, obtain salvation that perfectly. In the past I read many headache-inducing books. Such things are all garbage. Only the truth of the Lord is the truth.

The Jews tried to stone Him. Not just one or two, but some fifteen people surrounded Jesus. In those days the roads were not paved, so it was all stones, and some picked up small stones and some picked up big stones. The hot-tempered one among them picked up one as big as a boulder to bring down on Him. They regarded Jesus as insolent. Then Jesus said to them, "I have done good works, so for what on earth do you stone Me? If there is anything wrong among the good works I have done, tell Me." Then they said, "It is not for that that we would stone You. Your healing the sick, Your casting out demons, Your working on the Sabbath—all such things we will now overlook." The problem, they said, was a sin greater than that—Your having said that You and the Father are one—and this deserved summary execution on the spot, without even a trial.

At this point we must look back on ourselves once. Jesus said that He and the Father are one, and we must think about how you and I know and how we believe, and whether perhaps in our consciousness we have been thinking of Jesus as One lower in rank than God the Father, as a created being in a way, as not God. Jesus is one with God the Father, the very same God.

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

"You are gods, And all of you are children of the Most High"

The Lord speaks in verses 34 to 36. Let us read together. *"Jesus answered them, 'Is it not written in your law, "I said, 'You are gods'"? If He called them gods, to whom the word of God came (and the Scripture cannot be broken), do you say of Him whom the Father sanctified and sent into the world, "You are blaspheming," because I said, "I am the Son of God"?'"* This word, which calls those to whom the word of God came gods, is Psalm 82:6. Let us read it together. *"I said, 'You are gods, And all of you are children of the Most High.'"* It means that those who accept the word of God are gods, sons of God. If they are sons of God, they are on a different level from created beings. The word that man who is in honor, yet does not understand, is like the beasts that perish, is precisely that word. Blasphemy means insolence. Even those on this earth who accept the word of God, who receive the word of the gospel of the water and the Spirit and receive the remission of sins, are called sons of God, and if they are children of God, the Father is God and the sons are God, too.

Then our living in the kingdom of God in the future is our going to live in God's kingdom because we are children of God. Do not twist this word and think of it strangely. In the kingdom of God only those who have the same attributes as God go and live; a person who has sin can never enter. Only the holy sons of God enter there.

The Lord said, *"Do you say of Him whom the Father sanctified and sent into the world, 'You are blaspheming,' because I said, 'I am the Son of God'?"* He said, I am the Son of God and the Father and I are the same God; therefore I give eternal life to those who believe in Me; I make them never perish;

there is no one who can snatch them from Me. Since it is a word He speaks because He is God, it is not an insolent word. Our praising Jesus as our Savior and saying that we have been saved by believing in Jesus and that we have no sin is also not wrong faith but proper faith, and not an insolent word.

Today, when someone says that he believes in Jesus and has no sin, there are people who say, "How insolent; how can you have no sin when you commit sin every day?" They say that because they are not sons of God, and when one becomes a son of God, one has no sin. These days in the world, people who have power and forge military service documents so as not to go into the army are called sons of god. They are called that because they do not go while everyone else goes. But we are truly the sons of God. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are sons of God. People cannot say of us that we are blasphemous or insolent, and they cannot say so of Jesus either.

Let us all read verses 37 and 38 together. *"If I do not do the works of My Father, do not believe Me; but if I do, though you do not believe Me, believe the works, that you may know and believe that the Father is in Me, and I in Him."* We, too, have received the remission of sins by the gospel of the water and the Spirit and become sons of God, the righteous. We are those who will enter the kingdom of God and live there in the future.

But it means that as to whether what we say can be believed or not, one should not look at words alone but look at the deeds we do. It is the word that one should look at whether we do the will of the Father or not, and if we do the will of the Father, one should know that we are sons of God. How many chapels are there on this earth? Church means ekklesia, that is, those who have been called out. It means the gathering of those who have been called out of the world and delivered and had their sins washed away by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, of people

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

who have received the remission of sins.

One does not become a saint by attending a chapel and going in and out of a big building and worshiping and praising; those who have received the remission of sins by the gospel of the water and the Spirit and met the Lord, those who have accepted the salvation the Lord has given, are called saints. It means that today, for you and me, too, if people cannot believe the words we preach, they should look at what we really do and believe. Then they will come to know.

"He escaped out of their hand"

Jesus went to the place where John was baptizing at first and stayed there. Many came and said, *"John performed no sign, but all the things that John spoke about this Man were true" (John 10:41)*, and many believed in Jesus.

Here we must think about one thing. Even though Jesus was attacked this much, because He has great power, even when they tried to stone Him to death, they could do nothing. If Jesus had had no power, He would have been struck by the stones and died on the spot. In the nation of Judea, if someone claimed to be God, without even a trial, as long as there were two witnesses, they executed him on the spot by stoning. And without even digging the ground separately to bury him, it ended with covering him with stones.

When Jesus said that He is identical with the Father, that He is God, these foolish people tried to stone to death the One who had come to this earth upholding the will of the Father and was speaking to them. But verse 39 says, *"They sought again to seize Him, but He escaped out of their hand."* Even though it is not recorded concretely, since the Lord is God, it may be that if He

only thought it in His heart, the bodies of those who were about to stone Him stiffened and the stones would not leave their hands. This is precisely the power of Jesus. It is that He is not a man. If it were you, could you escape from being surrounded by fifteen or twenty people rushing to stone you to death? You could not. It is possible because He is Jesus. Even if someone tried to strike Him with an excavator or to kill Him by setting off a nuclear bomb, Jesus could overcome it all.

So Jesus said, I lay down My life, I die in your place for you, and I come back to life because I Myself will it. Jesus is God. So He can do such things, and He could become our Savior. As He promised, He could come to this earth and bear our sins by receiving baptism from John, die for us on the Cross, and rise again and save us, and He can perfectly keep the salvation He has given. He has not only saved us from sin, but has made us live so that we never perish again, so that we do not suffer eternally, and now live happily forever, having authority forever and enjoying riches and glory. Because the Lord has power, He gave it to us. A person without power can neither give nor even speak of it. Go ahead and think about it from your own standpoint. Can you say to a friend, “I say to you, you shall never taste death again”? If you said such a thing, you would be treated as a person out of his mind. But Jesus can.

We come to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit through the testimony of John the Baptist

Where did the Lord go after escaping from all that persecution? He went to the place where John the Baptist was baptizing and stayed there. And many people came and said that

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

all that John the Baptist had testified about this Man was true. It means that His saying that thus it is fitting to fulfill all righteousness is also true, and that His bearing the sin of the world away and being hung on the Cross and dying and rising again from the dead and becoming our Savior is also true; all of it is true. So many people believed.

Why did Jesus go to the place where John the Baptist was baptizing? Jesus is closely related to John the Baptist. Who testified of Jesus best? First of all, John the Baptist. The disciples of Jesus come next. We, too, can know that what John the Baptist said about Jesus is true, and can believe it, and so can be saved and obtain eternal life. That Jesus received baptism from John the Baptist and bore the sin of mankind once and for all is exactly as He said, *"Thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15).*

When did Jesus take over the sin of mankind? Was it when He died on the Cross? Was it when He was born? It was when He received baptism from John. His taking over all sins when He received baptism from John the Baptist is all righteousness. He did every right thing in order not to send us to hell, in order to make us His people and give us eternal life and give us salvation and give us every blessing. Do you believe? It is extremely important.

John the Baptist continues to appear after this, too. At that time the Jews, too, believed in Jesus because of the word that John the Baptist testified about Jesus. Even now, without going through the testimony that John the Baptist testifies about Jesus, we can neither meet Jesus nor come to Him. That He is the true Savior, how He bore our sins and received the judgment and rose again from the dead—we can never know these without going through the testimony that said, *"Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" (John 1:29).*

Jesus, who received the testimony of John the Baptist
and is equal with God, gives eternal life

Let us all read John chapter 1, verses 6 to 8, together. *"There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. This man came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light."* There was a man sent from God—it means that he was born on this earth. Of whom is it speaking? The Gospel of John was written by the Apostle John, and the Apostle John testifies of the work John the Baptist does. Would the Apostle John have spoken of himself like this? A person cannot say of himself, "I am a man sent from God." The Apostle John is not speaking of himself but pointing to John the Baptist. Who is the one whom God caused to be born from the body of Elizabeth six months before Jesus was born? It is John the Baptist.

John the Baptist believed that all sins had passed on when he baptized Jesus, just as Jesus said, *"Thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness" (Matthew 3:15)*. And John the Baptist, seeing Jesus bearing the sin of the world away, said, *"Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!"* He also testified, "That One has taken over all the sins of this world by receiving baptism from me." So people come to know that Jesus is our Savior. They know that Jesus bore our sins once and for all by receiving baptism, bore the sin of the world away and was crucified and shed His blood on the Cross, and rose again from the dead, and so became our Savior, who truly removed our sins. If John the Baptist had not testified, the apostles could not have believed either. Which comes first, John the Baptist or the apostles? John the Baptist comes first. The greatest among those on this earth who are called the servants of God is John the Baptist.

The Apostle John, Peter, and James are great, too, but the disciples are those whom Jesus chose from among the countless

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

people on this earth and made His disciples, whereas John the Baptist is one whom God the Father sent directly. It is a different level. That is why He said that he is the greatest among those born of women. He is greater even than Moses. Moses, too, was chosen from among men, but John the Baptist is one whom God sent by His special providence. We must know the providence of God. That is why we, too, believe and have come to know.

How did we come to know the gospel of the water and the Spirit? We came to know it through the testimony of John the Baptist. If there were no testimony of John the Baptist, there would be no way to know Jesus. One would only blindly believe in Jesus, who died on the Cross. When one sees that woman I spoke of in the introduction, who had fallen ill and come to the point of death, say that she was terribly afraid of death, faith does not come about. But we came to believe that Jesus is our Savior because of the testimony of John the Baptist. We, too, are now preaching this gospel because of this testimony of John the Baptist. If there were no work of John the Baptist in the Bible, if there were no act of John the Baptist passing sin on to Jesus, an evangelist of the gospel would have no place to stand. It would all become a lie. If someone says, "Did you see it? Were you there then? You were not even born, so on what grounds and how do you know that Jesus is our Savior? Is that not superstition? Believe it yourself," there is nothing to say. There must be testimony. Can one believe without testimony? He said that many people come to believe because of the testimony of John the Baptist.

John the Baptist performed no sign. He did not do the works of opening the eyes of the blind and healing the sick. But it said that because all that John said about this Man was true, many believed.

That is why faith is important. A person who seeks to believe

in God finds the grounds in the word of God, and because he holds on to the word of God and believes, that faith is acknowledged and he can believe. We all want to believe in Jesus as the Savior, but without grounds we cannot believe. The human conscience is more accurate than a scale.

Whatever others may do, each person has the scale of conscience and weighs things for himself. One knows oneself whether one is right or wrong. One of the things God has given to man is the conscience. Whether that conscience weighs according to the word of God or weighs according to one's own greed may differ, but basically He has given us a conscience. Where can the conscience of faith of you and me take hold of testimony? Because the Lord came to this earth and saved us from sin, because He made us children of God, because we believe that, we can say and confirm with the conscience of faith that we have been saved. If someone tells people to believe unconditionally without testimony, that is deceiving them.

It is like telling people to go to a mountain and bow before a big rock, saying that if they pray to it, it has an effect. If one goes out by boat into the sea off a certain region, there is a place where only a rock juts out, and because the rock looks spiritually potent, people still go there by boat and pray to it even now. And in the mountains of certain regions, too, are there not rocks that people visit and rub and pray to? Does that really give blessings? That is what is called superstition. Speaking without grounds is superstition. Telling people to believe in Jesus without grounds is superstition, too.

This is not a matter of pulling out just one or two verses from the Bible; the Bible speaks persistently about John the Baptist. The one whom God the Father Himself sent, the one who testifies of what God has done, is John the Baptist. Because of the testimonies of John the Baptist, we, too, come to know and

Download eBooks and audiobooks www.bjnewlife.org

believe what Jesus did for us. It is extremely important. Therefore it said that many believed. You and I also believe like that. Do you believe? Yes, we do.

Today there was much to say, so the sermon has grown long. With the Bible, if one reads a single verse and tries to speak of it properly, there is so much to say. If one were to pull out all the illustrations, too, one could not finish even by daybreak. I believe the word of God. It is that this word being the word of God is a fact regardless of me, and I believe it. A person must be somewhat honorable. Even if there is weakness in the flesh, the person himself and his thoughts and heart must be sound, and he must hold high aspirations. I give thanks that our Lord has saved us. I give thanks that the Lord has become God to us. I give thanks once more that He is whole and perfect. I will close the word here. ✉

◇ About the Next Series

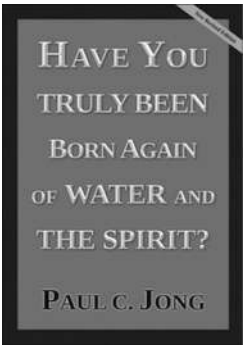
The ***'Biblical Exposition & Sermon Series from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit'*** will continue to be published following this book.

We sincerely hope that the books by Pastor Paul C. Jong, which will continue to be published, will serve as spiritual nourishment to strengthen your faith.

News about newly released books, as well as various ways to access them—including eBooks (PDF, EPUB), audiobooks (M4A, MP3), and online reading—can be found at **www.bjnewlife.org.**

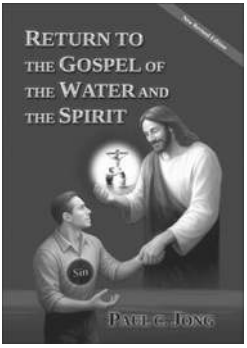
Paul C. Jong's Sermons

HAVE YOU TRULY BEEN BORN AGAIN OF WATER AND THE SPIRIT? [New Revised Edition]



Among many Christian books written about being born again, this is the first book of our time to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit in strict accordance with the Scriptures. Man can't enter the Kingdom of Heaven without being born again of water and the Spirit. To be born again means that a sinner is saved from all his lifelong sins by believing in the baptism of Jesus and His blood of the Cross. Let's believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and enter the Kingdom of Heaven as the righteous who have no sin.

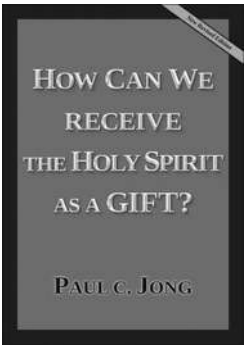
RETURN TO THE GOSPEL OF THE WATER AND THE SPIRIT [New Revised Edition]



Let's return to the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Theology and doctrines themselves can't save us. However, many Christians still follow them, and consequently have not been born again yet. This book clearly tells us what mistakes theology and doctrines have made and how we can believe in Jesus in the most accurate and certain way.

Scan the QR code to view the book's details!

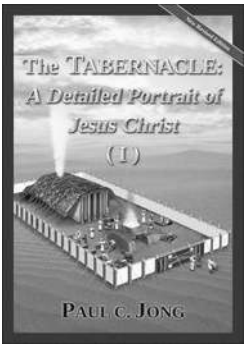
HOW CAN WE RECEIVE THE HOLY SPIRIT AS A GIFT? [New Revised Edition]



In Christianity, the most significantly discussed issue is salvation from sins and the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. However, few people have the exact knowledge of these two topics. Nevertheless, in reality people say that they believe in Jesus Christ while they are ignorant of true redemption and the Holy Spirit.

Do you know the true gospel that makes you receive the Holy Spirit? If you want to ask God for the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, then you must first know the gospel of the water and the Spirit and have faith in it. This book will certainly lead all Christians worldwide to receive the Holy Spirit through the washing away of all their sins.

The TABERNACLE : A Detailed Portrait of Jesus Christ (I) [New Revised Edition]

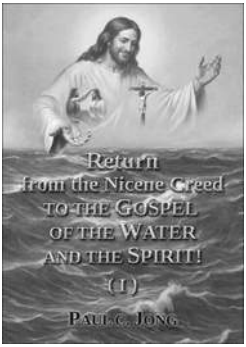


How can we find out the truth hidden in the Tabernacle? Only by knowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the real substance of the Tabernacle, can we correctly understand and know the answer to this question.

In fact, the blue, purple, and scarlet thread and the fine woven linen manifested in the gate of the Tabernacle's court show us the works of Jesus Christ in the New Testament's time that have saved the mankind. In this way, the Old Testament's Word of the Tabernacle and the Word of the New Testament are closely and definitely related to each other, like fine woven linen. But, unfortunately, this truth has been hidden for a long time to every truth seeker in Christianity.

Coming to this earth, Jesus Christ was baptized by John and shed His blood on the Cross. Without understanding and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, none of us can ever find out the truth revealed in the Tabernacle. We must now learn this truth of the Tabernacle and believe in it. We all need to realize and believe in the truth manifested in the blue, purple, and scarlet thread and the fine woven linen of the gate of the Tabernacle's court.

Return from the Nicene Creed TO THE GOSPEL OF THE WATER AND THE SPIRIT! (I)



-Why must we return from the Nicene Creed to the gospel of the water and the Spirit? –

The gospel that the early church preached was precisely the gospel of the water and the Spirit. That gospel was the gospel that Jesus actually shouldered and washed away the sin of the world through the baptism He received from John.

The baptism Jesus received from John was to fulfill the law of the sacrificial system found in Leviticus. That is, just as sin was transferred to the sacrificial offering through the laying on of hands, the substance of that sacrificial law was fulfilled through Jesus's baptism.

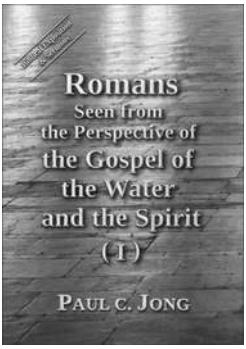
However, in the process of the Nicene Creed's formation, the ministry of Jesus having the sin of the world transferred to Him by being baptized by John was deleted from the creed's contents. As a result, this truth has been passed down in a hidden state within Christianity for about 1,700 years, reaching the present day.

Today, many people are struggling to receive the removal of their sins without knowing when their sins were transferred to Jesus. Because of this, even while saying they believe in the gospel of the cross, they fail to reach true assurance of salvation and live amidst repetitive repentance and the pangs of conscience.

The reason we must return to the gospel of the water and the Spirit is clear. This is because only this gospel allows us to meet the Jesus who became the sacrificial offering as the sin of the world was transferred to His body, and thereby have assurance of salvation.

Paul C. Jong's Biblical Exposition & Sermons

Romans seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (2-Volume Series)



When Looking at Romans from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit,

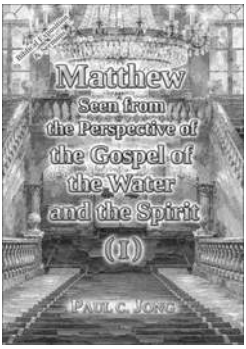
A person who embraces the gospel of the water and the Spirit in their heart comes to read Romans completely differently. The moment one opens this letter holding onto the gospel that Jesus had the sins of the world transferred to Him by receiving baptism from John, completely received the judgment of those sins on the cross, and resurrected, it finally begins to be seen why Paul introduced himself as a "debtor to the gospel" and so boldly declared, "I am not ashamed of the gospel."

The Apostle Paul, after revealing the sins of the Gentiles and the hypocrisy of religious people in turn, proclaims the righteousness of God manifested apart from the law. That righteousness is not a righteousness built up by human moral effort, but the righteousness completed by the baptism Jesus received from John, the blood of the cross, and the resurrection. The righteousness Abraham received when he was uncircumcised is the evidence of it, and the "blessing of not imputing sin" that David sang of is the result of it.

A person who believes this gospel knows that he is one who has already been justified. Only upon that conviction does peace with God reside, and the path opens where even tribulation leads to perseverance, character, and hope. This mystery—that a life which was placed under the reign of death over sin through one man, Adam, has received the removal of sins through one person, Jesus Christ, and has been transferred under the reign of righteousness—takes its place within us.

Salvation has already been completed at once. Now, what remains is the matter of receiving that gospel with the heart and living as a righteous person.

Matthew seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (6-Volume Series)



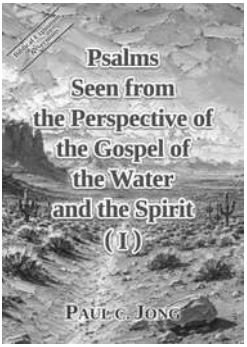
Why does sin still remain in your heart, even after believing in Jesus, reading the Bible for years, and attending church faithfully? Through Matthew chapters 1–4, this book answers clearly from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Tracing Jesus' birth and the wise men's worship, the ministry of John the Baptist as the last high priest, the saving work Jesus began with His baptism in the Jordan, the temptation in the wilderness, and the proclamation of the gospel of the kingdom of heaven, this book testifies that through His baptism by John the Baptist, Jesus took the sins of mankind upon Himself, was judged and died on the cross, and rose from the dead, overcoming sin and death.

If you know the blood of the cross but not when and where your sins were passed on to Jesus, look to the unchanging word of salvation rather than your feelings. In the Bible-based gospel of the water and the Spirit, see what the 'all righteousness' God fulfilled truly is.

Scan the QR code to view the book's details!

Psalm seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (I)

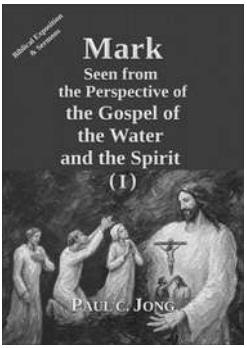


For long ages the Psalms have been the prayer book and the hymnal of the saints. Yet if we read them only as beautiful religious poetry or as an expression of emotion, we easily miss the meaning of these songs of praise. For David's laments and praises ultimately point to Jesus Christ, the Savior who is to come.

This book is a biblical exposition that unfolds the Psalms from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. David's songs are not an outpouring of emotion but the confession of a righteous man who has received the remission of sins, a prophetic praise that looked up to the Christ who is to come. The blessing, righteousness, and peace of the Psalms do not come from human goodness but from the salvation God accomplished in Christ.

Beneath it all flows a single gospel. It is the gospel of the water and the Spirit, by which Jesus took our sins upon Himself through the baptism He received from John, paid the price of those sins on the cross, and rose from the dead to make us righteous. When you open the Psalms with this gospel, the old songs come alive as your own confession, and this book leads you to the blessed place of those clothed in the righteousness of God.

Mark Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (4-Volume Series)



Who do you believe Jesus to be? Through Mark chapters 1–4, this book testifies to the beginning of the gospel, the Lord's authority to remit sins, and the ground of the heart that hears the Word.

Through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, Jesus had all the sins of the world passed onto Him, bore the punishment for those sins in our place on the Cross, and rose from the dead and gave us eternal life. Whoever believes this gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the remission of all his sins at once and the Holy Spirit as a gift.

Do not read this book merely to add to your knowledge. Examine what kind of ground your own heart is, and lay down your own righteousness and religious stubbornness. Receive the Word of life just as it is and enjoy true rest, and relying on the Lord even in the storms of life, bear the fruit of faith.

Scan the QR code to view the book's details!

John Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (4-Volume Series)



John seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (I) is a book that examines, through the entire Gospel of John, how the Word, who is God, came to this earth clothed in flesh and saved sinners from sin.

The author, pastor Paul C. Jong, has long preached, through the word of the Bible, "the gospel of the water and the Spirit" that Jesus Christ completed with the baptism He received from John the Baptist, the Cross, and the resurrection. This book does not explain the signs and words of the Gospel of John as mere knowledge of the Bible or records of miracles, but guides readers to the faith by which they are saved from sin and obtain everlasting life by believing that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God.

May everyone who opens this book meet Jesus Christ, of whom the Bible testifies, and obtain true life.

Luke Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (6-Volume Series)

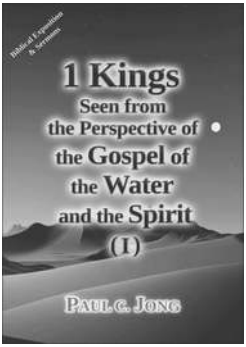


"Luke Seen from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit (I)" expounds the Word from Luke chapters 1 through 6 from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Each chapter is composed of three parts: Biblical Exposition, Questions and Answers, and Sermons. The central message conveyed by this book is clear. Salvation is not accomplished by human goodness or merit. Rather, Jesus, who is God, received the sins of the world through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, died on the Cross to pay the price for those sins, and rose from the dead, thereby giving complete salvation from all sins to those who believe in this truth.

Pastor Paul C. Jong of The New Life Mission is a servant of God who has devoted his life to preaching the true gospel. Through the Word he preaches, this book will lead souls held captive by sin to the joy of the remission of sins and to eternal life in Jesus.

Scan the QR code to view the book's details!

1 Kings seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (4-Volume Series)

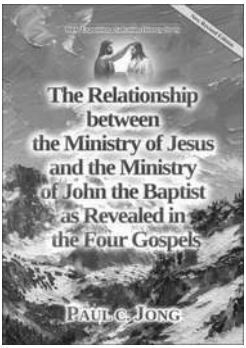


Why did Solomon, who received great wisdom from God, spend more time building his own palace than the Temple? Through David's old age and Adonijah's fall, and Solomon's accession and the building of the Temple, 1 Kings chapters 1–7 show that the glory of man fades, but the faith that fears God endures forever.

This book reveals the gospel of the water and the Spirit contained in the Temple and its furnishings. Jesus took the sins of the world upon Himself through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, was judged and died on the Cross, and rose again to complete salvation.

Do not rely on your own wisdom and your own kingdom. Use the wisdom, wealth, and time you have received for the gospel and for souls, and serve Jesus Christ as the King of your heart, building the house of God.

The Relationship between the Ministry of Jesus and the Ministry of John the Baptist as Revealed in the Four Gospels



The Ministry of Jesus and John the Baptist — Preparation and Fulfillment: The Gospel of the Water and the Spirit, Believed in the Order the Bible Records It

Why do the four Gospels introduce John the Baptist before speaking of Jesus' public ministry? Matthew records the baptism by which He fulfilled all righteousness; Mark, the messenger who prepared the way; Luke, the birth into a priestly family; and John, the testimony of the Lamb who takes away the sin of the world. These four books of the Bible—the four Gospels—together shed light on the ministry of Jesus and the ministry of John the Baptist.

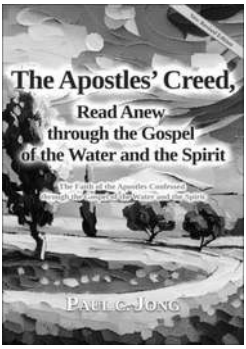
This book makes clear that we receive the remission of sins not by human zeal, but by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Just as sins were passed on to the sacrificial offering through the laying on of hands in the Old Testament, so Jesus took upon Himself the sin of the world through the baptism He received from John the Baptist, was judged and died on the Cross, and rose again to complete our salvation.

We must believe in the ministry of Jesus and the ministry of John the Baptist exactly as the Bible records them, receive the remission of sins, abide in the assurance of this completed salvation, and live as witnesses to it.

Scan the QR code to view the book's details!

Paul C. Jong's Special Features

The Apostles' Creed, Read Anew through the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit [New Revised Edition]

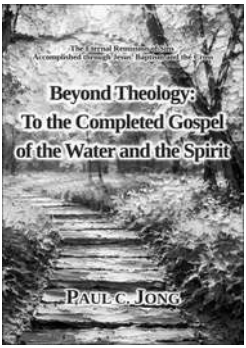


As you recite the Apostles' Creed every week, have you ever asked whether its statements are consistent with the gospel of the water and the Spirit proclaimed in the Bible? Countless Christians recite the Apostles' Creed, yet live without assurance as to whether they themselves have received the remission of sins and been born again.

This book examines this confession of faith, shaped and refined by people, article by article in the light of the "gospel of the water and the Spirit" to which Scripture testifies. In the light of this gospel—the gospel in which Jesus took upon Himself all the sins of the world by being baptized by John, bore the judgment for sin in our place by shedding His blood and dying on the Cross, and completed salvation by rising from the dead on the third day—this book points out what the Apostles' Creed leaves out.

The aim of this book is not to help the reader recite the Creed more skillfully. "Have I truly been born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit?" When we come to answer this question through the Word, we will at last offer a living confession as those who have received the remission of sins and been born again.

Beyond Theology: To the Completed Gospel of the Water and the Spirit



Even as we confess that we have been saved, why does the weight of sin still remain in one corner of our hearts?

Countless saints live carrying this question. Each denomination has a different answer, but the Bible testifies to one story from beginning to end.

This book does not belong to any denomination. It sets out what each tradition—Calvinism, Lutheranism, Methodism, Catholicism, and others—teaches, acknowledges their contributions, and then brings them all before the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is the gospel by which Jesus bore the sins of the world through the baptism He received from John, was judged on the Cross, and completed our eternal salvation through His resurrection from death.

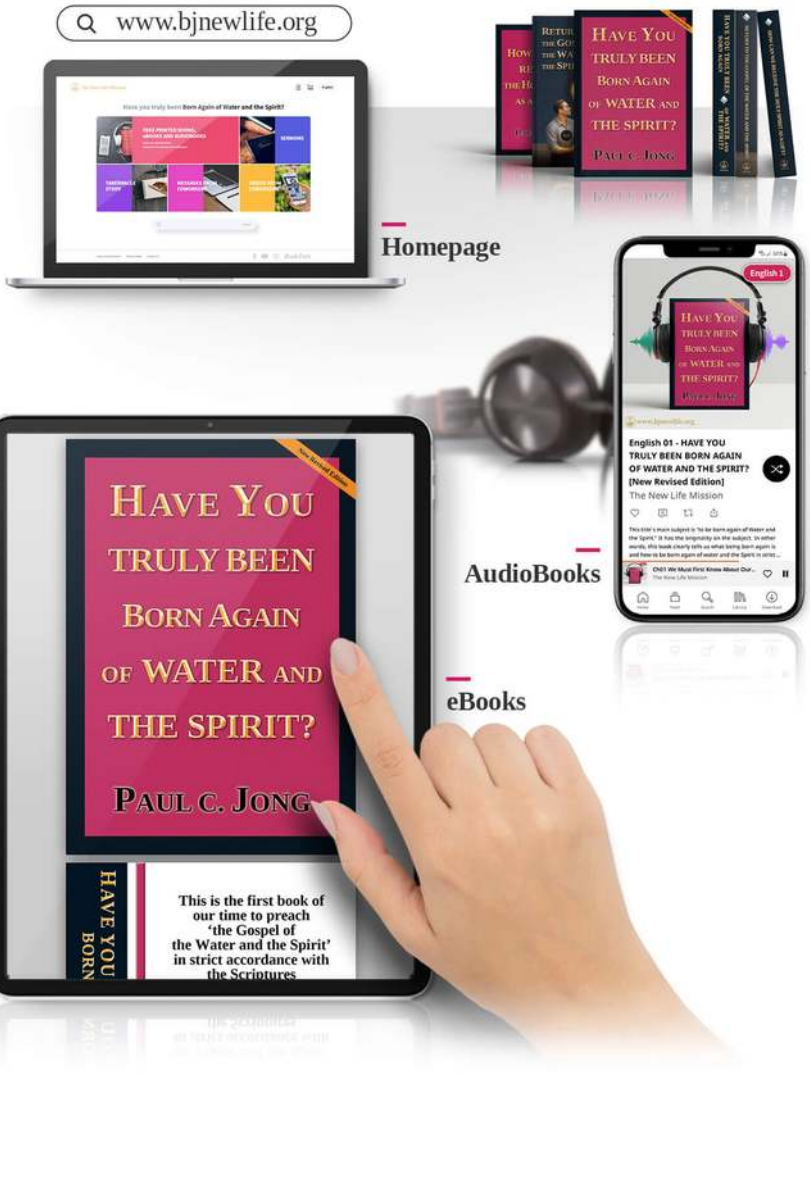
This book does not condemn any church. It only invites you to lay down your familiar theology for a moment and to discover anew, before the gospel of the water and the Spirit, where unshakable assurance begins.

Visit our website to discover this and other Christian books,
available as e-books (PDF/EPUB) and audiobooks.

Scan the QR code to view the book's details!

DOWNLOAD

Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian ebooks and audiobooks
on your smartphone, tablet or PC at our website.
After downloading, You can read and listen to them anywhere, even when you don't have an internet connection.



Our The New Life Mission is distributing Pastor Paul C. Jong's spiritual books in 'printed book' form through coworkers who have been born again by water and the Spirit.

If you wish to possess printed books to build up spiritual nourishment, or if you sincerely wish to participate in our gospel spreading ministry, please apply by writing your reason, name, contact information, and address to the email address below.

If there is a coworker officially certified by our mission in your area, we will deliver the free books you have requested.

Would you like to join us in our mission of bringing the word of truth to more people around the world? If so, we would greatly appreciate it if you could link to our website on your blog, social media, website, etc.

►www.bjnewlife.org

Please help us spread the true gospel of Jesus Christ through our books so that more people can be born again of the water and the Spirit. We would also be grateful if you could introduce our website and books to many people and invite them to visit.

THE NEW LIFE MISSION
Contact: John Shin, General Secretary
E-mail: newlife@bjnewlife.org



Recommendation for E-book and Audiobook Storage and Downloads

In preparation for rapidly advancing AI, rapidly changing world affairs, and environmental changes, we strongly recommend downloading and storing God's true sermon messages to your personal storage devices.

Please prepare in advance by saving e-books and audiobooks to your external hard drives, USB drives, CDs, mobile phones, or MP3 players, so you can read and listen to them from your personal storage during the last days.

We pray that you will live a victorious life through God's blessings in these last days within the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

"The New Life Mission's sermon series and audiobooks are available worldwide in multiple languages, offering both paid books and free e-books."

www.bjnewlife.org

Sincerely,
The New Life Mission



Pastor PAUL C. JONG

Currently, Pastor Paul C. Jong leads 'The New Life Mission', where he and his fellow workers are spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Although he believed in the crucified Jesus, he suffered for a long time because his problem of sin remained unresolved. In the midst of this agony, he came to believe that Jesus took upon Himself the sins of the world through His baptism by John the Baptist, and subsequently bore the judgment in our place on the cross.

For the past 40 years since then, he has been preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit to those who only believe in the cross, documenting his actual sermons in writing. The compilation of these manuscripts has given rise to today's 'Biblical Exposition Series from the Perspective of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit.'

His works, comprising an ongoing 100-volume series, have been translated into more than 110 languages and are read in over 160 countries. E-books and audiobooks are available for free at www.bjnewlife.org, while physical books can be purchased on Amazon.

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.

The Gospel of John, seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit

"I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep" (John 10:11).

To the woman who was caught in adultery and brought before Him, Jesus said, "Neither do I condemn you." This was not because He took sin lightly. It was because, through the baptism He received from John, He had already borne that woman's sins as well, and He was the Savior who would be judged on the Cross in her place.

The Lord called Himself the light of the world and promised that the truth would make us free, and by opening the eyes of the man who was blind from birth, He showed that He is the One who gives sight to us who were spiritually blind. And He declared that He is the door of the sheep and the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep, gives eternal life to His own sheep, and no one can snatch them out of His hand.

Pastor Paul C. Jong's *John seen from the perspective of the gospel of the water and the Spirit (II)* testifies of the perfect salvation that Jesus Christ—the bread of life, the light of the world, and the good shepherd—accomplished through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I hope that through this book you will become a true sheep that knows the voice of the Lord, our shepherd, and that you will enjoy eternal life and the freedom of those who have escaped from sin and condemnation.

You can download Rev. Paul C. Jong's Christian Books to Computer, Tablet or Smartphone.